THE CHARM OF SOUL PETS

BOOK 04

Fish's Sky

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Charm of Soul Pets

(寵魅)

by

Fish's Sky

(鱼的天空)

Synopsis

Cloud birds that soar through the blue sky; Terrorblood wolves that roam the wastelands ruthlessly. Dream beasts that dart through the moonlight forests; Ghost kings that dwell on foggy cliffs. Ocean spirit beasts that haunt the depths of the boundless oceans; thousand-eyed treants that stand unyielding on precipitous peaks.

Sword Beetles, Sunset Eagles, Ancient Wood Demons, Chaotic Thunder Sprites, Cursed Demon Fox: Ice... Plants, Beasts, Elementals, Undead, this is the eccentric, variegated, beautiful, and stunning world of soul pets!

Our protagonist, a soul pet trainer, had at first a young, mutated soul pet - a Moonlight Fox. In unending fights, it mutated into the stronger Evil Flamed Six-tailed Demon fox and the even higher leveled Queen Flamed Nine-tailed Firefox!

Under the companionship of this soul pet, he walked on the path to become a king, catching precious and rare soul pets, and never ceasing his endeavor to becoming the very best!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by 87Translator, Moonfox @ Chongmei Translations

Translation Edits by LordGrim @ Chongmei Translations

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Monarch Guard, Sturdy Rock General!

"Nong nong!!!!"

A rolling, stone-like roar rang out of the very depths of the plankway's cave. Suddenly, a wave of dirt yellow colored rock dregs flew out of the cave...

The rock dregs rolled over like clouds, and when they flew through the air like sand, they unexpectedly quickly converged together, gradually forming a statue!

The statue was stately and mighty. First was its body, then its Herculean four limbs, and finally its head that seemed to be wearing a rock helmet!!

The storm of sand that swept out of the cave circled around unceasingly. It slowly ascended into the air, and within the yellow colored haze, four tall and sturdy soul pets gradually appeared!!

Sturdy Rock General!!

Sturdy Rock Guard: Elemental world – rock type – Giant species - Sturdy Rock General subspecies – commander rank

Its entire body was covered in a thick, King Kong-like armor, and its tall and sturdy body was like a mighty statue standing in the

middle of a plaza. A layer of sand-like gravel clouds orbited around its body, causing the surrounding air to be enveloped in a yellow hazy color.

The four eighth phase Sturdy Rock Generals stood outside the cave full of grandeur. These rock giants carried an intangible pressure that couldn't help but make everyone suck in a breath of air.

"Four eighth phase commanders!"

Qing Li and Zhang Qin's expression became abnormally ugly. These four eighth phase Sturdy Rock Generals, from the looks of things, hadn't undergone strengthening, but from their outer appearance, their strength and defense were considerably terrifying. It would be abnormally difficult to kill them.

After the four Sturdy Rock Generals appeared, an indignant roar was let out in the cave.

"Beng!!! Beng!!!! Beng!!!!"

With measured steps, the entire plankway shook along with its arrival. In the tall shadow of the cave, a soul pet covered in dark colored sturdy rock armor slowly walked out!

This soul pet's figure wasn't as large as the eighth phase Sturdy Rock Generals, but its body's ostentatious sharp edges and feeling of strength still gave others a heart-trembling feeling. Especially

since its right hand further held a domineering curved sword that was completely composed by dark, sturdy rock!

Ghost King!!!

Four eighth phase Sturdy Rock Generals were in the front and the Ghost King, with its incomparably apathetic gaze, stood behind them. Its eyes were fixated on the humans and soul pets that killed all of its guards. One could sense the indignant and solemn stalwart face underneath the dark sturdy rock helmet!

“Nong!!!!!”

The Ghost King had evidently been angered by the disturbance and let out a roar full of might!

“Nong!!! Nong!!!! Nong!!!!! Nong!!!!!!”

After hearing the Ghost King’s roar, the four eighth phase Sturdy Rock Generals simultaneously let out rumbling roars that were like rolling stones. Without soul remembrance protecting one’s mental world, the person would be heavily wounded by this sound!

“Ghost King… why would a Ghost King be here…” Zhang Qin and Qing Li clearly hadn’t learned of Heavenly Crystal Peak’s true situation. After seeing the appearance of the Ghost King and the four commanders, they both let out expressions of shock.

The main goal of the two of them was to lure out Yu Lang and

Feng Ya, and kill them according to their plan. As for the Heavenly Crystal Peak, they had never planned on going up...

Chu Mu was only a hundred meters away from the Ghost King. His eyes flitted past the four Sturdy Rock Generals. Watching the monarch rank Ghost King at such a close distance gave Chu Mu an even more shocking feeling!

This soul pet that radiated in strength and radiated in the aura of a rock king was one that Chu Mu had always envisioned in his heart. He had finally seen one right now, so how could his emotions not be stirred? He wished he could remove every obstacle here and form a soul pact with that fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King!

“That brat... he wants to obtain the Ghost King!” Zhang Qin’s gaze swept across Chu Mu’s face and instantly saw his desire.

Yet, once he knew of Chu Mu’s goal, Zhang Qin’s face immediately darkened. He could see that this fellow had known of the Crafty Rock Guards and Ghost King here, and had intentionally lured the five of them here. A large portion of doing so was to borrow their force to eradicate the obstructing soul pets around the Ghost King!

QIng Li wasn’t a stupid person, and once he saw the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King’s appearance, his eyes spat out fire. He had never expected the fellow who he was chasing to use them to obtain this Ghost King.

“We must kill him. Hmph, this Ghost King will also be ours!” how could Qing Li also not covet the Ghost King? After all, he could see that this Ghost King’s value could very well reach 100 million. Such a soul pet was enough to cause many factions to fight fiercely over it.

Qing Li and Zhang Qin had already reached the spirit master level, but didn’t have a monarch rank soul pet. Presently, aside from the anger in their hearts from being played by Chu Mu, there was also the excitement of obtaining a big treasure.

“O~~~~~~~”

The eighth phase third stage Purple Thunder Devil took the initiative to launch an attack at Chu Mu.

An incomparably dense cluster of clouds outlandishly appeared above Chu Mu’s head. Bolts of shocking lightning flashed in the lightning clouds. Like a large group of restless lightning snakes, they moved in every direction.

“Hua!!!!!!!”

The lightning bolts descended, and countless bolts of purple lightning from the lightning clouds struck the pathway. The entire plankway was instantly broken into several sections and the only sections of the plankway that one could stand on were knocked underneath the cliff. The only section that remained was the part outside of the Ghost King’s cave.

Chu Mu had already leapt onto Mo Xie's body. Mo Xie used Nine Tail Confuse, and she appeared outside the lightning attack's range.

"Ning, Ice Air Dance!"

Chu Mu gave the Ice Air Fairy an order.

"Ling~~~~~"

Half a second chanting, and it was finished. The Ice Air Fairy's arms brandished as countless towering ice crystals began to swirl in the air. Like fine pieces of falling snowflakes, they covered the entire area.

The Ice Air Fairy's bluish white colored ice crystals had just covered the entire area when Qing LI's Storm Fairy also chanted an incantation, immediately forming a terrifying hurricane with a height of over thirty meters. All of the towering ice crystals and sand in the air were swept inside!

"Wind Control!"

Qing Li gave his soul pet an order. A thirty meter terrifying hurricane instantly transformed into a long, turbid dragon created by a mixture of ice crystals and sand. It was full of an aura of destruction as it swept towards Chu Mu!

"Mo Xie, Nine Tail Fan!"

Seeing the ice rock hurricane sweep over, Chu Mu didn't have Mo Xie immediately dodge; instead, he had her directly face this hurricane!

The nine majestic and boundless long tails abruptly unfurled, transforming into nine dragon fans. In between the fox tails appeared a strange scarlet light, making this large fan made of fox tails become even more gorgeous!!

"Pai~~~~"

The nine tails fiercely swept towards the thirty meter hurricane. The terrifying hurricane wasn't instantly dispersed, but instead knocked towards the direction of the four eighth phase Sturdy Rock Generals by Mo Xie!

Mo Xie's Nine Tail Fan technique had two effects. The first was to act as a defensive technique like a fan shield. The other was to neutralize and change the direction of a few special techniques.

Once the thirty meter hurricane's direction was changed, it flitted past the broken plankway and swept towards the four Sturdy Rock Generals!!

"Nong!!!!!"

The four Sturdy Rock Generals seemingly simultaneously produced roaring sounds. Their enormous rock legs successively

stamped on the ground, permitting the enormous hurricane to engulf them, but they were like boulders, safely not moving.

“Ding ding ding ding~~~~~~~”

Ice crystals and sand violently struck these four eighth phase commanders’ bodies. Although they didn’t deal them any damage, it pushed their anger to an even higher level!!

“Nong!!!”

One of the Sturdy Rock Generals directly stepped forward when the hurricane hadn’t fully dissipated. It jumped at the edge of the plankway and after reaching the highest point, it stepped once again on the mountain rampart, and its body full of strength ruthlessly rocketed towards the Storm Fairy, crushing all the rocks there!

“Nong~~~~~~~~~”

Its fist with a fog of rock circling around it fiercely smashed into the ground. The Storm Fairy’s body was still swaying when the rocks under its body were directly torn apart. A rock type force surged upwards, instantly throwing it several tens of meters in the air before it struck an even higher part of the mountain rampart.

The Storm Fairy was a warrior rank soul pet. Even if it had undergone strengthening, when it met the powerful strength of a Sturdy Rock General headon, there was an evident discrepancy.

Seeing the Sturdy Rock General cause trouble for Qing Li's soul pets, a smile appeared on Chu Mu's face. He immediately rode on Mo Xie directly towards Qing Li's strongest soul pet, the Purple Thunder Devil!

"Ning, you deal with the Ardent King Kong Demon. Zhan Ye, I'll leave that Ice Winged Tiger for you. Ruthlessly rip it apart!" Chu Mu gave an order to his two other soul pets.

Seeing that Chu Mu's three soul pets had already begun fighting Qing Li's soul pets, a cold smile rose on Zhang Qin's face. He intentionally swept his gaze over to the Ghost King.

"Get rid of him first!" coldly said Qing Li.

Zhang Qin hesitated awhile. In his heart, he pondered whether to take advantage of the opportunity to subdue the Ghost King for himself.

When it came to a soul pet's capture, the first person who succeeded would naturally obtain it. The Ghost King, whose value was 100 million, was placed right in front of his eyes and the heart of Zhang Qin, who didn't have a monarch soul pet, was definitely rapidly beating.

If he quickly killed Chu Mu, then the Ghost King could potentially be obtained by Qing Li. Yet, right now, Chu Mu was fighting against Qing Li, and he himself could absolutely go over and obtain the Ghost King!

“What are you doing just standing there?!” Qing Li swept his gaze of Zhang Qin and spoke in a slightly angry manner.

Zhang Qin immediately nodded his head and dispatched his three soul pets. However, Zhang Qin himself walked slightly towards the Ghost King’s location.

“Shua!!!!”

Suddenly, a black figure outlandishly and coldly streaked across Zhang Qin’s neck!!

The sixth rank soul armor flickered slightly, but quickly transformed into fragments of facula whereby immediately subsequently, a ghastly yet captivating red sprayed forth!

Zhang Qin clutched his neck ceaselessly spilling blood. He turned around in disbelief and looked at the black colored long fur mysterious soul pet that had appeared at some unknown time. The veins on his face gradually grew more visible as his face grew more and more pale...

Chapter 202: Midair Flesh Fight, Zhan Ye vs Ice Winged Tiger (1)

The jet black hair hung down. Supple and neat. Free and majestic, and further giving one a feeling of sinister darkness.

A lion-like robust and domineering soul pet strangely appeared beside Zhang Qin.

Its front limbs possessed two black dagger-like bone blades. Presently, these bone blades were dyed in a few drops of fresh blood. It was also these bone blades that ripped apart the defenseless Zhang Qin's throat!

Qing Li quickly saw the fresh blood spurt out of Zhang Qin, whose face quickly darkened and his gaze gaze rapidly shifted to the graceful figure under the plankway!

When the 800 Crafty Rock Guards had appeared, Qing Li and Zhang Qin's attentions were fully on the fight in front of them. At the start, they had considered the problem of Ye Qingzi, who had yet to appear. However, as the battle continued and became intense, they gradually forgot about Ye Qingzi who hadn't appeared.

What Qing Li and Zhang Qin hadn't considered was that when all the Crafty Rock Guards were killed, Ye Qingzi's soul pet would appear. Unexpectedly with one fatal strike, she instantly killed the defenseless Zhang Qin!

Ye Qingzi rode on the Purple Robe Dream Beast, whose wounds had recovered and, with a few jumps, landed in front of Chu Mu.

When the 800 Crafty Rock Guards had appeared, Ye Qingzi had always been under the plankway waiting for the opportune moment. It wasn't until the battle had ended and Zhang Qin, because he was greedy for the Ghost King, finally exposed a gap that Ye Qingzi finally grasped the one hit sure kill opportunity to get rid of Zhang Qin!

"Get rid of Zhang Qin's three masterless soul pets and it'll be fine." Chu Mu said to Ye Qingzi.

Once a soul pet trainer had been killed, the soul pets that had already been summoned would have animosity. Although their soul memories could have been damage, they were still dangerous.

Ye Qingzi quickly chanted an incantation, summoning the seventh phase fifth stage Ice Fire Demon Fairy in front of her. She then summoned the mysterious soul pet back beside her and her gaze turned to wardsZhang Qin's three incomparably angry soul pets.

"It's just you two who want to contend against me? Both of you go die!!" Qing Li's anger had already hit the limit. He controlled the Ardent King Kong Demon to charge at Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy, planning on getting rid of Chu Mu's elemental soul pet, which possessed enormous destructive power.

The Ardent King Kong Demon's body was fully wrapped in a golden, sturdy rock like a steel-cast violent ape. As it ran, its domineering strength was incomparable and with each jump, it seemingly would make the mountain rampart cave in a bit!

"Ning, maintain some distance!" Chu Mu naturally knew that the Ardent King Kong Demon was probably similar to the Rock Generals. It was a rock type soul pet that had a combination of strength and defense. The moment this soul pet was allowed to get close, it would be extremely hard to defeat.

"Ice Mirror!"

The incantation was practically completed instantaneously. Numerous incomparably glossy ice walls emerged on the mountain and some of them even floated on the broken parts of the plankway...

The Ardent King Kong Demon's body was full of strength and amidst its extreme jumps, instantly shattered these successively arranged ice walls. Its two mighty arms raised high in the air and it abruptly usd the terrifying Pulverize technique!

"Beng~~~~~"

The unobstructed arms struck the precipitous mountain rampart the Ice Air Fairy was at. The Ardent King Kong Demon directly passed through the illusory Ice Air Fairy and crashed into the thick mountain stone layer.

Twenty meters above the Ardent King Kong Demon, the Ice Air Fairy slowly emerged from an ice mirror. It had already prepared an incantation in its mouth.

“Towering Ice-Ice Seal!”

A cold ice aura circled around the Ice Air Fairy’s body, and the bluish white frost moved along the mountain behind the Ice Air Fairy. It rapidly moved down, and soon sealed the hole that the Ardent King Kong Demon had smashed into in a layer of thick towering ice!

Qing Li’s eyebrows creased. His Ardent King Kong Demon had already expended a lot of physical energy in the fight just now, and the fighting strength it could exhibit right now wasn’t even 70% of what it could originally.

Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy further possessed the powerful towering ice. The ice seal’s force became incomparably sturdy and, for a short while, the Ardent King Kong Demon fundamentally could not shatter the ice layer.

“Ice Winged Tiger, shatter the ice layer!” Qing Li gave the Ice Winged Tiger an order.

With its wings spread apart, the Ice Winged Tiger flew along the stone wall. It quickly flew towards the Ice Air Fairy’s location, wanting to stop its incantation, it continued to recite while also freeing the Ardent King Kong Demon from the ice seal.

“Zhan Ye, don’t let your opponent run!” said Chu Mu.

“Hou hou hou!!!”

Zhan Ye immediately used Extreme Speed and its speed bursted forth. After adding speed on the half-section plankway, it unexpectedly could run along the stone wall and painted a long black shadow on the perpendicular mountain rampart.

When its inertia was about to disappear, Zhan Ye abruptly jumped off the stone, its body leaping up!!

Heavenly Splitting Claw!!!

Its two claws extended, the ink claws scratching the stone wall, it ruthlessly tore at the soaring Ice Winged Tiger!!

The Ice Winged Tiger’s body turned over, and its enormous wings gave an abrupt wave. Before Zhan Ye had used Heavenly Splitting Claw, its wings knocked Zhan Ye flying!

Zhan Ye’s strength was quite inferior to the Ice Winged Tiger. After striking the Ice Winged Tiger’s wings, it was instantly swatted flying and, like a falling rock, it fell diagonally under the broken plankway.

“Mo Xie!”

Chu Mu no longer had much soul power remaining. Although he could use Dragon Wind Ride to lift Zhan Ye, at this moment, the tacit communication between his soul pets was really put to the test by him.

“Wu wu wu~~~~~”

Nine Tail Confuse floated by and Mo Xie, who was originally fighting high above, suddenly appeared below. One of her tails quickly swept up the falling Zhan ye!

Mo Xie’s tails could be hard or soft. After easing Zhan Ye’s falling force, she abruptly threw Zhan Ye back up at the Ice Winged Tiger high above!

Mo Xie’s tail strength was extremely strong. Throwing Zhan Ye like this practically made its speed reach the max, and the tenacious life force Zhan Ye never worried about the consequences. Its two black eyes were rigidly fixed on the Ice Winged Tiger as it used Heavenly Splitting Claw again!!

“Shua!!! Shua!!!!”

This time, this Ice Winged Tiger wasn’t able to dodge in time. The two interweaving claw tips streaked across its body, forming crisscrossing wounds. Fresh blood began to rapidly seep out of its body!

“Hou hou!!!!!!”

The Ice Winged Tiger soaring in the air let out a painful howl. Its two yellow eyes unexpectedly turned red as its blood continued to flow!

“Violent Blood Pupil!”

The incantation was finally finished, and a blood red armor slowly enveloped the Ice Winged Tiger’s body, dying its body completely in red. Its two eyes also transformed into a bloodthirsty color!

“Hou hou hou hou!!!!!!!”

Violent Blood Beast was innately able to allow a soul pet to forget pain. The blood colored battle gear, after it was draped on, caused the Ice Winged Tiger’s beast aura to terrifyingly discharge. It became incomparably malevolent and instantaneously, it locked onto Zhan Ye which was hanging on the cliff’s stone wall using its claws. Abruptly, it beat its wings and flew at Zhan Ye!

“Water Screen Armor!” Ye Qingzi knew that Chu Mu’s Zhan Ye needed special consideration, and she added the soul technique on its body!

Zhan Ye had already reached the sixth phase ninth stage and its defense had increased a lot. After the Towering Ice armor disappeared, its defense was still able to reach the late seventh stage. After Ye Qingzi’s Water Screen Armor was added, its defense increased to the pseudo eighth stage.

The Towering Ice armor's effects were better, but it was quite a bit of obstruction towards Zhan Ye's movements. Using Water Screen Armor on Zhan Ye was even more beneficial.

Zhan Ye didn't have the ability to fly and furthermore, this mountain rampart didn't have a place to put its feet. It could only use its claws to deig into the mountain, hanging onto the rock wall. Seeing the Ice Winged Tiger flying at it with torrential imposition, Zhan Ye resolutely relaxed its claw, and its body directly slid down the mountain.

The Ice Winged Tiger rose from the seventh phase second stage to the seventh phase fourth stage. Violent Blood Pupils' effects allowed the Ice Winged Tiger to be full of an even more bloody aura. Seeing Zhan Ye drop down, it drew up a fiendish blood wind and dove down diagonally!

"Beng!!!!!"

The dropping Zhan Ye smashed firmly into a protruding rock. Using this buffer, Zhan Ye abruptly turned around and leapt into the air, landing in a rock crevice under the plankway!

Shattering Claw!!

How terrifying was the Ice Tiger Wing's diving force? Like a blood colored hurricane, it dove with extreme speed. Shattering Claw's force exploded on the rock crevice where Zhan Ye was resting!

Numerous clustered fissures appeared on the mountain rampart. As the Shattering Claw sank in, the entire stone wall suddenly shattered, unexpectedly blowing up a large ten meter perimeter hole which depth was two to three meters!

What kind of strength was it to be able to break through two to three meters of mountain rock?! With Zhan Ye's defense, albeit having reached the pseudo eighth stage, its ink armor was still ruptured, exposing flesh and bones full of fresh blood!

Chu Mu was able to sense Zhan Ye's fight through the mental connection. Qing Li's Ice Winged Tiger had clearly undergone tens of millions of gold of strengthening. Otherwise, even with Violent Blood Pupils' effects, it wouldn't be able to deal such terrifying destruction force with its seventh phase fourth stage strength!

"Hmph, my Ice Winged Tiger's beast attribute has already reached the peak commander realm. Your sixth phase ninth stage Mo Ye, even if its strength slowly increases in a fight, cannot compare with my Ice Winged Tiger!" sneered Qing Li.

The Ice Winged Tiger's attack had instantly given Zhan Ye serious wounds. In Qing Li's opinion, this soul pet would definitely die. As long as he got rid of one of Chu Mu's soul pets and in the next fights while Zhang Qin's three soul pets delayed Ye Qingzi, he was still confident that he could get rid of them both!

Chu Mu indifferently raised the corners of his lips and coldly read out Zhan Ye's technique name: "Broken Limb Rebirth!"

“Hou Hou!!!!!!!”

The tenacious life force of Zhan Ye made it so that it could not be so easily killed. After angrily roaring, the wounds on Zhan Ye rapidly seeped out insect fluid which wrapped around its body!

The sixth Broken Limb Rebirth!

Zhan Ye had followed Chu Mu for such a long period of time, yet this was the first time he had used the sixth Broken Limb Rebirth. It was also his last Broken Limb Rebirth!

Regardless of its shattered tiger bones, the messed up flesh in its body or the extremely smashed armor, after a short few seconds of the insect fluid smearing past, Zhan Ye was completely fine like the start. A new ink colored armor flashed the newest lustre!

Hearing Chu Mu read out the technique’s name, Qing Li astonishedly looked down. He wasn’t able to react in time when a noise suddenly rang out of the shattered cave. Subsequently afterward, a beast figure with wings was knocked flying out of the shattered cave. The one that flew out a dozen meters happened to be Qing Li’s Ice Winged Tiger!!

Chapter 203: Midair Flesh Fight, Zhan Ye vs Ice Winged Tiger (2)

“Houhouhouhou!!!!!!” From the shattered cave came a zealous roar. Soon after, a black figure leaped upwards from the cave and actually jumped out, pouncing towards the Ice Winged Tiger that flew out backwards!

“Does this Mo Ye not want its life?!”Seeing this scene, Qing Li was dumbstruck.

The Mo Ye didn’t have wings at all, but still dared to jump straight out away from the wall and fall towards the Ice Winged Tiger that was blasted away. If it didn’t hit the Ice Winged Tiger, it would fall the thousand meters to the bottom of the mountain and die horribly!!

Once it sank into battle, Zhan Ye was a lunatic that didn’t care for its own life. High up on the mountain, Zhan Ye flew straight through over ten meters of air and barely hooked onto the Ice Winged Tiger’s forelimbs with its tiger claws, heavily yanking the Ice Winged Tiger downwards!

The Ice Winged Tiger was already shaky. With this pounce of Zhan Ye, it got even more frantic, and it started flapping its wings with all its might!

“Houhouhouhou!!!!!”

The last Broken Limb Rebirth allowed Zhan Ye's fighting strength to recover. Best at close combat, Zhan Ye was tightly wrapped around the body of the Ice Winged Tiger, and he started a terrifying flesh fight thousand meters above ground in the windy skies!

Messy feathers were strewn into the skies. Even if the Ice Winged Tiger had the bloodlust effect, its lust for blood couldn't compete with this complete disregard for death of Zhan Ye's. It clearly showed signs of distress, and it vehemently flapped its wings as it was threatening to fall……

Once terror was in the heart, the effects of Violent Blood Pupil would disappear early. Being dominated by Zhan Ye's flesh fight, the blood colored cloak on the Ice Winged Tiger slowly disappeared, and it fell back to seventh phase second stage. With a burden on its back, it unsteadily started to fly towards the stone wall, wanting to find some rest on a protruding rock.

"Fly outwards, fly outwards!" Seeing his soul pet actually fly towards the rocks, Qing Li immediately roared!

If it flew outwards, the moment Zhan Ye couldn't hold onto the Ice Winged Tiger, Zhan Ye would immediately fall. This meant that Zhan Ye would shatter at the bottom. Yet, if it flew towards the mountain, it completely meant giving Zhan Ye an advantageous setting.

The Ice Winged Tiger was like a raged beast that fell in a mud swamp. Getting dragged by the barbaric Zhan Ye, it had a body full of power that it couldn't use fully. Hearing its owner's command,

it could only barely flap its wings towards further skies!

“Mental Sword!”

Seeing that the Ice Winged Tiger had difficulty trying to get rid of the Zhan Ye who was proficient at sticky fights, Qing Li expended the rest of his dwindling soul power and casted an incantation, hundreds of meters apart, straight towards Zhan Ye!

“Houhou~~~~~~~~~”

The Mental Sword accurately pierced into Zhan Ye’s soul. Zhan Ye let out a pained howl and, no longer able to hold on tight, it slipped off of the Ice Winged Tiger and started falling through the raging winds!

Chu Mu’s main attention was on Zhan Ye. Once he saw that Zhan Ye fell, he decisively commanded his Ice Air Fairy!

“Towering Ice-Ice Sword Formation!”

The incantation started, and twenty three Towering Ice-Ice Swords quickly appeared above the Ice Air Fairy.

“Ling~~~~~~~~”

Getting controlled by the Ice Air Fairy, these twenty three swords drew an arc in the sky and accurately fell where Zhan Ye was about

to drop!

Microcontrol!

Without needing Chu Mu to clarify, the Ice Air Fairy knew what Chu Mu meant. When the twenty three ice swords flew past under Zhan Ye, they suddenly slowed down and started angling upwards!

Zhan Ye found its balance in the air, and he quickly locked onto one ten meter long ice sword and fell steadily onto it!

“Houhouhouhou!!!!!”

In the thousand meter skies, the completely black armored Zhan Ye stood proudly on the ten meter long ice sword. It lifted its proud head, and let out a deafening roar into the skies!

Metamorphosis!!

Not long after the final Broken Limb Rebirth, withstanding the intense provocation of the fight with the Ice Winged Tiger, it started transforming as the ice sword flew. Claws, armor, bones……

Seventh phase first stage!!

At the edge of a thousand meters above ground, Zhan Ye completed the leap from sixth to seventh phase and entered the

seventh phase first stage! Even Chu Mu didn't think that the effects of Brave Stinging Heart could let Zhan Ye reach a metamorphosis level!

Watching the black beast standing on the ice sword, Qing Li's expression went slack. He had lived for this long and understood all sorts of soul pets, but this was the first time he saw a soul pet able to constantly grow stronger while fighting, reaching to the point where it increased a phase!

A sixth phase first stage soul pet, even if its talent was top tier commander rank, it was still nothing to rely on against a seventh phase Ice Winged Tiger. However, if it reached the seventh phase, it was completely different!

A seventh phase fully equip top tier commander rank. After six Broken Limb Rebirths, Zhan Ye's power could be said to have reached a peak. Riding the uprising ice sword, the morphed Zhan Ye's black eyes stared deadly at the Ice Winged Tiger!

"Heavenly Ripping Claw!" Chu Mu coldly gave a command.

Zhan Ye's body crouched down, and it suddenly stamped on the Ice Sword, snapping the sword in two. Yet, its body flew straight up through the swift winds upwards!!

The Ice Winged Tiger completely didn't expect that Zhan Ye could still come back. Seeing this wild and utterly ruthless soul pet, terror arose within its heart and it frantically flapped its wings to try to dodge it.

“Shuashua!!!!!!”

The Ice Winged Tiger’s reaction was still too slow. Zhan Ye’s claws, under the effects of the full offensive soul equipment, reached seventh rank complete stage, and heavily swiped through the Ice Winged Tiger’s collarbone region!!

Bloodied feathers were sent flying as a wing of the Ice Winged Tiger was shredded to pieces in midair. The Ice Winged Tiger didn’t even have time to let out an anguished howl before it fell straight down without the support of its wings!!

Qing Li’s previous command was to make his Ice Winged Tiger fly away from the mountain. Now that its wing was broken, the steep descent couldn’t possibly be stopped by any foothold.

“Feng Bao, quick, save it!”

At this moment, Qing Li’s face went pale, and he nervously commanded his Storm Fairy.

The Storm Fairy was just struggling against the Sturdy Rock Guard. Seeing the Ice Winged Tiger fall, it risked its life to struggle free of the Sturdy Rock Guard and started a wind type incantation to lift up the Ice Winged Tiger!

“Sound Curse!” Ye Qingzi told her War Court Black Beast.

Ye Qingzi's soul pet had clearly gotten rid of its foe. Full of dense black fur, the War Court Black Beast's eyes locked onto the Storm Fairy, and it opened its mouth, roaring a Sound Curse towards the Storm Fairy!!!

The Sound Curse was a mental technique. This mental technique's most direct effect was to break elemental soul pet and soul pet trainers' incantations!

The one second incantation of the Storm Fairy was just about to finish, but was interrupted by Ye Qingzi and her exquisite handling of opportunities!

Chapter 204: Mental Combat against Ghost King

“Beng!!!!!!!!”

Before the incantation finished, the Sturdy Rock Guard suddenly appeared in front of the Storm Fairy, and its fist heavily punched into the Storm Fairy’s weak body, leaving a massive crack on the Fairy’s chest!

Qing Li’s face abruptly shifted. Seeing his Ice Winged Tiger fall further and further, he didn’t dare to hold back any further. He started casting an incantation to save his Ice Winged Tiger!

“Soul Remembrance Shackles!”

How could Chu Mu give Qing Li the opportunity to retract his soul pets? His spirit master level remembrance immediately locked onto Qing Li, completely not giving Qing Li the chance to cast his soul pact incantation!

“Second remembrance spirit master!”

When Chu Mu’s soul remembrance came over, Qing Li felt Chu Mu’s power and his heart trembled.

Qing Li entered the spirit master level about a year ago, yet he rarely showed his true strength in front of others. He rarely even

summoned his fourth soul pet. He had thought that he had hid deep enough, but he never would've imagined that the young man in front of him had hid even deeper, being a full remembrance higher than him!

The Soul Remembrance Shackles immediately locked onto Qing Li's soul, not giving him a chance to retract his Ice Winged Tiger back into his soul pet space.

The Ice Winged Tiger constantly fell, deeper and deeper, before finally dropping through the clouds and disappearing from sight.

Suddenly, Qing Li's heart was pierced by an unknown force, and he crumpled to the ground weakly, his body producing spasm-like trembles!

After the Ice Winged Tiger fell to the mountain depths and died, the breaking of the soul pact immediately caused huge damage to his soul. With an exhausted reserve of soul power, his entire body entered into a weakened state.

"Ice Fire Obliterating Diagram!"

Ye Qingzi had already gotten rid of Zhang Qin's three soul pets. Seeing Qing Li's soul get wounded, she decisively let her Ice Fire Demon Fairy attack the Ardent King Kong Demon!

"Ning, Ice Sword Formation!"

Chu Mu similarly gave his Ice Air Fairy the command.

Ning's Ice Sword Formation quickly formed and, after a second of technique Superpositioning, forty six Towering Ice Swords towered over the mountain side with all their points locked onto the Ardent King Kong Demon!

The Ardent King Kong Demon clinged onto the perpendicular mountain body, not having any foothold nearby. Once the Ice Fire Obliterating Diagram locked onto it, it couldn't move!

Red Demon Flame, piercing Mysterious Crystal Ice Crystal, two completely repelling energies interlaced in one region. The power of ice and fire immediately caused the Ardent King Kong Demon's skin to split open all over!

The Ice Fire Obliterating Diagram had reached eighth rank, so the already debilitated Ardent King Kong Demon couldn't possibly dodge it.

Forty six Towering Ice swords flew by the mountain side, freezing everything along the way, and very accurately hitting the Ardent King Kong Demon. No matter how powerful the King Kong Demon's defense was, it couldn't withstand the combination of both techniques. After the Ice Swords hit, the Ardent King Kong Demon's body opened in countless cracks, and it let out unceasingly pained howls within the ice and fire torture!

Qing Li's spirit was heavily injured. Seeing the Ardent King Kong Demon about to be killed, he forcefully struggled free of Chu Mu's

soul remembrance shackle and started an incantation to retract his heavily wounded Ardent King Kong Demon back into his soul pet space.

Qing Li's soul pets originally could still fight evenly against Chu Mu's soul pets, but with Ye Qingzi's soul pet added, the situation quickly changed. Including Qing Li's strongest Purple Lightning Devil, with the help of the War Court Black Beast, they weren't holding out well anymore.

With the death of the Ice Winged Tiger, the Sturdy Rock Guard distracting his Storm Fairy, and his Ardent King Kong Demon being heavily wounded and retracted, he could only rely on his powerful Purple Lightning Devil, and that was hopeless.

Qing Li's eyes were nearly breathing fire, but he knew that if he didn't leave now, he would also die here.

"Escape!!"

Qing Li shouted angrily and directly jumped onto his Purple Lightning Devil's body. Immediately lightning flashed all around and, while the blinding lightning was shining, he immediately followed the the broken walkway downwards to escape down the mountain!

How could Ye Qingzi let Qing Li escape? She quickly jumped onto the Purple Robed Dream Beast's body and brought the Ice Fire Demon Fairy and the War Court Black Beast with her as she went to chase after Qing Li.

“Chu Mu, you go capture the Ghost King and I’ll deal with him!” Ye Qingzi’s soul pet fighting strength was still full and, when she chased after Qing Li, she specially told Chu Mu.

“Qingzi, let him run first. If you catch up now, even if you kill him, it’ll be hard to get information of your brother from him.” Chu Mu said.

Ye Wansheng was still in Qing Li’s hands. Even if she caught up, if Qing Li had any reason left, he would definitely use Ye Wansheng’s life as hostage against Ye Qingzi. This way, Ye Qingzi wouldn’t dare to kill him, and would even let him take control of the situation.

“Your plan is……” Ye Qingzi told her Purple Robed Beast to slow down and she turned around to look at Chu Mu up high.

“Let him back and let Old Li follow him. Then we’ll be able to easily find Ye Wansheng.” Chu Mu said.

“Young master……young master, stuff like following is something the old man can’t……” Somehow Old Li overheard the soul remembrance conversation between Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi. Once Chu Mu finished, this cowardly old thing immediately shook his head in denial.

“I’ll give you two choices. One, follow Qing Li. Two, follow Qing Li.” Chu Mu said apathetically to Old Li.

"……" Old Li was speechless.

"Stop the nonsense and go!" Chu mu naturally knew Old Li's powers. He had very powerful hiding abilities as well as a strange camouflaging method. His speed surpassed Mo Xie's, so following Qing Li was definitely no issue.

Old Li was very unwilling, but since Chu Mu phrased it so strictly, he had no other choice. He could only shake his raccoon head and move his short body down the mountain in pursuit.

"You follow Old Li first. Once I capture the Ghost King, I'll catch up." Chu Mu said.

Ye Qingzi nodded and let her speed down a little to slowly follow behind Old Li as they chased towards Qing Li.

……

Watching Ye Qingzi leave, Chu Mu summoned his three soul pets to his side and glanced past the fifty meter long gap in the walkway, looking right at the Ghost King who stood aside calmly the entire time.

When Chu Mu and Qing Li fought, the extremely intelligent Ghost King seemed to have discerned the different sides the humans were on. Other than sending a Sturdy Rock Guard in, he had stood beside the cave and spectated.

Yet this time, on the disfigured walkway was only Chu Mu, his three soul pets, and the Ghost King with his three Sturdy Rock Guards.

“Nong!!!!!!!!!!”

The Ghost King naturally saw the human’s plans. He, who had watched aside with folded arms, finally started fighting Chu Mu!

After the Ghost King sent its command, the three Sturdy Rock Guards all opened their rock mouths wide, roaring out a sand filled storm and lunged towards Chu Mu and his three soul pets!

“White devil, come out!”

Chu Mu also knew that Ning had fought for a long time and was near empty in terms of mental strength, so he decisively retracted Ning into his soul pet space and summoned the white devil onto the shattered walkway.

Chu Mu’s body started burning with white devil fire and, shaped like Chu Mu, the white devil appeared like a white devil fire constructed shadow. It slowly peeled off Chu Mu’s body and struggled free. The monarch rank’s wanton flames spread outwards and immediately dropped the temperature around it, as if one fell into an icy hole!!

“Nienie~~~~~~~~~~”

The White Nightmare was also a battle hungry devil. Seeing the three powerful Sturdy Rock Guards of the Ghost King, it didn't show any signs of graveness, but instead let out an abnormally excited cackle, as if it was a devil from the depths of Tartarus that suddenly found an interesting play-thing. Its laughter sent one's heart beating.

"Mo Xie, white devil, you face these three Sturdy Rock Guards. Zhan Ye, you're in charge of the Sturdy Rock Guard behind." Chu Mu quickly distributed the opponents to his soul pets.

The first Sturdy Rock Guard fought against Qing Li's Storm Fairy for a while, and the Storm Fairy caused some damage to it as well. The seventh phase first stage Zhan Ye, with care, would be able to deal with it.

Zhan Ye was indeed a crazed warmonger. The moment Chu Mu's command was given, it jumped bravely towards the Sturdy Rock Guard behind them. With its brash manner, it was as if it still had six Broken Limb Rebirths, completely having no regard for an expert's power.

Mo Xie had fought for a long time against the Purple Lightning Devil, but mostly relied on dodging and occupying, so though she had expended some fighting power, she could still continue.

The moment Chu Mu sent the command, the nimble Mo Xie immediately ran along the mountain wall, leaving a flashy trail of flame steps. She quickly appeared in front of the three Sturdy Rock

Guards and opened her nine tails up with their palpable aura, actually taunting all three eighth phase Sturdy Rock Guards!

“Nie!!!!!!!”

Seeing Mo Xie attack all three Sturdy Rock Guards, the white devil immediately let out a dissatisfied call. White demonic devil fire darted up its feet and it casted Devil Phantom, dragging faint shadows of itself in the air as it appeared instantly in front of the Sturdy Rock Guards!

With devil fire dancing about, the white devil’s devil flames also attacked all three Sturdy Rock Guards, as if stealing them from Mo Xie!

The three sturdy rock guards were all at the eighth phase early stage. Without moonlight, the seventh phase white devil’s strength was clearly higher than Mo Xie’s, and the white devil’s powerful white demonic devil flames were also a great threat to the three Sturdy Rock Guards. Quickly, the three Guards were split up!

“White devil, you deal with two. Mo Xie, deal with one.”

Since the white nightmare was full of energy, Chu Mu simply let the White Nightmare go against the two Sturdy Rock guards, and let the already tired Mo Xie deal with one.

Successful in stealing them, the white devil let out excited calls

and then let out a strange taunt to Mo Xie, as if looking down upon her.

Mo Xie didn't feel like taking notice of this White Nightmare with brain issues. Following Chu Mu's arrangement, she attracted one Sturdy Rock Guard down under the walkway and started taking advantage of her speed as she slowly wore down the Sturdy Rock Guard.

The Sturdy Rock Guard's defense was at the eighth rank intermediate stage. Without some powerful technique, inflicting heavy damage was very hard. Yet, such a technique was very endurance consuming, so if they didn'tt find the perfect opportunity, the experienced Mo Xie wouldn't be able to easily cast it.

The white nightmare had many types, and was dominant in its attack style. Even if it had to deal with two Sturdy Rock Guards, Chu Mu was at ease. Chu Mu was still most worried about Zhan Ye. After all, Zhan Ye no longer had any Broken Limb Rebirths. To let it, a seventh phase first stage, fight an eighth phase commander rank was indeed a stretch.

However, what Chu Mu didn't expect was Zhan Ye seemed to really have found the feeling of battle. In the beginning of battle, it had already stuck its Ink Armor Spike into the Sturdy Rock Guard's body!

The Sturdy Rock Guard's defense was eighth rank intermediate stage. Even Zhan Ye's msot powerful technique could barely rip through its defense. With the effects of the defense-ignoring Ink

Armor Spike and the Dark Corrosion effect that lowered the Guard's defense below eighth rank, Zhan Ye's advantage rose greatly.

As long as Zhan Ye could also deal with that Sturdy Rock Guard, these four Sturdy Rock Guards will no longer pose as obstacles to Chu Mu capturing the Ghost King. After finding the situation to be very in his favor, Chu Mu smiled and watched the silently standing Ghost King.

The Ghost King didn't participate in battle from beginning to end. Under its dignified armor, its eyes also watched Chu Mu, seeming to know that Chu Mu was the owner of the three soul pets. Its eyes were sharp and aggressive, bringing a monarch pressure upon Chu Mu's body.

If Chu Mu were still a spirit teacher, such mental pressure would definitely create psychological shadows within Chu Mu that would slowly make him fear the Ghost King. However, Chu Mu was second remembrance spirit master. No matter how developed the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King's mental strength was, no matter how powerful the technique, it wouldn't be able to create too much pressure on Chu Mu's soul.

Chu Mu's black eyes shone with radiance. Facing the Ghost King's mental attack, Chu Mu simply gave up his soul remembrance, completely releasing his soul remembrance to start the most direct mental confrontation with the Ghost King!

Without much soul power left, Chu Mu still remained adamant. This was because Chu Mu knew, if he couldn't masterfully

suppress the arrogant Ghost King in terms of mental power, it would be extremely hard to successfully sign a soul pact with it!

In the mental confrontation, Chu Mu could feel his own mental world withstand waves of rockfall like impacts, coming in waves that shook Chu Mu's entire mental world.

A soul pet trainer's soul remembrance was the purest of mental energies. If it were powerful enough, it could immediately crumble a weaker minded opponent. Chu Mu's soul remembrance and aura was much different from a normal soul pet trainer, because his body and soul had once been merged with the Whtie Nightmare, causing him to morph into half devil.

The half devil's aura would still remain in his body. This meant that Chu Mu had an aura even more mad than a monarch like White Nightmare. If Chu Mu let his soul burn up, the powerful aura could make many monarch ranks back off!

"Nong!!!!!"

The Ghost King quickly realized the human's powerful aura and decisively gave up the confrontation against Chu Mu. The previously arrogant eyes now revealed some fear as it slightly stepped back a few steps.

Mental fear was the best beginning to capturing a soul pet. Seeing the Ghost King back off, Chu Mu's eyes instead became even more imposing, continuing to give pressure despite using up all his soul power!

Chapter 205: Heavenly Crystal Peak's Master, Hegemonic Monarch

"Nong~~~~~Nong~~~~~~"

"Nong~~~~~~Nong~~~~~~~~"

Just as Chu Mu was about to exert pressure on the Ghost King, two rumbling sounds resonated from the incomparably lofty mountain peak. These roars gave others the feeling of rolling thunder passing over one's head. Despite being far away, it was powerful!

A slightly strange change occurred in the clouds even higher above. As if it was being controlled by some powerful being, they would occasionally become dense while occasionally become sparse.

Chu Mu immediately lifted his head up, and he gazed at the practically vertical mountain peak. When the cloud layer became sparse, he faintly managed to make out a creature looking up at the sky and indignantly roaring!

Although he couldn't clearly see this soul pet, merely from the arrogant 'I'm the sole lord of this mountain' mannerism, it made others feel an enormous pressure!

"Ghost King, an eighth phase or above Ghost King!" in this instant, Chu Mu sucked in a breath of air.

When Chu Mu was in the Great Chu Family, he had seen the ninth phase Heavenly Devil Insect Monarch, whose terrifyingly destructive power was still fresh in his memory.

Yet, what made Chu Mu shocked was that this Heavenly Crystal Peak's lord, the eighth phase Ghost King, had an enormous grandeur that was even slightly stronger than the ninth phase Heavenly Devil Monarch's aura!

Over a thousand meters away, yet to Chu Mu, it was like it was just in front of him. His heart couldn't help but tremble along with the mountain.

As if a large mountain was fiercely pressuring his body, Chu Mu's soul remembrance was completely locked, and he simply was unable to exert any pressure on the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King. Instead, he was shrouded by that powerful being's shadow, and even his breathing suffered from certain hindrance as well!

The information that the Elemental Sect had released was entirely false. Presently, Chu Mu could feel the full fighting strength of Heavenly Crystal Peak's lord. It was completely different from the heavy wound they had said had happened earlier.

Chu Mu's expression grew serious. A hundred meters away was the monarch soul pet he was yearning for even in his dreams. He only needed a few minutes of time, and there would be an extremely large chance of subduing it.

However, Chu Mu didn’t have this much time. A thousand meters up, to an eighth phase Ghost King, simply didn’t require that long to close the distance. Moreover, Chu Mu currently didn’t have the strength to contend against the Ghost King!

Chu Mu grit his teeth. Without taking a risk, how could he obtain an even stronger soul pet?!

Once Chu Mu made his decision, the White Nightmare let out a devil cry, and thewhite demonic devil flames flew out of its body. It seemed as if its body was directly being burned until there was nothing left, and it unexpectedly disappeared from its place.

In the next moment, a ball of white demonic devil flames appeared next to Chu Mu. This ball of devil flames slowly expanded and gradually morphed into the White Nightmare’s body!

Displacement Specter!

The White Nightmare had comprehended a new movement fighting technique and used it gorgeously in front of Chu Mu. As if it had instantly teleported, it instantaneously returned from the battlefield back to Chu Mu.

“White Demonic Heavenly Flame Rite!” Chu Mu said to the White Nightmare.

“Nie~~~~~~~”

The White Nightmare let out a devil cry, and the white demonic devil flames frantically burned, illuminating the surrounding destroyed plankway in an incomparably pale light!!

“Chong Mei – Heavenly Flame Rite!” the incantation was chanted, and a white demonic devil flame identically began burning on Chu Mu’s body. These devil flames were fully dyed in a white color, and his two pupils let out a completely different devil light that was abnormally evil and imposing!

A trace of white colored light gradually appeared high up on the black sinister clouds. Like daylight breaking through the clouds, it shined down vertically, and fell in between the plank way and the very tip of Heavenly Crystal Peak!!

The solitary spire of the mountain peak bore the Heavenly Flame Rite bombardment, and began to violently shake!

Immediately following that, an eminently gorgeous and long pale white flaming dragon curled its body and ascended up the exceptionally lofty mountain peak from below!!

The terrifying destruction aura suddenly pervaded the entire Heavenly Crystal Peak’s summit. The spiritual white flame dragon soared upwards, and it immediately shattered the area high up the mountain. Numerous rolling stones dropped from the air above, startling the groups of soul pets on Heavenly Crystal Peak to let out waves of incomparably panicked shouts!!

“Longlonglonglong~~~~~~”

The sounds of rolling was delayed a few seconds before finally reverberating around the sky enshrouded in black clouds!

At the very top of the mountain peak, the curved sword in the monarch’s hand fiercely stabbed the rocks, and its body swayed along with the mountain’s swaying. Its imposing eyes closely stared at the long spiritual white flamed dragon flying up from below!

“Hu hu hu hu~~~~~~”

The Heavenly Flame Rite’s flaming dragon finally surged up to the mountain peak. The eighth phase Ghost King suddenly pulled the curved sword out from the thick stone. Throwing itself into the air, one hand clutched to the sword, it was covered in a strong ghostly aura.

Frighteningly descending, the rock type crystals and ghost type crystals fused together as it fiercely chopped at the Heavenly Flame Rite’s long flaming dragon!!

“Wu~~~~~~”

Like a painful whimper, the enormous curved blade unexpectedly struck down at the very top of the energy formed Heavenly Flame Rite, instantly chopping the long dragon into two halves. It was as

if a real long dragon had been split apart!

The white colored devil flames scattered everywhere. Without an energy form, the Heavenly Flame Rite transformed into a white colored flame that didn't have much effect on the Ghost King. Very soon, it disappeared near the mountain peak.

"Nong!!!!!!!!'

Its enormous body fell on the lightning. The Ghost King which had been provoked stared down with an incomparably haughty gaze at Chu Mu and the White Nightmare 1000 meters down. Its monarch majesty was exhibited without restraint, and it caused the entire Heavenly Crystal peak move because of it!

Finally, the Ghost King was about to come!

A thousand meter distance. This Heavenly Crystal Peak's lord simply didn't plan on leaving its mountain peak throne. It eminently arrogantly lifted the curved sword in its hand with its gaze fixated on Chu Mu and the White Nightmare!!

The curved sword pointed at the sky and the black clouds that covered the sky, as if they were being controlled, rapidly funnelled into the Ghost King's curved sword!

The horizon had already fully become a black color, and when all the black clouds funnelled into the Ghost King's curved sword, the Ghost King gripped his sword and astonishingly struck

downwards!!!!

“Long~~~~~~~~”

The mountain peak shook, and the moment the sword descended, a powerful black colored energy and brown colored energy flew out of the curved sword and quickly spread down the practically vertically mountain rampart!!

“Nie~~~”

The White Nightmare grew aware of the power of this one attack quickly. The instant the sword descended, it grabbed Chu Mu and decisively used Displacement Specter!

The white demonic devil flames burned on both Chu Mu and the White Nightmares’ bodies. Very soon, their bodies were burned to ashes, and they disappeared from their original location.

“Sila~~~~~~”

Practically the instant Chu Mu and the White Nightmare disappeared, the black colored and brown colored curved sword forces terrifyingly swept past them. Strange, quick, violent, chaotic and full of terror that made the blood of others run cold!

One sword scar. One sword scar, from a thousand meters up, had split everything all the way down to below the plankway!!

What kind of terrifying strength was this?! It unexpectedly caused such a shocking vestige in under a second from a thousand meters up the mountain peak!

Fifty meters away, white demonic devil flames slowly burned. Chu Mu and the White Nightmare simultaneously appeared in this ball of devil flames. When Chu Mu lifted his head and stared at the shocking sword scar, cold sweat flowed down his neck!!

Billows surged through his heart and, for a long time, it was hard to calm down. Chu Mu had never expected for the eighth phase Ghost King to be strong to this extent. It had already completely surpassed that ninth phase Eight Winged Heavenly Devil Insect!

Although they were both monarchs, the Eight Winged Heavenly Devil Insect, when compared to the Ghost King, simply wasn't on the same level! This kind of monarch grandeur and incomparably hegemonic strength allowed Chu Mu to experience the insufferable arrogance of a true monarch ranked soul pet!

"Nong~~~~~~"

The one strike missed, and the Ghost King's roar once more pressured down like enormous rocks falling!

The large curved sword raised high above once again, and the sword blade astonishingly was pointed at Chu Mu!!

The thousand meters of distance was like a mere few feet. The thousand meter curved sword was like it was suspended a few inches above his head. The power of the Ghost King was fundamentally not something that Chu Mu could contend against!

No matter how much Chu Mu coveted the Ghost King, no matter how determined he was to capture the fifth phase Ghost King and even after seeing the eighth phase Ghost King use its powerful strength that he could be sure that the Ghost King was the soul pet he wanted the most, Chu Mu ultimately maintained his reason.

In this scenario, even if Chu Mu transformed into a half devil, he absolutely could not obtain the Ghost King. Moreover, if he were to stay even a minute longer here, he would definitely be completely wiped out!!

“Zhan Ye, return!”

Chanting an incantation, Chu Mu resolutely recalled Zhan Ye, which was incapable of flying back to its soul pet space.

“White Nightmare, leave!” Chu Mu didn’t recall the White Nightmare. After all, his soul power was so lacking that he needed its protection.

Devil Phantom!

The White Nightmare grabbed Chu Mu and used Devil Phantom. Its body transformed into a series of illusions and it quickly fell 100

meters down the shattered mountain!!

“Beng!!!!!!”

The moment Chu Mu and the White Nightmare retreated, that part of the mountain was blasted apart. A black fog appeared and circled around the enormous hole. This was the eighth phase Ghost King’s second attack from a thousand meters up!

Give up. Chu Mu had no choice but to right now give up obtaining the Ghost King which he wanted the most. He had to instantly leave this place.

Chu Mu lifted his head and watched the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King. As the Ghost King grew further away, that emotion of Chu Mu’s became even stronger. He hated that his strength wasn’t a bit stronger that he couldn’t capture the fifth phase Ghost King in an arrogant manner after fighting a great battle with the Heavenly Crystal Peak’s Ghost King...

However, he couldn’t do that right now. That eighth phase Ghost King’s strength was too tyrannic!

“Mo Xie, let’s go.” Chu Mu used soul remembrance to speak to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie had continued to run and fight against three Sturdy Rock Generals. With her strength and if her fighting strength was full, it probably wasn’t an issue to deal with two Sturdy Rock Generals.

However, in the current situation, she could only run and fight, and was unable to actually kill them.

“Wu wu wu wu~~~~~~’

Mo xie let out a string of Nine Tailed Fox cries. After Chu Mu’s order, she jumped a few times and maintained a certain distance with those three Sturdy Rock Generals.

As her silver eyes looked down, Mo Xie was planning on using Flame Dance to leave the battlefield when she happened to see Chu Mu’s pair of depressed eyes…

“Wu wu wu~~~~” suddenly, Mo Xie gave up on retreating. Her two silver pupils were completely fixated on the fifth phase Ghost King hiding behind the Sturdy Rock Generals!

Chapter 206: Take A Risk, Gliding on Heavenly Crystal Peak

“Mo Xie!” Chu Mu was startled. HE looked with shock at Mo Xie, who had jumped back onto the battlefield.

Chu Mu’s spirit was connected with Mo Xie’s, and he naturally knew what she was going to do. Presently, the eighth phase Ghost King was above them, and its attacks were hard to defend against. With only a slight bit of incautiousness, one could lose his or her life. Even if Chu Mu didn’t want the Ghost King, he absolutely would not have Mo Xie go and take a risk.

Mo Xie didn’t listen to Chu Mu’s order. Her nine long silver tails were like curled up clouds smoothing out. Her gorgeous silver body strangely appeared behind the Sturdy Rock General!

The three Sturdy Rock Generals had believed that Mo Xie wanted to flee, and they hadn’t expected this Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox to suddenly return. Their reaction, with their inherently slow movements, were half a beat slow and they couldn’t keep up.

Mo Xie’s silver body streaked past in between the three Sturdy Rock Generals and instantly appeared in front of the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King!

Evil Stare!

Mo Xie's silver pupils released light, and the intense mental wave surged into the Ghost King's mental world!

Its mind had already suffered from Chu Mu's pressure earlier and now facing Mo Xie's mental control, a bit of chaos immediately surfaced in its consciousness!

Illusion!!

Mo Xie ran at full speed. Her silver body unexpectedly transformed into five illusions, and she pounced at the Ghost King, taking advantage of its absent mindedness!

Chu Mu lifted his head, and watched Mo Xie's five illusions as a shocked expression appeared on his face.

Mo Xie's Illusion technique increased by another realm, and she surprisingly was able to split into five figures!

Mo Xie's Illusion technique possessed an attacking property, and if she split into five illusions, it meant that her Royal Flame Claw attack damage would increase as well as her dodging ability!

"Wuwuwuwu~~~~~"

Nine Tail Long Cry, crying like an infant, the silver moonlight washed over her body, further accentuating Mo Xie's Nine Tail Inferno Fox honor and arrogance!

Moon Essence!

The moonlight's effects caused Mo Xie's strength to instantaneously climb to the seventh phase, and her nine gorgeous tails were like silver white ocean waves that whirled around. The fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King also didn't do anything in defense. Since it hadn't used any techniques, it was fully swept up by Mo Xie's tails!

The fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King's body reached nearly four meters, and its weight was even more shocking. However, compared to the nine tail strength of a seventh phase Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox, it was nothing. Mo Xie's nine silver long tails became incomparably flexible as they danced about. Carrying the Ghost King, she jumped towards the ground of the mountain peak!

The Ghost King's body was completely binded, and its strength filled body was unable to break free of Mo Xie's nine long flexible tails. It was forcibly pulled off the mountain peak!

Mo Xie's action was extremely sudden, and during the entire process, her actions were so smooth and fast that Chu Mu hadn't even registered that she would take such a risk. Moreover, those three obstructing Sturdy Rock Generals and the eighth phase Ghost King looking down only watched the completion of this sudden attack!

Silver colored moonlight spilled onto the mountain peak's walls,

and the free and easy Mo Xie used her nine tails to drag the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King. She further charged down the mountain without looking back. Her body was completely like it had fallen down, and her silver fur blew back against the wind!

“Wu wu wu wu~~~~~:

Mo Xie let out a series of shouts towards Chu Mu, telling him to quickly run!

Chu Mu was stunned, and when he raised his head, he terrifyingly discovered that the Heavenly Crystal Peak’s lord was clutching its curved sword as it jumped down from a thousand meters up. Its enormous figure happened to shroud over him and the White Nightmares’ head!

“White Nightmare, let’s go!”

Chu Mu obviously knew what would happen next, and he didn’t dare to stay any longer. He had the White Nightmare bring him away!

Chu Mu presently had no more soul power, and fundamentally couldn’t transform into a half devil. Moreover, after he had used the half devil transformation not too long ago in the Great Chu Family, Old Li had seriously warned that he couldn’t transform into a half devil otherwise his soul would be seriously injured.

“Nong nong nong~~~~~”

A terrifying roar penetrated the mist coiling around the mountain peak. It pressed down layer after layer, and as Chu Mu watched the black figure of grandeur and majesty, his heart began beating even more violently...

The White Nightmare grabbed Chu Mu, and jumped right off the mountain rampart. The bitingly cold gale swatted against Chu Mu's body, forming a whistling effect in his ears.

"Nong Nong Nong Nong~~~~~~~~"

Incomparably angry roars rang out once again. This time, the voice seemed to be transmitting an order, unexpectedly causing the entire Heavenly Crystal Peak to erupt in chaos!!

"Huo!!!!"

"Hou hou!!!!!"

"Ao!!!!!!"

"Si!!!!!!!"

When the voice of the Heavenly Crystal Peak's monarch reverberated, countless roars of soul pets suddenly rang out from within the several thousand meters of Heavenly Crystal Peak. The voices resounded amidst the boundless mountain range, and it was

a long time before they settled!

The angry roars lingered on. Feeling that every soul pet had been roused by this eighth phase Ghost King, Chu Mu felt a great catastrophe was imminent! For a moment, he didn't know where to flee.

"White Nightmare, you lead the way!" Chu Mu jumped onto Mo Xie's body and spoke to the White Nightmare.

Having already fully enraged the Ghost King, and since he had already kidnapped the fifth phase Ghost King, Chu Mu's only option really was to take this risk!

"Mo Xie, Flame Dance in the sky!"

The hardest thing to deal with in the entire Heavenly Crystal Peak was that eighth phase Ghost King; however, it didn't have the ability to fly. If they continued descending the mountain peak, they would be caught by the Ghost King eventually. Right now, they could only flee in the sky!

Mo Xie used Flame Dance and as she fell, she ran off the mountain. Like a silver shooting star, she descended diagonally downwards into the vast mountain range!

The Heavenly Crystal Peak was a habitat to many soul pet groups that could fly. When Mo Xie stepped into the air, she was instantly locked onto by a large group of Meteor Birds.

“Yi!!!!! Yi!!!!!!”

“Yi!!!!!! Yi!!!!!!!!!!!”

Their voices were like thunder. The Meteor Birds’ flying ability were inferior to other wing type soul pets, but when a large group of them flew together, it was as if individual rocks had congregated to form a large mountain and were moving in their direction. This sort of heavy pressure could cause the heart of a coward to shatter!

“Nie~~ Nie~~~~~~”

When the White Nightmare saw a large group of black and oppressive Meteor Birds flying at them, it let out a panicked shout. The White Nightmare often looked down on a few powerful soul pets, but if it encountered a group of soul pets that numbered so many they were hard to count, it lacked even the slightest bit of willpower to fight.

Even disregarding the White Nightmare, when Chu Mu saw the hundreds upon thousands of Meteor Birds flying at him, he could only continue to bitterly laugh. He didn’t know whether Mo Xie’s risk was worth it or not.

Of course, since Mo Xie had already stolen the Ghost King, Chu Mu had nothing to say. Right now, the most pressing thing was to flee this place.

.....

The sky was high above and the land was vast. The curtain of darkness was adorned with stars and magnificent silver moon hung in the sky, casting a silver radiance onto the pitch-black Colored Sky Mountain Range...

Under the night sky filled with stars, two different colored balls of flame pulled along incomparably gorgeous long tails in the air. When they streaked across the pitch-black curtain of darkness, they were like two shooting stars shining most brightly-elegant and diverse...

Heavenly Mountain Peak was bordered against hills that were still considered relatively flat. Right now it was unhurried, yet its speed was faster than Mo Xie and as it ran, it still spoke a slew of nonsense to Chu Mu.

Chapter 207: Monarch's Soul Scaring Chase

"Beng!!! Beng!!! Beng!!!!!!"

The ground started shaking along with the running of the Ghost King. The Ghost King couldn't fly, so it kept falling along the mountain side. When Chu Mu and his soul pets landed on the ground, the Ghost King also landed at the feet of the mountain.

Each step was full of power as it stepped forward. The eighth phase Ghost King was completely covered in Dark Rock Crystal.

The Ghost King was the owner of the entire Heavenly Crystal Mountain. When it appeared at the bottom of the mountain, immediately, thousands of soul pets that lived around the area came alive. The noisy clamor symphonically joined in the chaotic night, vibrating throughout the mountains!

Tens of thousands of soul pets gathered in an army and, with a tsunami-like rock slide, ran towards Chu Mu.

Behind them, it was as if the entire ground had collapsed. The massive rocks were like sand as they covered the skies. When they fell, they would destroy huge patches of the rock forest, full of destructive power.

Chu Mu naturally felt the countless soul pets covering the skies from behind. At this moment, Chu Mu finally realized why many soul pet trainers had reached spirit master, yet never had a monarch ranked soul pet.

A capturable monarch ranked soul pet was often protected by the overlord of a region. If one wanted to capture such soul pets, it would definitely enrage the overlord, and this overlord's rage often could mobilize tens of thousands of soul pet groups. Such a soul pet army's power wasn't something anyone could stop.

Chu Mu was already ready to give up, but Mo Xie's personality was even more stubborn than Chu Mu, ending up accidentally causing this much commotion. What was fortunate was the effects of the moonlight made Mo Xie's fighting strength recover somewhat, enabling her to use her speed to play a game of tag with the large crowd of soul pets, or else the danger factor would indeed be even greater.

……

Riding her Purple Robed Dream Beast, Ye Qingzi's little face was also pale. She originally thought that the eight hundred Crafty Rock Guards and the Sturdy Rock Guard were already an obstruction, but he didn't think that Chu Mu would pull out such a large crowd of soul pets. The danger factor was definitely not lower than the Heavenly Devil Insects that they encountered at Great Chu Family.

Ye Qingzi's Purple Robed Dream Beast had been strengthened, and it had already reached the seventh phase fourth stage. Having been trained with nomadic blood, this Purple Robed Dream Beast's speed wasn't slow either, barely able to keep the soul pets behind from catching up.

Qing Li, who had escaped previously, was currently running away in this cold mountain on his Purple Lightning Devil, who was almost unable to endure it anymore. When he turned around and found that almost the entire Heavenly Crystal Mountain was covered in yellow rock dust, he started trembling with fear as he spurred his Purple Lightning Devil on with all his might, wishing that it was faster.

……

The mountains and earth moved. The Heavenly Crystal Mountain's storm appeared, causing nearby mountains all to start a commotion. Countless elemental soul pets had become tactless as the army of soul pets rolled out. Weaker soul pet clans had even started migrating elsewhere. Scattered soul pets all hid in their caves, not daring to wander around outside.

On a mountain five kilometers to the south of the Heavenly Crystal Mountain, a group of training soul pet trainers stood at the mountain top and looked towards the position of the Heavenly Crystal Peak.

"What happened there?" A middle aged soul pet trainer opened his mouth to ask.

"I don't know, I think a soul pet army went berserk." A rather young man watched the faraway mountain and said.

"Nonsense, how could the Heavenly Crystal Mountain fall, let me see." The slightly older female soul pet trainer was the sister of the

young man, and she chastised the young man for speaking nonsense.

This female soul pet trainer often walked around this region. Though she had never walked into the range of the Heavenly Crystal Mountain, she more or less knew about the Mountain. Places like the Heavenly Crystal Mountain always had a super powerful monarch rank being, so it wasn't possible for soul pet outbreaks to happen. After all, not many dared to truly anger the owner of the Heavenly Crystal Mountain.

Walking to the mountain top, the female soul pet trainer casted her vision soul technique and looked over towards the Heavenly Crystal Mountain.

A huge yellow cloud covered the distant skies, blocking off the stars and moon and enveloped the ground. In the dark fogginess, one could vaguely see countless organisms running along the territory outside the Heavenly Crystal Peak.

In front of the endless soul pet army, a black shadow was stepping upon the shorter mountains, continuously jumping. Each jump was nearly 100 meters in length. From this distance, it was still shocking to see. It was completely unstoppable!

Seeing this scene, the female soul pet trainer immediately sucked in a breath. From what she saw, the soul pet that was shattering shorter mountains with its running looked very like the two sculptures beside the doors of the Colored Sky Mountain. What stood out the most was the curved sword full of the power of rock crystal!

“What’s wrong?” The middle aged man seemed to be the leader of this team. He didn’t have any soul technique to look far out, so he could only open his mouth and ask the female soul pet trainer.

The female soul pet trainer retracted her soul technique, yet her heart couldn’t calm for a long time. Only when the leader asked a second time did she say slightly dazed, “I think..... I think someone lured out the monarch of Heavenly Crystal Mountain out.....”

“Heavenly Crystal Mountain owner? How is that possible. Not to say the monarch’s power, merely the endless soul pets of Heavenly Crystal Mountain is something that no one normal could deal with.” The middle aged man immediately shook his head, displaying doubt.

“I also saw three soul pet trainers ahead of the Heavenly Crystal Mountain monarch.....”

.....

.....

An entire night, the mountains east of the Heavenly Crystal Peak were ravaged by the soul pet army. The terrifying soul pet rampage destroyed countless mountains and spanned over ten kilometers, causing this span of the Colored Sky Mountain to become a chaotic mess, as if armageddon had arrived.

The entire night, Chu Mu's Mo Xie and Night Thunder Dream Beast had surpassed their normal range and invoked their greatest potential, racing with the eighth phase monarch that was the reaper incarnate. Along the way, short mountains collapsed, caves caved in, and the ground cracked open. Such a frightening escape was Chu Mu's first experience as well.

Ye Qingzi, being affected by Chu Mu, also ran haggardly along. Along the way, she also switched between the two fastest soul pets Purple Robed Dream Beast and War Court Black Beast. Many times, she had to again widen the gap under terrifying sword blows from the Ghost King……

……

……

The morning light came. A ray of sunlight fell slanted on the rolling mountains of Colored Sky Mountain, perfectly giving the grounds that extend hundreds of kilometers out some color, revealing the disfigured and completely disordered battlefield……

East of the mountains was a waterway that flowed from a high mountain towards Colored Sky Mountain. This waterway was sometimes thin as a small stream, sometimes thick as a river entering into the ocean, and sometimes rapidly descending, creating a milky way like waterfall!

Under the waterfall-like waterway, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi sat on

the shallow beach with faces full of dirt.

Chu Mu's clothes were tattered, and had many thin cuts, as well as a lot of blood stains.

Ye Qingzi's jet black hair was stuck with sand. Her white and full face was also marked with many small stains. Her mouth was slightly open as she gasped tenderly……

Behind Chu Mu, the reckless Mo Xie laid on a smooth rock, completely spent. Her almond eyes were closed, yet her nine long tails still held a four meter tall formidable soul pet covered in Dark Sturdy Rock.

"Will Old Li lose track of us?" After taking quite a few breaths, Ye Qingzi finally opened her mouth to ask.

Ye Qingzi still had lingering fears in her heart. After all, Chu Mu and her were chased by an eighth phase Ghost King for an entire night. The entire night, both of them didn't rest.

"It won't happen." Chu Mu shook her head. Old Li's speed and hiding abilities were even stronger than Mo Xie's, so how could he lose track of Qing Li?

"Qing Li's Purple Lightning Devil was wounded. Though he escaped the rampage of the Heavenly Crystal Mountain army, to reach the Colored Sky City will require a few more days. We just have to reach Colored Sky City before him." Chu Mu said.

The Ghost King went completely for Chu Mu. After all, it was Chu Mu that stole away the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King. Qing Li had realized this, and escaped the apocalyptic onslaught of the army.

“You really are brave.” Ye Qingzi turned around to look at the Ghost King tightly bounded by Mo Xie and said lightly.

Chu Mu could only laugh bitterly and look at Mo Xie, who was sleeping soundly.

Chu Mu had planned on giving up the Ghost King precisely because he knew it was the territory of the Ghost King. If they angered him, such a terrifying scene would definitely occur……

“This is a seventh rank soul power medicine that can increase your soul power recovery speed by about 50%. Take it and quickly sign a contract with that Ghost King so we can head towards Colored Sky City.” Ye Qingzi handed Chu Mu a small bottle and said.

“Soul power recovery medicine?” Chu Mu looked at the blue liquid Ye Qingzi handed over and looked surprised.

Chu Mu knew of recovery medicines for stamina, mental power, wounds, status ailments, etc., but this was the first time that he had heard of soul power recovery medicine.

During a battle, every soul technique a soul pet trainer casted needed great planning, because once he/she ran out of soul power, he/she wouldn't be able to switch soul pets.

This meant that soul power was very important in a fight. Among countless medicines, only the medicine that increased soul power recovery was very rare.

So, when Ye Qingzi said soul power recovery medicine, Chu Mu naturally would've felt that it was strange.

"This is a soul power medicine that only my teacher and a few other soul teachers have the recipe to. The side effect is, the more you use it, the weaker it gets. It is mostly for those who haven't had it before and need it for emergencies. You can use it at ease. If you feel it is unnecessary, you can also refuse to drink it." Ye Qingzi saw that Chu Mu hesitated and said lightly.

"I wasn't suspecting you, I just didn't think that you could concoct such precious medicine." Chu Mu understood the meaning behind Ye Qingzi's words and quickly explained.

Chapter 208: Capture War, the Battle with Ghost King (1)

Chu Mu of course believed Ye Qingzi, but he did ponder a question.

A soul pet trainers' soul power was always very limited and precious. If there was a soul power recovery medicine on the market, there still were many people who were willing to spend fortunes to buy it.

Just like when facing the Ghost King previously, if he still had soul power left, Chu Mu would without hesitation merged with the White Nightmare again and become a half devil. That way, they might have had a better chance and wouldn't have been put in such a difficult situation.

Under that situation, even if one soul power recovery medicine was 40,000 gold coins, Chu Mu would still buy one in a heartbeat……

If even Chu Mu, a soul pet trainer tight on money, was willing to spend this much on one bottle, then it went without saying how much wealthy people of the soul pet world were willing to pay for it.

Combined with what Ye Qingzi said before, it was clear that there were only a few people that knew how to make this soul power medicine. That meant that, for those who could make it, they could ask for sky-high prices and earn huge profits on soul power

recovery medicines.

“You always have the same expression no matter what you do……” Ye Qingzi rolled her eyes at Chu Mu and said.

Ye Qingzi’s words made Chu Mu embarrassed, and at a loss of words as to how to explain himself. He previously wanted to ask more about this soul power recovery medicine, but now that he thought of it, even if he asked, Ye Qingzi wouldn’t say.

Indeed, when Chu Mu closed his eyes and entered meditation, he could clearly feel his soul power recovering 50% faster than usual.

Chu Mu knew that such a medicine could be considered treasure. And Ye Qingzi, who could concoct this medicine, was even more so a unique entity amongst soul teachers.

Usually, Chu Mu needed two nights of meditation to recover from complete exhaustion of soul power to full. Meditating from dawn to midnight barely counted as one night of meditation. With Chu Mu’s normal recovery speed, that would recover around 40% of his soul power.

Yet, after eating Ye Qingzi’s medicine, Chu Mu recovered 60% of his soul power!

With Chu Mu’s current situation, every soul pet he summoned costed about 10% of his soul power. A seventh rank soul techniques needed about 10%, and the last 20% was key: after all, no matter if

it was used to switch out a soul pet or cast a soul technique whose power could overlay to over eighth rank, it could decide a battle.

Once he recovered sixty percent of his soul power, Chu Mu's heart started pounding, because before him was a monarch ranked soul master in front of him!

"Wuwuwuwuwu~~~~~~~"

Mo Xie saw Chu Mu walk over and opened her long eyes, letting out a tiny call to Chu Mu.

"Mo Xie, you can let it go." Chu Mu said to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie turned around questioningly at the Ghost King, who has long since awoken and seemed to be worried. Though the Ghost King was only at fifth phase eighth stage, its fighting power wasn't weak. If she just let it go like this, the Ghost King might revolt.

"Don't worry, I can deal with it." Chu Mu patted Mo Xie's head.

Mo Xie shook her long tail and then finally, gradually retracted her nine long tails that bundled up the Ghost King.

The Ghost King's body size could change. Under non-battle situations, its body size was about that of an adult. It looked like a general with a suit of dark ghost battle armor. Just standing there, it still emanated a ghost-like cold aura!

“Nong!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The moment Mo Xie loosened her tails, the Ghost King suddenly stood up. Its dark colored body actually started burning with a dismal ghost fire, and its body grew four meters tall. The curved sword in its arms even started burning with ghost type energy!

The angry ghost type aura started emanating, and the freed Ghost King seemed to want to let out all its fury. Waving its curved sword around, it wanted to cleave Chu Mu heavily!

“Nie!!!!!!!!!”

A devil call suddenly sounded. The white devil that always roamed nearby had unknowingly appeared behind the Ghost King and, seeing that the Ghost King wanted to attack Chu Mu, its two hands strangely submerged into the Ghost King’s body and grabbed on as it yanked hard, pulling the Ghost King onto the ground.

“Nie!!!!!!!!!!”

The White Nightmare’s temperament was mischievous. If he couldn’t fight the eighth phase Ghost King, couldn’t he bully this little Ghost King instead?

After taking down the Ghost King, the white devil directly stepped onto the Ghost King’s head and, sweeping its white

demonic devil flames over, it put out all the angry ghost fire on the Ghost King!

The burning ghost fire on Ghost King wasn't fire type, but instead a fire-like state of a ghost type's resentment. This ghost fire was still of the ghost type.

In reality, the White Nightmare's soul devil flames wasn't completely fire type either. Its only fire type was its weak burning power. The truly powerful part was the soul devil flames that were able to burn the soul. This soul devil flame came from the mysterious power of the Other Type, definitely making it stronger than the ghost fire.

So, no matter how much the Ghost King burned its resentment, the ghost fires it emitted was completely useless against the White Nightmare's soul devil flames.

"Alright, white devil, go play somewhere else." Chu Mu saw that the white devil wanted to show off its strength even further and commanded it to go away.

The white devil naturally found that boring. It slowly floated beside the still drowsy Mo Xie and, as if deliberately provoking her, it patted Mo Xie's head and then quickly floated far away.

Mo Xie ignored the mentally challenged white devil, and lifted her ears up as she gazed at the Ghost King, wondering if Chu Mu could successfully capture it.

The white devil truly was trying to find trouble. Seeing that Mo Xie didn't pay attention to it, it casted Displacement Specter and appeared behind Mo Xie. It used its hand to pull on Mo Xie's tail and let out a string of naughty laughters……

Mo Xie opened her mouth and bared her sharp teeth. With a swipe of her nine tails, she tried to smack the annoying white devil away.

The white devil was already prepared, casting Displacement Specter again to dodge Mo Xie's nine tails. It again ran far away and pointed at Mo Xie as it laughed with a string of "Jie"s……

Mo Xie was too lazy to bother with the bored white devil. Her body started burning with royal flames, and as they darted up, Mo Xie's body slowly shrunk, finally becoming a mini nine tailed inferno fox. She leapt lightly onto Chu Mu's shoulder and her silver eyes fell upon the Ghost King.

The Ghost King already got up from the ground. It seemed to know that it wasn't match for the two monarch rank soul pets beside Chu Mu, so its body shape had already recovered to its previous two meter tall stature. Its ghost pupils stared angrily at Chu Mu.

A soul pact incantation was slowly chanted, and Chu Mu started a soul pact with the Ghost King. The azure halo slowly started to form and shroud around the Ghost King.

The azure halo stayed motionless around the Ghost King. The

Ghost King didn't show any signs of struggle or resistance, but it simply stomped its feet, and the soul pact halo that Chu Mu casted shattered like a mirror.

Unbelievably arrogant, this Ghost King seemed to not want to yield to Chu Mu!

Chu Mu wasn't hurried. He looked at the Ghost King and slowly opened his mouth, "Fifth phase eighth stage, yet still under someone else's protection, guarding the Heavenly Crystal Mountain-truly laughable."

Monarch rank soul pets already had very high intelligences. With this sentence from Chu Mu, the Ghost King immediately became furious, its two ghost pupils becoming abyssal long swords as they pierced into Chu Mu's mental world.

How would Chu Mu be afraid of such an attack? Under the protection of soul remembrance, he easily blocked off this Ghost King's mental attack.

Smiling, Chu Mu continued.

"Statically guarding the Heavenly Crystal Mountain won't increase your power. Just like last night, that old Ghost King. If he truly was master of the Colored Sky Mountains, he wouldn't let you get stolen by me. Neither would he have to stop once he got to other people's territories and just watch as you were stolen."

“Even if last night didn’t happen, many years later, when you inherit Heavenly Crystal Peak and have offspring, others will barge in and then, it would be your turn as you watch your offspring get stolen……”

“A real Ghost King should hold their monarch sword and traverse the world and not stay at a mountain that seems majestic but is actually easily collapsed, watch over a narrow piece of territory, and stay stubborn!”

The Ghost King definitely understood Chu Mu’s words, and Chu Mu could see that his words seemed to have touched the Ghost King’s heart.

Chu Mu previously had done some research. Monarch ranked soul pets usually leave their elders at the sixth phase and lived independently, finding their own territory to take over.

Ghost Kings were territorial soul pets. The fifth phase eighth stage was when the Ghost King and other monarch ranksed soul pets truly had to face a cruel battle phase. Because, once they reached sixth phase, the old Ghost King would drive them out of their original territory to train and conquer……

“I don’t know how long you’ve stayed in the Heavenly Crystal Mountain, but I’m sure that you’re definitely much older than my White Nightmare and my Royal Flame Nine Tailed Inferno Fox. Same monarch ranks, but your power is much weaker. No matter if you stay in Heavenly Crystal Peak or fight yourself, you will forever be a normal monarch rank.”

“If you sign a soul pact with me, I can make you much stronger than that old Ghost King. And, if you think you’re strong enough and want to establish your own territory, you can leave whenever you want, I will never stop you.” Chu Mu said seriously.

Monarch rank soul pets definitely wouldn’t sign soul pacts as easily as normal soul pets. Especially fifth phase eighth stage monarch ranks. Chu Mu had to shake the Ghost King’s heart!

“Nong!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The Ghost King let out a roar and pointed its curved sword straight at Chu Mu, its eyes watching him!

Ye Qingzi stood beside as she watched how Chu Mu captured the Ghost King. When the Ghost King let out a roar, Ye Qingzi looked very surprised.

This action of the Ghost King clearly meant it wanted to have a battle against Chu Mu!!

Chapter 209: Capture War, the Battle with Ghost King (2)

“Ok, I’ll fight you!” bluntly responded Chu Mu. His two black eyes stared at the Ghost King, and his pupils emitted an intense fighting intent!

“Out of the question. That’s too dangerous!” Ye Qingzi immediately shook her head.

If it was against another soul pet, Ye Qingzi felt that with Chu Mu’s strength, he should be able to easily deal with it, even without soul pets. However, Chu Mu was facing a monarch ranked Ghost King. This monarch rank soul pet’s fighting strength was inherently powerful and moreover, it was an extremely strong soul pet among monarchs. Fighting against it alone, Chu Mu fundamentally didn’t have much of a chance of winning.

“If I don’t do this, then he won’t submit. Don’t worry, I can deal with it.” Chu Mu looked at Ye Qingzi and spoke to her.

“But what if you get injured?” anxiously said Ye Qingzi. Every soul pet trainer had to deal with his or her safety first. If something unexpected happened to the soul pet trainer, the other soul pets could be easily broken through, and their fighting strength would greatly fall.

“Aren’t you also here?” a smile rose on Chu Mu’s face. His smile was brash and confident, further carrying a bit of arrogance. It seemed that Chu Mu really planned on using his own strength to

fight the Ghost King!

The Ghost King brandished its curved sword, and it coldly stared at Chu Mu. It had already adopted its stance, and it was like a warrior that held extreme respect for the rules of fights as it waited for Chu Mu to make the final decision.

Chu Mu had Mo Xie watch on the side as he walked towards the Ghost King. He stood five meters away from it...

“Jie jie~~~~”

The White Nightmare saw that Chu Mu was going to fight the Ghost King, and it slowly floated over from far away. It seemed to have already prepared to fuse with Chu Mu’s soul; after all, without the half devil transformation, Chu Mu’s fighting strength was extremely limited. It would be very difficult to defeat the exceptionally high defense of the Ghost King.

“There’s no need. Just watch on the sidelines.” Chu Mu shook his head and had the White Nightmare and Mo Xie go to the side.

The White Nightmare let out an expression of confusion, but since Chu Mu had made this decision, it didn’t say anything. It floated next to Mo Xie and silently stood there, wanting to see exactly how Chu Mu would defeat this Ghost King.

Ye Qingzi lightly bit her pink lips as she stood to the side. Her pair of beautiful eyes watched Chu Mu uneasily.

Ye Qingzi knew that once a soul pet trainer's strength had reached a certain realm, even without a soul pet, they would possess a definite amount of fighting strength. Moreover, even some first-rate soul pet trainers could use soul techniques that had the might of a ninth rank technique. Thus, they could absolutely instakill an even stronger soul pet.

However, the majority of soul pet trainers were limited by their soul power and themselves. Regardless of defense, strength, or speed, they were unable to reach the level of a soul pet. Most soul pet trainers seized advantages, and released soul techniques at crucial moments. There weren't soul pet trainers who would directly face off against soul pets.

Chu Mu's actions were clearly in order to subdue the Ghost King. However, Ye Qingzi had never seen a soul pet trainer personally fight to subdue a soul pet, fighting against a Ghost King alone.

"Let's begin!"

Chu Mu was full of confidence as he spoke to the Ghost King.

The Ghost King wasn't courteous either, and the curved sword in its right hand suddenly condensed a ball of dark black ghost aura. The ghost aura climbed up the curved part of the sword. As the Ghost King let out an imposingly loud shout, the long sword abruptly chopped towards Chu Mu!!

As a soul pet trainer, an essential component of a fight was to be

able to instantaneously clearly see the enemy's attack. Only by doing so could the soul pet trainer let his or her soul pet adopt the proper countermeasures.

This time, Chu Mu wasn't instructing a soul pet to adopt a certain movement; rather, it was himself who was reacting!!

Chu Mu also had dodging abilities, but they couldn't compare with Mo Xie's. Especially that curve sword attack that had completely locked onto him, it wasn't as simple as a few jumps to dodge it.

"Chong Mei – Illusion!"

The incantation was instantaneously completed, and Chu Mu's body promptly became illusory. Gradually, five Chu Mu figures appeared!

"Long long long long~~~~"

The Ghost Hunt Sword transformed into a terrifying Ghost Hunt that opened its sinister mouth and suddenly devoured three Chu Mu illusions. A large portion of the pond further disappeared, forming a long gulch that extended over fifty meters away.

"Wu wu wu wu~~~"

Seeing Chu Mu imitate her technique and dodge with illusions, Mo Xie immediately let out an excited shout. Her nine small tails

adorably waved about as she seemed to be cheering on Chu Mu.

The illusions disappeared, and Chu Mu quickly chanted again. As the Ghost King lifted its sword again, he rapidly completed the second technique!

“Violent Blood Pupil!”

His two eyes began to transform and his body was draped by gorgeous blood colored battle clothing. This battle clothing dyed Chu Mu’s body fully in red. It was as if he had bathed in a captivating red blood, giving others a feeling of imposing demonism.

The White Nightmare emulated Chu Mu’s physical form and its appearance looked like a Chu Mu that was burning from head to toe in white demonic devil flames. From time to time, its face would show a devil-like face.

As Violent Blood Pupil descended on Chu Mu’s body, Chu Mu looked like a red colored Nightmare. His spirit master aura was fully discharged and he unexpectedly was exhibiting a grandeur even more powerful than soul pets!

“That’s strange, can’t Violent Blood Pupil only be used on beast type soul pets?” Ye Qingzi’s beautiful pupils stared at Chu Mu, who could inherit Violent Blood Pupil’s effects and her face let out a somewhat confused expression.

Violent Blood Pupil could only stimulate the beast type blood flowing in a soul pet. A soul pet trainer could use any attribute of soul technique, but this didn't represent that a soul pet trainer possessed beast type blood lineage and thus shouldn't be able to use Violent Blood Pupil's force.

Ultimately, Ye Qingzi could only conclude that Chu Mu was completely messing around recklessly!

"Nong!!!!"

Monarch Trample!!

The Ghost King gave a roar as its head was pointed at the air. Its right leg fiercely stamped on the ground, creating a terrifying crushing force that proliferated ten meters in every direction!!

Chu Mu had already completed Violent Blood Pupil's strengthening. His two legs bent down and then he abruptly jumped up, unexpectedly leaping over ten meters high!

His two hands climbed a tree branch extending from the stone wall. Using the tree branch as a spring, he nimbly jumped onto a tree branch growing out from a stone crevice. Then, from high above, he looked down on the Ghost King.

"How is that possible..." seeing Chu Mu jumped so high in one go, Ye Qingzi opened her small mouth in shock...

A soul pet trainer's strength, speed and defense definitely could not compare with soul pets. Jumping over ten meters in one go wasn't something even many sixth phase commander rank beast type soul pets could do. Yet, Chu Mu had erupted with such a shocking strength, indicating that he had truly borne the baptism of Violent Blood Pupil and possessed a certain amount of beast type strength!

Ye Qingzi could be considered to have been to many places and seen numerous soul pets and soul pet trainers. However, this was the first time she had witnessed a soul pet trainer that could bear the strengthening technique used on soul pets!

"Sou~~~~"

Chu Mu's movements were very agile, and he gave a few consecutive leaps on the mountain wall, dodging the Ghost King's three sword scars!

Fission Ghost Sword!

The Ghost King suddenly used a large ranged attack. When its curved sword chopped down, several tens of fission swords terrifyingly swept towards Chu Mu!!

Chu Mu flitted past the edge of the sword wave in a very thrilling fashion, but was thrown into the water by the sword wave's energy.

“Chong Mei – Extreme Speed!”

After chanting the incantation, Chu Mu’s speed suddenly increased by 50%. With this speed, he was able to momentarily step on the water’s surface. His feet sped up and after taking a few consecutive steps on the water, his body landed, swayingly, on the centermost stone in the pond.

“Hu~~~~”

Chu Mu let out a breath of air. The Ghost King’s attacking strength was extremely terrifying. Without Violent Blood Pupil’s effects, Chu Mu would not have the speed to dodge based solely on his body.

Turning around, Chu Mu stared at the Ghost King. His eyes dyed by the Violent Blood Pupil were still full of fighting intent!

“Nong!!!!!”

On the pond, Chu Mu had nowhere to dodge. The Ghost King clutched the sword with both hands and the ghost type and rock type energies that covered its entire body began to coil up. Unexpectedly, a slightly shaking occurred in this waterfall pond!

Clutching the sword tightly, the energy gather on the curved sword and it hacked the blade diagonally!!!

A black and brown interweaving sword energy split open an

imposing sword arc. It completely locked down Chu Mu's location and ruthlessly swept at him. Every spot it passed over, was crushed to pieces, transformed into nothingness and water would disappear from evaporation!

"Shua!!!!!!!!!!"

The waterfall rushed straight downwards and when this sword energy swept through, a diagonal gap was cut in the waterfall, severing the falling rushing water!

Pseudo eighth rank might!!

The Ghost King attack, albeit needing a long build-up time, reached the might of a pseudo eighth rank!!

Fifth phase eighth stage, yet it could exhibit the strength of a pseudo eighth rank. The talent of monarch rank soul pets were terrifying as expected!

Ye Qingzi knit her eyebrows closely, and her gaze was fixated on the waves in the pond blasted by the curved sword. She was beginning to worry for Chu Mu.

Chu Mu's sixth level soul armor's effects could barely make his defense reach the seventh rank. However, the Ghost King's attack was near the eighth rank and if he didn't dodge it, he would definitely be heavily wounded!

“Hu hu hu~~~~~~~”

A violent wind surged into the waterfall again and the wave of water once more returned to the depths of the pond with a crashing sound...

A bundle of white colored devil flames that were burning silently appeared outlandishly behind the Ghost King.

Suddenly, the devil flames flew into the air and amidst the white colored devil flames, the blood red figure of Chu Mu slowly appeared. His aura was exactly like the Nightmare, and he seemed to be like he was full of the abnormal evil of a Nightmare!

Displacement Specter!

What Chu Mu had used was the new battle technique the White Nightmare had comprehended not too long ago – Displacement Specter!

“Jie jie jie~~~~~”

Seeing Chu Mu use its technique, the White Nightmare cracked open its lips and let out a sinister laugh.

“Chong Mei – Obliterating Heart!”

Chu Mu’s hand suddenly transformed into a devil claw that was

burning with white colored devil flames. It noiselessly entered the Ghost King's body from behind.

There was no obstruction, and it was as if the devil claw had reached into empty space. Although the Obliterating Heart technique imitated by Chu Mu's Chong Mei wasn't as genuine as when he was in his half devil state, it was enough to deal with the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King!

Chapter 210: The Ghost King's Acknowledgement

Obliterating Heart which ignored defense was Chu Mu's only technique that could defeat the Ghost King.

This fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King's fighting experience was clearly lacking. Chu Mu's Obliterating Heart had already entered its internal crystallization location, and the devil claw was frighteningly clutching the Ghost King's heart!

A cold air swept through, producing frost. As Chu Mu's hand extended to the Ghost King's internal crystal, a layer of frost covered its internal crystal, causing its soul to subsequently shiver!

The Ghost King's movements were frozen in place. This monarch rank soul pet knew that its internal organ was in Chu Mu's hands. It only had to move the slightest bit, and its internal crystal would be instantly shattered.

"You've lost." an abnormally sinister smile rose on Chu Mu's face. The ruthlessness from Violent Blood Pupil slowly retreated from his scarlet red eyes, which returned to their original pure black color.

"Nong~~~~~"

The curved sword stuck in the ground, the Ghost King also knew that it had really lost this fight, losing to Chu Mu's strange

technique.

Its body stood in place, and the Ghost King gradually lifted its head. It stared at the distant Heavenly Crystal Peak standing solitarily in the distance and its gaze changed unceasingly.

Chu Mu saw that the Ghost King had given up the fight, so he released his hand. He retracted his devil claw from the back of the Ghost King's heart and retreated to the side, giving the Ghost King enough time to think.

Ye Qingzi walked over to Chu Mu. Her beautiful eyes watched him with incomparable complexity, as if she had many questions to ask.

Chu Mu possessing a soul technique that could imitate any technique of a soul pet was something Ye Qingzi knew about.

According to Ye Qingzi's estimate, Chu Mu's soul technique – Chong Mei, could imitate seventh rank and under techniques. If they were any higher, unless Chu Mu had a method of increasing this soul technique, they could not be imitated.

What made Ye Qingzi feel most shocked was that Chu Mu could bear the effects of Violent Blood Pupil.

"Why is Violent Blood Pupil effective on your body?" asked Ye Qingzi.

It could be said that Violent Blood Pupil being effective on a soul pet trainer's body was a bit contradictory to common sense.

"I don't know either. Previously I tried it in a time of crisis, and inadvertently discovered that Violent Blood Pupil could be used on my body." explained Chu Mu.

Ye Qingzi's gaze was still a bit strange. However, since Chu Mu didn't give a resolution to her question, she didn't continue asking. Presumably, Chu Mu was still hiding a few secrets that hadn't been said before.

In truth, this was the first time Chu Mu had tried using Violent Blood Pupil on his body. He himself wasn't certain if there would be any effect on his body.

Chu Mu transforming into the half-devil was predicated on the White Nightmare as a blueprint. The White Nightmare possessed many attributes, including the beast type, which had incomparably tyrannic strength and speed.

Although he hadn't been in the half devil transformation just now, Chu Mu could feel that his body had slightly changed due to the soul scorching heat. Therefore, he attempted to use Violent Blood Pupil. He never expected that it would actually increase various aspects of his abilities; this could also be regarded as as an unexpected discovery by him.

"Nong!!! Nong!!!!!!!!!"

Suddenly, the Ghost King lifted its head and let out a deafening roar towards Heavenly Crystal Peak. Its roar was mixed with its mental strength, and its voice was like a black colored hurricane that rushed towards Heavenly Crystal Peak!

Chu Mu didn't understand the Ghost King's words, but from its emotions he could guess what it roared towards Heavenly Crystal Peak and a smile rose on his face.

Finally, the Ghost King turned around, and its ghost pupils under the double armor stared at Chu Mu. It slowly raised and put its two hands one over the other on the curved sword handle on the ground. Finally, its head tilted down slightly.

Chu Mu naturally understood the Ghost King's intentions. An incantation was slowly recited from his mouth, and a blue colored soul pact halo was gradually formed that enveloped the Ghost King's body.

This time, the Ghost King didn't resist at all, receiving the soul pact brand on its soul with calmness..

After connecting his spirit with the Ghost King, the soul pact halo gradually shrunk, engraving a mark on the Ghost King's forehead. Then, it slowly fused into its body, entering the depths of its soul!

The moment it entered the soul, Chu Mu could feel his connection with the Ghost King. Simultaneously, he could feel the intensity of emotions of it becoming his soul pet.

Although it was full of a plethora grumbling and resent, the Ghost King knew it wasn't this human's opponent. If it didn't submit, it would die.

Although the Ghost King didn't fear death, it didn't want to die in such a measly way. It would rather be killed amidst a fight against a myriad of soul pet corps. It absolutely refused to die at the hands of a human and his soul pets without being able to doing anything.

Acknowledgement was the Ghost King's only destiny. What Chu Mu had given the Ghost King weren't two mere choices of death or acknowledgement. Instead, he had given the Ghost King a desire to become stronger; this also happened to be the thing a monarch rank soul pet needed the most.

"Congratulations, you've obtained another monarch ranked soul pet. Other soul pet trainers will not be able to obtain this in their lifetime." Ye Qingzi faintly smiled as she spoke and stared at Chu Mu.

A smile rose on Chu Mu's face, and he looked at the Ghost King in front of him filled with aggressiveness. His heart and blood were presently burning with passion!

Not so long ago, he had even given up on his dream to become a soul pet trainer.

Now, relying on his own strength, he had captured a monarch

ranked soul pet!

A monarch rank Ghost King was something that four to five years ago, Chu Mu wouldn't have even dared thinking about. In the entire Luo Region, there weren't even a few people who had truly managed to control a monarch rank soul pet.

Yet, right now, he had already become a soul pet trainer that controlled three monarch rank soul pets. This was something that was extremely hard to obtain amongst many older generation soul pet trainers!!

The moment his confidence swelled, indistinctly, Chu Mu felt as if he heard a sentence of words as soft as the wind. This voice rang like spring water, and it was beautiful to listen to. It gave others a tranquil feeling...

Only, no matter how heavenly her voice sounded, this voice sounded, to Chu Mu, so heart breaking, shattering Chu Mu's purest heart. When he captured the Ghost King, this confidence he had felt petty and low under these words, and was gradually nearing a certain worse direction.

Ye Qingzi continued to stare at Chu Mu. She was exceptionally adept at sensing other people's emotions. She was able to capture a slight trace of something complicated in Chu Mu's excited eyes. This determinedness was hidden in a most deep place, and it seemed like there was something in his heart that he had to do...

"What's the matter?" Chu Mu adjusted his mind. Carrying a bit

of a smile, he stared at Ye Qingzi as he asked a question.

Ye Qingzi's cheeks went red. She had originally wanted to guess Chu Mu's inner thoughts, yet who would have expected him to recover so quickly. Moreover, he was now looking at her with a slightly flirtatious expression...

"Nothing. You obtained the Ghost King, so you should be completely confident and happy. But, I felt that many other things are hidden in your heart..." Ye Qingzi was also a calm and collected person. The embarrassment on her face quickly subsided and when Chu Mu asked her something, she responded with normal emotions.

Chu Mu laughed as he looked at the Ghost King. His gaze then fell on Ye Qingzi's body.

"Didn't you asked me before how I lost a soul?" gradually said Chu Mu. There weren't many people that deserved Chu Mu's full trust. However, at least Ye Qingzi was one of these people.

Ye Qingzi raised her delicate eyebrows and was somewhat surprised that Chu Mu would raise this matter.

In her opinion, losing a soul was something that people really did not want to recollect. With Chu Mu's character, it was impossible for him to so easily discuss this with other people. Moreover, if it was him that raised this issue, it meant that this person had fully obtained his trust.

Although this didn't mean that this man had some special feelings for her, if she could be trusted by this cold, wise and calm man, this could be considered a large honor.

"That was my first soul pet; she defected. The sentence she spoke to me was an extreme blow to my confidence. I don't know whether she was a commander rank, monarch rank, an emperor rank, or an even higher rank, but I know that her evolution speed was so fast others could not imagine it..." said Chu Mu.

"You unceasingly improve yourself because of her? You unceasingly become stronger so that one day you will be able to prove to her that you aren't small and weak as she believed you to be?" asked Ye Qingzi as she looked at Chu Mu's eyes.

Chu Mu wore a faint smile as he shook his head and said: "This isn't the full reason why I train myself. Understanding soul pets, controlling soul pets, capturing soul pets and searching for soul pets is inherently the life I want the most. Becoming the strongest soul pet trainer is my conviction, and this conviction will not change because of those who betray or boost me up."

Conviction was almighty.

Chu Mu didn't feel that he had excessive talent or luck that far surpassed normal people. To Chu Mu, the only thing that made him truly feel the heavens were thinking fondly of him was Mo Xie's arrival.

Furthermore, if Chu Mu had been devastated by a defector soul

pet, his soul would have been ravaged by the White Nightmare, or he had given up on his conviction, he could not have encountered Mo Xie who changed his destiny. All of this was predicated on the fact that Chu Mu had never given up on his conviction, or his determination to unceasingly grow stronger.

Ye Qingzi opened her small mouth. Every soul pet trainer had his or her own most lofty ideal. In the past, there had been many young and frivolous people who had solemnly made this vow in front of her, yet they were saying these arrogant words not predicated on reality.

Perhaps Chu Mu was only one of the likes. The more mature Ye Qingzi could use an indifferent attitude to look upon a man's hot bloodedness.

However, for some reason, Ye Qingzi felt that Chu Mu could accomplish this...

"The people that betray me will ultimately suffer punishment; I'm not a broad minded person either. I believe that if she is able to climb to the summit of soul pets and,I don't stop climbing higher, there will finally be a day when I can see her figure..." a sinister and demonic smile slowly rose on Chu Mu's face.

He wouldn't let a defector restrain him. However, Chu Mu did indeed wish to be able to see her in the future. He wanted to see her stand in front of him with a kind of incomparably shocked and flustered expression. This strange and complicated face would appear on her pure and holy face, and would definitely make Chu Mu let out an unrestrained laugh in his heart!

Chapter 211: Absolutely Better, Monarch Rank Talent

Ghost King : Elemental World – Rock type (Ghost type) – Giant species – Ghost King subspecies – Monarch rank

Covered in thick armor from top down, it had both the powerful ghost type powers as well as the incomparable power and defense from rock type. The armor on its body would also change with the Ghost King's energy crystal's changes.

Monarch Ghost Curved Sword: the Ghost King's main battle weapon, able to change as the Ghost King grew stronger. Its power was more powerful than a beast type soul pet's attacking body part, and it could be absorbed into its energy crystal to be strengthened.

Species technique – Monarch Ghost Transformation: burn all over with fire-like ghost aura, speed decrease eighty percent, power increase 100%.

Through soul communication, weren't strange, and most of them were purely power and attack as the main focus.

The Ghost King hadn't reached the sixth phase, so the techniques it held, other than the species technique Monarch Ghost Transformation

Normally speaking, a Monarch Rank's talent advantage was

measured there: without any strengthening, reaching the sixth rank, and obtaining seventh rank techniques.

This Ghost King that Chu Mu caught wasn't strengthened, and it was still at the fifth phase eighth stage, so not knowing any seventh rank techniques was normal.

Yet, monarch rank soul pets were still monarch rank soul pets. As a top tier soul pet of the Ghost types, it already knew most rock type techniques under sixth rank.

When Chu Mu caught his Ice Air Fairy, most of its techniques were at the third to fourth rank, and it was a limited few. This Ghost King had learned through its own growth most of the rock type techniques under sixth rank. Warrior rank and monarch rank techniques showed clear discrepancies.

As for power crystals, the Ghost King had already learned the advanced Dark Sturdy Rock energy crystal.

The dark sturdy rock energy crystal was like the Ice Air Fairy's Mysterious Crystal Ice Crystal, or Mo Xie's Blood Flame, and this was under the condition of not being strengthened. Once the Ghost King reached the sixth phase and Chu Mu bought some ghost type and rock type soul items to strengthen the Ghost King, when it reached the sixth phase, it should get the even more advanced crystal – Dark Crystal Rock!

Having dark crystal rock, the ghost king's battle power would greatly increase again. Even if it was only at the sixth phase, it

would be able to face things by himself!

“Seventh rank initial stage Monarch Ghost Curved Sword, seventh rank initial stage Dark Sturdy Rock, and also the attack and defense that reached seventh rank at only the fifth stage. A monarch rank soul pet’s talent truly is powerful.” Chu Mu smiled.

The Ghost King without anything was clearly more powerful than a commander rank and warrior rank soul pets. After fully equipping it, its power was even more terrifying. Knowing all about the Ghost King, Chu Mu felt that the adventure this time was very worth it.

……

“Your soul power is almost empty?” Ye Qingzi asked.

Chu Mu nodded. A soul pet trainer after all, wasn’t a soul pet. Even if Chu Mu could use soul technique Chong Mei and mimic his soul pet’s techniques, a few soul techniques used up all of the recently recovered 60% soul power. Such a direct battle against soul pets indeed couldn’t be lightly used; it was too much wasting of soul power.

Chu Mu also knew that Ye QIngzi was more worried about her brother, so he didn’t waste any longer to recover soul power and said to Ye Qingzi, “No need to rest anymore, let’s head towards Colored Sky City first.”

“En.” Ye Qingzi nodded.

Ye Qingzi, after last night’s Ghost King chase, had already recovered all her soul power. When she started an incantation, she summoned her War Court Black Beast in front of herself.

Black symbol, curled with a black and demonic aura. The War Court Black Beast didn’t have any dark type, but the demonic feel it emanated, the swift, deadly, and strange way it attacked was quite similar to Mo Xie’s.

“Is this War Court Black Beast your most powerful soul pet?” Chu Mu looked at the imposing black soul pet and asked.

Chu Mu had never seen such a soul pet before, so he could only judge by the aura that this was an abnormally powerful fighting soul pet. Even standing beside Mo Xie, its formidable wildness didn’t get reduced by much.

“En, seventh phase third stage.” Ye Qingzi saw that Chu Mu seemed interested in it, so when she jumped onto its back, she conveniently also described her main soul pet to him.

War Court Black Beast: Beast World – Beast type – War Court Black Beast species – Commander rank

War Court Black Beast, different from the ink armor covered Zhan Ye, the War Court Black Beast’s skull was covered in a soft and downwards draping black fur. Its body was tall and powerful,

full of the most primeval beast type explosive power. Its outer appearance was that of a very typical beast type soul pet, but it was also very rarely seen among beast type soul pet species.

From Chu Mu's experience, Ye Qingzi's commander rank was slightly slower than Mo Xie, but its power and defense were all higher than Mo Xie's. Its fighting strength was very likely at the monarch rank, or else it couldn't stealthily instantly kill the exposed Zhang Qin.

An Ice Fire Demon Fairy with ice type and fire type talents that have already surpassed top tier commander.

A seventh phase third stage War Court Black Beast that wasn't any weaker than a beast type monarch.

Absolute healing, a supporting eighth phase third stage strengthened water moon.

Other than that, she had the seventh phase fourth stage Purple Robed Dream Beast, sixth phase rare Dark Fire Heavenly Devil, and the precious wood type soul pet Wood Tray Spirit.

Ye Qingzi's soul pet formation wasn't weak at all. If not for the White Nightmare's presence, Chu Mu's soul pets may have quite some trouble to defeat Ye Qingzi.

……

To gain time, Chu Mu specially let Mo Xie run and reach Colored Sky City before Qing Li.

Mo Xie had truly been tired enough these days. If not for Ye Qingzi's stamina medicine sustaining her, Mo Xie would definitely be sitting in the soul pet space sleeping without being able to move an inch.

Things happened again and again, and the issue of saving Ye Wansheng was also an emergency, so Chu Mu could only trouble the less endurant Mo Xie.

……

The Colored Sky Mountain's morning sun glowed. Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi finally reached the west side gate of Colored Sky City on the third morning. From this position, they could perfectly see the entire glory of the Colored Sky Mountains.

"Old Li should be able to find you?" Ye Qingzi rode her War Court Black Beast and asked.

"Yes, but I don't know what method he uses……" Chu Mu nodded.

At the time when they split up at Great Chu Family, Old Li could mysteriously appear beside Chu Mu even thousands of miles apart.

It seemed like this demon old man should have his own special techniques.

“I heard from my teacher that there is a shameless speaking old soul pet in the soul pet world. It calls you young master again and again, are you really a soul palace young master?” Ye Qingzi asked.

“Even I don’t know. I’ve never come in touch with soul palace.” Chu Mu laughed bitterly.

“Seems so, I might have to borrow your power in the future.” Ye Qingzi smiled lightly.

“I’m quite unconventional, and I don’t like staying in any faction. You can count me lucky if I don’t piss off any faction. Under normal situations, I should be the enemy of many factions. Many people want to kill me, the nail in their eye. As long as you aren’t drawn into this by me, you should be lucky. As for borrowing my power……I really couldn’t say.” Chu Mu said unconstrained.

Mo Xie’s existence made Chu Mu not feel safe in joining any faction. Chu Mu himself also had a definite goal, following his own path down the road……

“My brother and I as well……” Ye Qingzi said it very lightly, feeling as if she wanted to let Chu Mu hear, yet didn’t……

……

“Young master, he appeared.”

The remembrance came from very far away, and Old Li was in an unknown place.

Chu Mu didn’t go looking for Old Li. Looking around, he could find a soul pet trainer riding a purple colored soul pet travel worn towards Colored Sky Mountain.

Chu Mu didn’t especially go and intercept him. After all, only when he safely returned to Elemental Sect would Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi be able to track Old Li and find Ye Wansheng’s location.

Seeing Qing Li entereing Colored Sky City, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi also rode their soul pets and kept some distance between themselves and Qing Li as they slowly walked into Colored Sky City.

“Let’s go to soul palace. The Elemental Sect people aren’t easy to deal with. Without borrowing the soul palace’s power, we can hardly compete.” Chu Mu said.

“En, can you dispatch soul palace people?” Ye Qingzi asked.

“This, probably not. But if we explain Yu Lang and Feng Ya’s situation clearly, we can get some experts to go trouble Elemental Sect.” Chu Mu said.

“Alright, you go to soul palace, I’ll stay near the Elemental Sect, just in case.” Ye Qingzi was also worried. After all, Zhang Qin was killed by Ye Qingzi, so Qing Li might release all his anger onto Ye Wansheng.

“Don’t be rash, it’s best if you wait until I call the soul palace people over.” Chu Mu said.

“Don’t worry.”

……

The Soul palace and Elemental Sect were only a main road apart. With his soul palace decree in hand, entering the soul palace was very easy for Chu Mu.

However, Chu Mu’s young master soul palace decree still brought about the same situation as the Elemental Sect before, even raising suspicion from the guards.

As a ninth level city, the Colored Sky City was famous, but it couldn’t bring people like soul palace young masters over.

The Colored Sky City soul palace members hadn’t really seen young master soul palace decrees, so naturally they were worried, going to report to the Colored Sky City soul palace palace master.

“Bring me straight to the palace master.” Chu Mu didn’t have time to wait for them to confirm. Since his identity wasn’t face, he

didn’t need to be kind to the guards. He walked right in and went straight for the great hall.

The guards looked at each other. Seeing Chu Mu full of an imposing manner, they didn’t dare to block him, and only sent three guards with Chu Mu as he entered the main hall.

Chapter 212: Conspirer, Yu He

“Such a thing had happened. Truly unfortunate, truly unfortunate.” On the courtyard in Soul Palace, a older middle aged man sighed longingly and let out some grief.

“Ai, it’s all my fault my subordinates were neglectful, not understanding Heavenly Crystal Mountain’s true situation. This I will naturally beg forgiveness towards Yu palace master.” A carefully dressed, elegant young man sighed as well.

“Accidents are unavoidable, but a few days ago we also got news that there was a soul pet riot near Heavenly Crystal Peak, so presumably, retrieving the corpse will be difficult. Let’s wish that the Yu palace master will be able to be calm.” Old man said.

“Tang palace master, you know the reason of this event. I’m worried some people with grudges against me may add to the story and skew the truth, so I hope that when Tang Palace Master judges this event, that you can give Yu He justice……Yu Lang brother was also a respected expert of mine. This time, when I came to Colored Sky City, I was planning on fighting him too.” The young man self-named Yu Lang said.

“Don’t worry about this Yu young master. We Soul Palace Masters are always just, and we would never do such a nonexistent thing.” Tang palace master answered.

Yu He very mannerly nodded. When his eyes looked to the windows, his eyes flashed with a cold humor. Clearly, the Tang

palace master's words fit what he thought perfectly.

"Palace master, there's a young man who wants to see you down there." A Soul Palace guard walked up, saluted, and said.

"I have an important guest right now, let him rest for a while in the building." Tang palace master said.

"Oh, since Tang palace master is busy, then Yu He won't bother. Please don't grieve too greatly……" Yu He had already reached his goal, so naturally he needn't stay longer. After saying that politely, he left.

"Send the young master away." The Tang palace master said to his guard. After he did that, he waved his hand for another guard to come before him before he said quietly, "Let that young man come back in a few days. These days, push away all people visits with me being busy. I don't want to be disturbed."

"Yes!" The guard said.

Chu Mu was slightly impatiently waiting downstairs. After a while, he saw a well dressed young man walk down from above. Though he kept a very mannered smile, Chu Mu could sense delight in the man's eyes.

Yu He naturally saw the waiting Chu Mu, but only nodded and smiled towards him, not saying much.

To a stranger's nice gesture, Chu Mu always maintained his emotionless appearance, so he didn't respond, only watching. "Another one. An arrogant and virtuous Soul Palace young man." Yu He seemed to have seen too many arrogant soul palace members, so he laughed coldly in his heart and kept a smile as he walked out of the building.

"This mister, we are very sorry, but the palace master has an emergency to deal with right now, and does not wish for any disturbance, so please leave and come back some other day." The guard quickly walked down and said with some politeness.

Yu He was just about to walk out when he heard this guard refuse Chu Mu. He smiled and said, "Seems like even his identity is normal."

Chu Mu furrowed his brows and glanced at the guards who came with him and said coldly, "Did you not tell him who was asking to see him?!"

"This……because we temporarily can't confirm your identity, so…." The guard immediately looked troubled, not knowing how to respond in the moment.

Chu Mu gave a cold humph and was too lazy to waste time with such a fellow. He pushed away the guard in front of him and walked right up the stairs!

"How dare you!" The guard immediately scowled and shouted towards Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn't waste time speaking. With an incantation, he burned with a white demonic devil fire and suddenly disappeared from the guard's mental range.

"Huhuxiexie"

White demonic devil flames burned in the floor above. The sad Tang palace master above looked somewhat surprised as he watched the cold devil flames.

With the devil flames burning, Chu Mu's body slowly appeared. They set off his tall and handsome body, and added some mystery and demonic charm to Chu Mu.

"This is my soul palace decree. If you have any words, say them after you see it." Chu Mu knew Ye Qingzi was still waiting anxiously, so he immediately put on the act of a young master.

The Tang palace master stared blankly as he caught the soul palace decree Chu Mu threw at him and turned it over.

Because of the death of Yu Lang and Feng Ya, the Tang palace master was already having a headache. This young man who didn't know the rules already made him angry, but once he saw the rank symbol on the soul palace decree, his face immediately changed.

He blanked for a few seconds before putting his head down and bending over slightly, "I didn't know it was young master, I

deserve a thousand deat…”

“Yu Lang and Feng Ya were plotted against by wicked people, and have been killed already. Before, the news that the Heavenly Crystal’s disappearance was let out only to draw the two people to Heavenly Crystal Peak. Now I have a friend imprisoned by the Elemental Sect, so send some people with me to go save him.” Chu Mu finished what he wanted to say in a few sentences.

The Tang palace master blanked again. Just a few moments ago, he had gotten news from Yu He that Yu Lang and Feng Ya had died accidentally. How come this unnamed young master said that Elemental Sect had done the deal and completely used an air of command to tell him to dispatch people to fight the Elemental Capital?

“Young master, the Elemental Sect Yu young master had just talked to me about this and said something that was completely the opposite. This matter is complicated, please speak slowly.” The Tang palace master was confused in the moment, and he wanted Chu Mu to explain slowly.

Hearing this, Chu Mu immediately creased his brow. He didn’t think that the planner was this crafty, actually explaining the situation beforehand. If they added on the soul pet rampage a few days ago at Heavenly Crystal Peak, the planner could easily push this deal off.

“Immediately send people to arrest him!” Chu Mu’s tone was even harsher. This event was clearly Elemental Sect’s young master Yu He’s design, the same person Ye Qingzi had mentioned

previously.

“Young master, Yu He’s identity isn’t normal. Arresting him like this surely isn’t appropriate…” Tang palace master said.

The soul palace young master Chu Mu had appeared too suddenly, and the Tang palace master hadn’t even figured out which young master Chu Mu was yet, so how could he suddenly send an arrest order to an ally’s young generation member? Let alone, Yu He’s position wasn’t low and wasn’t someone that he as a palace master could arrest whenever he wanted.

“I’ve got no time to explain, just take him down first!” Chu Mu showed anger.

“Young master, this indeed isn’t appropriate. If you have a dispatching decree, I will not hesitate any longer.” Tang palace master said with difficulty.

Chu Mu furrowed his brows, and he knew that he would be unable to dispatch any Soul Palace experts. Seeing that Yu He about to escape, he immediately gave an ultimatum, “If you don’t dare, I’ll do it!”

Chapter 213: Unbridled Inside Soul Palace's Great Hall

Although Chu Mu could not mobilize Soul Palace people, if he encountered a disaster, this Soul Palace Decree could be of great use.

Palace Master Tang didn't dare to go himself, but if Chu Mu went, he wouldn't dare stop him either. He could only hastily send people to follow Chu Mu.

In these few days, Chu Mu hadn't specially spent time to silently cultivate, so much of his soul power had been expended. He couldn't casually use soul techniques, and after jumping down from the loft, he immediately ran towards the Soul Palace's great hall.

The Soul Palace's great hall was extremely spacious, and there would always be Soul Palace with bright and neat clothing. Most of the members of Soul Palace accepted were people with a certain status in some territory. It could also be said that the Soul Palace was a place that experts congregated. Often, if a soul pet trainer was part of Soul Palace, with its reputation, it signified he was slightly superior.

When Chu Mu entered the great hall, he barged through. Regardless of who it was, his body that had quality stronger than normal soul pet trainers was swept through like a tornado. It immediately caused a great amount of cursing as many arrogant soul pet trainers glowered at him.

Finally, Chu Mu saw Yu Jia in the Soul Palace's great hall only ten meters away from the entrance.

Yu Jia didn't pay attention to the truculent chasing Chu Mu. He continued to have his self-believing confident smile as he faintly smiled, and nodded at a few experts in Soul Palace. He had a very learned appearance.

"Ning, Ice Wall!"

Chanting an incantation, Chu Mu immediately summoned the Ice Air Fairy. Without any hesitation, he immediately had in use an ice technique in Soul Palace's great hall!

A frozen frost of a snow white ice pattern gradually appeared in the great hall. The Ice Air Fairy's body which was covered by a bluish white towering ice slowly emerged from the ice pattern.

"Ling~~~~~~~"

The incantation practically finished instantaneously. Suddenly, countless pieces of ice condensed, rapidly completing the frozen ice wall. In an extremely short amount of time, the Soul Palace's great hall was frozen. Moreover, there were many layers of them that intensely rose up!

"What's the matter, what's the matter?" a soul pet trainer who was about to walk out of the Soul Palace's great hall was stunned

and his face showed a shocked expression as he looked back at Chu Mu.

“Who dares be so unbridled, daring to summon his soul pet in Soul Palace’s great hall and moreover block the entrance!” a few guards immediately yelled in the great hall. Their eyes glowered at Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy. As long as this soul pet made the slightest movement, they would definitely summon their soul pets immediately.

The height of Soul Palace’s great hall entrance reached twenty meters. Even disregarding its width, no matter if it was a passerby on the street outside, or a Soul Palace member in the great hall, they all let out shocked and panicked expressions due to such an entrance being frozen by a layer of thick towering ice crystals.

The Soul Palace was widely known to have tight security. There fundamentally was no faction, including Soul Palace’s members, who dared to be so unbridled in Soul Palace’s public locations.

Soul Palace did not permit soul pets to be summoned in its great hall. Chu Mu’s summon clearly violated Soul Palace’s provisions. As for the frozen entrance, it was completely provoking Soul Palace’s dignity.

Yu JIa also revealed a shocked expression. He watched the frozen ice wall for a long time and confusedly turned around. He wanted to see which person had such large guts and dared violate Soul Palace’s provisions.

His gaze flitted across and he quickly saw Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy. He felt Chu Mu's pair of cold eyes, and his brows immediately creased because he felt that this apathetic young man seemed to be targeting him.

"This young master, please recall you soul pet and immediately unfreeze the door. Otherwise, don't blame us if we're impolite!" the efficiency of Soul Palace's guards was fast as expected. When Chu Mu had made his move, there were already 10 guards who surrounded Chu Mu.

"Have them go to the side!" Chu MU swept his eyes over the three guards who were hastily following him as he indifferently spoke.

The three guards knew Chu Mu's identity, but they were only Soul Palace's guards from a ninth rank city. They had never encountered such a situation and, for a moment, they didn't know what to do. They only looked at each other.

"Uh... fellow few brothers, go do you own thing. Don't interfere." the three guards softly said to the other ten guards.

"Don't interfere?" the chief guard creased his eyebrows, suspicious. This young man was clearly being impudent in Soul Palace's great hall. How could he ignore this?

Yu Jia continued to look at Chu Mu. He felt his sharp gaze and tried to keep as amicable of a smile as he said: "This friend, please slowly tell me if I've committed some crime. What need is there to

make such a large move in such a grand hall?”

Yu Jia’s words were evidently to first bring logic here and displayed the mannerism of a monarch. After all, this place was Soul Palace and it wasn’t just anyone who could casually attack in this place. He didn’t believe that this fellow’s hasty freezing of Soul Palace’s entrance wouldn’t attract the displeasure of a few Soul Palace experts.

As expected, when Yu Jia’s words came out, there were already a few Soul Palace experts whose expressions were rather serious. These soul pet trainers in Soul Palace all had a certain status, and even they didn’t dare freeze Soul Palace’s great hall. This brat who came from somewhere unknown dared to be so arrogant, completely ignoring Soul Palace’s provisions.

“Hmph, young man, you should use your brains before doing things. What kind of atmosphere are you creating by acting so rudely. If you don’t want to provoke us seniors who are pressed to do things, quickly unfreeze the entrance. If you wait for us to attack, then you’ll suffer bitterly.” a bearded middle aged man gave a cold harrumph. He clearly was extremely unsatisfied by Chu Mu’s arrogant and despotic actions.

Besides this man, several Soul Palace seniors nodded their heads. Although it wouldn’t be hard for them to shatter this ice wall, they didn’t want to waste their soul power to do so. Moreover, forcibly breaking it would cause much commotion, and they didn’t want anything unpeaceful to occur in this strict Soul Palace.

Yu Jia swept his gaze over the few Soul Palace elders and when he

saw they they were discontent, he promptly smiled and said: “This friend, if something is the matter, let’s sit down and slowly talk. Let’s not bother the time of these elder’s.”

Yu Jia’s words seemed cultured and civilized, humble and considerate, but the intentions behind his words were to give everyone a friendly impression of himself. Furthermore, he wanted to paint that mysterious man as a rude fellow.

If Yu Jia were to be dealing with a normal young expert, perhaps after being glared at by these Soul Palace elders he wouldn’t dare be any more presumptuous and would obediently remove the ice.

However, Chu Mu wasn’t afraid. Since his identity as a young master wasn’t false, and furthermore, Palace Master Tang had verified it, even if he acted even more excessively, it still wouldn’t be too excessive. Of those who could make Old Tang not come out, Chu Mu was the only one who could do so.

“Ning, Ice Seal.” Chu Mu was disinclined to talk rubbish with Yu Jia. He wanted to capture this fellow before speaking, otherwise if he could go back and managed to talk with Qing Li, he would definitely grab Ye Wansheng. It would be very difficult to save Ye Wansheng in secret so he absolutely had to push the dispute to a conflict of Soul Palace and Elemental Sect.

Under Chu Mu’s instructions, why would Ning hesitate further? It chanted an incantation and rapidly finished the Ice Seal incantation!

A towering ice cold air suddenly pervaded Soul Palace great hall. A lot of towering ice frost transformed into a violent wind that directly swept forth, suddenly painting a layer of icy white on the ground and pillars. A thick ice crystal froze on top!

Seeing Ice Seal's attack, Yu Jia's eyes grew a bit wider and he silently yelled in this heart: Does this fellow's brain have issues? He's attacking me in Soul Palace's great hall!

Yu Jia had believed this young fellow who mysterious appeared in Soul Palace's great hall wouldn't dare to attack him. Yet, he had actually ordered his soul pet to use a technique that further was the powerful Towering Ice Ice Seal!

Yu Jia's eyes let out a flustered expression. The seventh level soul armor rapidly appeared when the cold ice covered his body. When the seventh level soul armor defended against Ice Seal, he also chanted an incantation, having a sturdy rock armor cover his body thus cutting off the entire ice layer outside the rock armor.

The rock type had the highest defense of all attributes. Moreover, it countered the ice type to a certain degree. The Ice Seal of Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy reached the eighth rank in might; once Yu Jia used the seventh level soul armor, the sturdy rock armor blocked a majority of the Ice Seal's force...

The cold aura still managed to penetrate his skin and Yu Jia who was covered in rock felt the freezing force outside his defense; cold sweat began to flow down his neck.

Finishing an eighth rank technique in one second. It further was a high level crystallization of towering ice crystals. Yu Jia never would have thought that a seventh phase Ice Air Fairy could exhibit such a powerful ice type ability. If he hadn't reacted in time, he ostensibly would have been instantaneously frozen by the Ice Air Fairy.

The Ice Air Fairy's Ice Seal technique could be said to have instantly silenced the entire great hall. The young generation soul pet trainers stared with their eyes wide open and let out expressions of disbelief. The several Soul Palace elders including the bearded man were also incomparably shocked. Perhaps this was the first time they had seen someone train an Ice Air Fairy to such a level!

"Palace master, this... this young man's strength is amazing!" the guards who were previously blocking Chu Mu stared in shock at him as they spoke to the adjacent Palace Master Tang.

Palace Master Tang had actually arrived earlier in the great hall, but had hidden himself in a dark corner. Before making clear of how Yu Lang and Feng Ya had actually died, he wouldn't dare involve himself in a fight between "the second generation of important figures".

Of course, Palace Master Tang never expected Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy to be so powerful. Its strong ice type technique already surpassed peak commanders and was exceptionally close to low grade monarchs!

"Go and stealthily inform those few not to involve themselves in

that matter as they please. This matter is rather complicated and it's not something our small palace can involve ourselves in." it was a while before Palace Master Tang recovered from his shock and he silently spoke to the guard next to him.

"Very complicated?" whispered the guard.

Palace Master Tang nodded his head. Yu Lang and Feng Ya were both people of Soul Palace's seven large palaces. Of them, Yu Lang was the seventh palace master's son and even if his death was an accident, he, Palace Master Tang, would have to take some blame. Moreover, another young master of an even higher status had appeared. This young master indicated that Yu Lang and Feng Ya had been set up and killed; moreover, the perpetrator was Yu Jia.

Yua Jia's status in the Elemental Sect was very high and Palace Master Tang wasn't a stupid person either. He knew that the implications behind this matter could potentially be very deep. If he jumped in, then it would be even harder for him to stay innocent. Therefore, he was more willing to just watch on the sidelines. In any case, the older generation couldn't interfere in a young generation fight. Palace Master Tang only had to put things to a stop when something awry would happen and it further was fine if he showed a bias towards the Soul Palace's young master.

Chapter 214: Act First Talk Later

“Break!!”

Yu Jia angrily roared, and he suddenly removed the sturdy rock armor on his body. Immediately, the armor bursted into pieces and the broken stone and ice dregs on the outside fell onto the ground. It was a mess…

Chu Mu’s sudden attack caused Yu Jia to show an expression of evident anger. However, this place was the Soul Palace after all. If he summoned his soul pet here, he definitely would violate the Soul Palace’s provisions like Chu Mu had.

Yu Jia endured. He knew that as long as he didn’t summon his soul pet and didn’t directly express an intent to fight Chu Mu, Chu Mu would be in the wrong. When the Elemental Sect and Soul Palace elders discussed this matter, he would be able to dispose off this arrogant fellow into a miserable state!

“Broken Ice Domain!” why would Chu Mu show courtesy to Yu Jia who didn’t summon a soul pet? He immediately had his Ice Air Fairy chant an incantation and continue to attack Yu Jia.

Broken Ice Domain!

The ice crystals flying in the air that had broken on the sturdy rock armor suddenly came to a sudden stop in the air. As if they were immobile, they stayed frozen in the air!

“Ling~~~~”

A long cry was heard, and all of the broken ice crystals came under the control of the Ice Air Fairy. They transformed into an incomparably sharp ice crystal sword that’s tip pointed at Yu Jia.

Yu Jia’s face became rather unsightly and his gaze intentionally swept over the few Soul Palace seniors.

“These few Soul Palace seniors do not recognize this young man. I don’t believe that they’re willing to let this brat act as he pleases in Soul Palace!” Yu Jia was an intelligent person, and he wouldn’t fight someone for no reason. Those brave and warlike people, in his opinion, were a group of developed muscles but simple minded fellows. As long as he played a few tricks in secret, the person regardless of strength would end up dead.

Just like Yu Lang. He was an impressive name amongst the younger generation, but had ultimately still died miserably. Thinking about this, Yu Jia let out a rather pondering smile. He displayed the attitude of a leader because he felt that these Soul Palace seniors had already reached the end of their patience.

These several Soul Palace seniors had a bit of an impression towards Yu Jia. That bearded man seemed to be hunter with a bit of reputation in Soul Palace. His name seemed to be Zhao Yi, and it was said that this fellow’s temper wasn’t very good. If he wasn’t pleased at a young generation brat, he would go and always go and teach the person a lesson.

“Truly incomparably presumptuous...” as expected, when the bearded senior, Zhao Yi, saw that Chu Mu was continuing to launch attacks, his face instantly flushed red. He was evidently angry!

What kind of a place was the Soul Palace?! Even those who didn’t know the rules should know that summoning soul pets in the great hall wasn’t allowed and not a place to fight. Previousl,y Zhao Yi had witnessed the strength of Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy, thus meaning he probably wasn’t a normal young man. However, despite the status he had, he could not behave so atrociously in the divine great hall of Soul Palace. One had to know that there were many Soul Palace experts looking on and if word spread, what kind of a scandal would this be?!”

Zhao Yi was planning on making a move. His powerful soul remembrance instantly targeted Chu Mu’s heart and soul, wanting to incite Chu Mu into giving up his control over his soul pet.

Mental restraint!

Chu Mu instantaneously felt this Soul Palace senior’s mental technique. He decisively used soul remembrance to protect his mind, not letting him bother him.

Zhao Yi was a fifth remembrance spirit master. Since it was a young generation member, Zhao Yi started off leniently despite being extremely angry. He didn’t use his full soul remembrance to pressure Chu Mu’s body.

However, Zhao Yi discovered that his soul remembrance was unexpectedly being expelled by this young man's soul remembrance. He simply could not enter his mind and he immediately let out a shocked expression!

"Second remembrance spirit master!!"

Great billows surged in Zhao Yi's heart. He was somewhat in disbelief as he looked at the twenty or so young man in front of him!

"What's the matter, Old Zhao?" a forty or so man next to him playing with his ring raised his eyebrow and asked a question. This man stood adjacently and looked on with interest; he didn't show any emotions of unsatisfaction and instead felt it was rather interesting.

"Spirit master, that young man is a spirit master!" said Zhao Yi.

"Spirit master? That's impossible?!" said another Soul Palace member under thirty years of age.

"How can my judgement be wrong?! Quickly look carefully who that young man is. Perhaps he's some disciple of an elder or a direct descendent." said the bearded Zhao Yi.

A few people finally became serious, and they began to earnestly examine Chu Mu's face.

As they talked, Broken Ice Domain's effects were completely exhibited. Countless small ice tips streaked across the air with a cold light under the Ice Air Fairy's minute control, violently rushing towards Yu Jia!

Yu Jia was stunned. He had just evidently felt Zhao Yi use soul remembrance on Chu Mu. With Zhao Yi's fifth remembrance spirit master strength, he should have been able to stop this young man's attempt.

"Shua shua shua shua!!!!!!!"

The shards were like tiny arrows and violently smashed into Yu Jia's seventh level soul armor. Several blood stains were ripped apart on his body and serious damage occurred to his exceptionally bright clothing!

"You... you have such large guts. Do you know who I am?!"

Yu Jia kept retreating. Even his face showed a few evident scratches; this made Yu Jia suddenly mad!

Chanting an incantation, Yu Jia could no longer endure it. His gaze carried a bit of maliciousness as he swept his gaze over the Soul Palace seniors who were still looking on from the sidelines even now and he tightly clenched his teeth!

His clothes were torn everywhere, and in the broken areas was

exposed skin. Yu Jia who had suffered from the attack was clearly in an abnormally miserable state and his patience had a limit!

Seeing Yu Jia's two eyes burn with anger, Chu Mu sneered. He naturally could guess what intentions Yu Jia had, as he clearly wanted to take advantage of him and have those few impatient seniors make their move.

Only, those Soul Palace seniors had already been informed by Palace Master Tang not to interfere. Yu Jia looked down on Chu Mu, and believed that a few words would put him in an advantageous position. He never would have imagined the young man in front of him was a Soul Palace young master. Regardless if it was inside Soul Palace's great hall that Chu Mu attacked him, even in Elemental Sect, as long as Chu Mu held the Soul Palace Decree, those few old fellows in Elemental Sect had to carefully consider whether to they dared take care of Chu Mu.

Chanting an incantation, Yu Jia finally summoned his soul pet!

A soul pet pattern engraved on the ground and a dark gold color appeared. From within the pattern gradually rose a soul pet's body!

The body was like it had been made up of a dark-gold colored gold. Its body was sturdy like a giant and it gave others a feeling of endless cold!

Seventh phase Sturdy Rock General!!

Not long ago, Chu Mu had faced off against four eighth phase Sturdy Rock Generals. Those four Sturdy Rock Generals had yet to undergo strengthening, and their bodies displayed a dark brown color and were only covered by the most average sturdy rock.

However, this seventh phase third stage Sturdy Rock General was covered in a gold and rock strength. It could burst forth with a terrifying destructive force when it pleased and when one looked at it, he or she would shiver from head to toe.

Chu Mu could be sure that this seventh phase third stage Sturdy Rock General's fighting strength was even more powerful than the Ghost King's eighth phase Sturdy Rock General. Its fighting strength could very well have also surpassed the summit's leader!

"Nong!!!!!!"

When the Sturdy Rock General saw that its master had suffered injuries, it immediately let out an angry roar. Its mighty two fists condensed several dark gold colored sturdy rock granules that ruthlessly smashed towards Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy!

"Beng~~~~~"

The Ice Air Fairy dodged backwards, but the energies had already exploded in front of it. Suddenly, a hole full of broken rock had been blasted in the great hall's floor!!

Such destructive force had appeared in Soul Palace's great hall

and immediately the entire great hall rang out with an enormous noise. The surrounding Soul Palace members all let out expressions of alarm. They never expected these two young men to break into a large fight in Soul Palace's great hall!

Seeing Yu Jia attack, a smile rose on Chu Mu's face. He decisively recalled his Ice Air Fairy into the soul pet space and quickly retreated.

Chu Mu's gaze swept over Palace Master Tang and he coldly said: "Destroying Soul Palace's great hall should be reason to arrest him, right?"

Palace Master Tang was stunned. Then he finally registered that Chu Mu's words were directed at him!

"Young master... you being like this is making things very hard for little me." Palace Master Tang let out an awkward expression.

"Hmph, summoning a soul pet in Soul Palace's great hall, freezing the entrance and attacking others. I'll naturally take responsibility for that. Yu Jia destroyed Soul Palace's entrance and disturbed the order of Soul Palace. Could it be that this isn't something you as a palace master should do? Are you planning on siding with him?" sneered Chu Mu. He was somewhat disgusted with Palace Master Tang's fearful actions. After all, this fellow was the perpetrator behind Yu Lang and Feng Ya's deaths. If this matter didn't concern Ye Wansheng, Chu Mu wouldn't be bothered to concern himself with the trivial matter of arresting this murderer.

Palace Master Tang, having been spoken to like this by Chu Mu, was speechless for a moment. He looked at Yu Jia before sweeping his eyes over Zhao Yi. Finally, he still gave the order: “Arrest Yu Jia.”

At this moment, Yu Jia’s face was completely dark. He finally understood that this fellow was completely intentionally provoking him to get him to attack.

Only, Yu Jia had never expected that this brat had such ability to order Soul Palace’s palace master to do things. The status of this ninth rank Colored Sky City’s Soul Palace palace master wasn’t something normal!

Palace Master Tang had already given the order, so Zhao Yi and the other group of Soul Palace seniors could only comply. Their soul remembrance forcibly exerted on Yu Jia’s body. Even if Yu Jia had more skill, he still wouldn’t be the opponent of several Soul Palace seniors.

Very soon, Yu Jia and the soul pet were arrested by the seniors. Yet, Yu Jia had a malevolent expression and he coldly said to the Soul Palace seniors: “I believe you should know my identity. Everyone present has already seen that this brat was overbearing first and forced me to attack. Arresting me completely unreasonably like this is practically giving your Colored Sky City’s Soul Palace a crime!”

“This...” for a moment Zhao Yi let out an awkward expression.

After all, Yu Jia's status in Elemental Sect wasn't normal.

"Bind his soul remembrance first. Lock him in any place that's similar to a prison. If he dares disobey, then I'll remove you guys first!" coldly said Chu MU.

These Soul Palace members were all extremely ordinary. Chu Mu felt that he wouldn't be able to convey the reason carefully to them, so he decided to be a bit more decisive, otherwise these fellows wouldn't regard him as a young master.

Chapter 215: The Tenth Young Master

“Tang palace master, you doing this, do you mean to intentionally incite conflict between the Elemental Sect and the Soul Palace?! Heng, this many people here already know what the truth is. If you let me go now, I may not bicker about it with palace master!” Yu He said, face full of anger, to Tang palace master.

“So is planning to kill the Yu Lang and Feng Ya simply to advance the friendship between Elemental Sect and Soul Palace? Don’t speak rubbish-lock him up!” Chu Mu said coldly.

For Chu Mu, Yu Lang and Feng Ya were at most just acquaintances. With no standpoint of his own, Chu Mu wouldn’t meddle in other people’s business. But, since Yu He knew that he and Ye QIngzi were in Heavenly Crystal Peak, he would definitely rack his brains to try to get rid of them, so Chu Mu naturally had to strike first.

Yu Lang and Feng Ya were both very famous young generation experts in Soul Palace. The appearance of them previously had already raised quite a commotion, yet Chu Mu’s words about the death of Yu Lang and Feng Ya made the entire hall explode into commotion!

“Yu Lang and Feng Ya died?” Zhao Yi similarly let out a surprised expression, watching Chu Mu with his eyes dumbstruck.

“En, previously there was the information that the Heavenly Crystal Peak master was wounded, and the Peak could be taken

recently. However, this was just a lure thrown down by Yu He and his subordinates. They knew Yu Lang and Feng Ya were in the city and, through the Elemental Sect's Qing Li's relationship with Yu Lang and using cooperation as excuse, they lured him to the Heavenly Crystal Peak half mountain cave and killed them. Then, they would probably use something like an error in news to hide their real deaths." Chu Mu said.

Chu Mu's words again set the entire Soul Palace afire. Yu Lang was the son of one of the seven palace masters of soul palace, and had quite the position in Soul Palace. Yu He planning a murder against Yu Lang and Feng Ya would definitely create quite the commotion between the Elemental Sect and the Soul Palace. After all, no matter Yu Lang's father or Yu He's father, they both had great power.

Hearing Chu Mu explain it, even Yu He was dumbfounded. He never would've thought that this mysteriously appeared young man would be so clear about the event.

"Not possible. This event was so secret, he wouldn't know, unless this man was also at Heavenly Crystal Peak at the time……" Yu He bit down as his brain quickly turned.

Yu He definitely wasn't the type to be easily scared with a few sentences. Even if his ploy was revealed, he made a supreme effort to stay calm and coldly said to Chu Mu, "Truly laughable. Even I don't know of this event, yet you do. Could it be that you were there when Yu Lang and Feng Ya died and you saw yourself that those two were killed by Qing Li?"

Chu Mu looked at Yu He and didn't expect this guy to still be this calm. Chu Mu wasn't in a hurry to drag him off, so he said lightly, "Very coincidentally, but I was in the team. Your subordinates especially diverted my friend and I, and then killed them."

"Hahahaha, I, Yu He only arrived at Colored Sky City yesterday and had just learned of the two's deaths, coming to tell Tang palace master. As for the Qing Li you speak of, he was my subordinate, but has long since broken contact with me. Whatever he does, how would I know? Since you're here making up a story, from what I see, it's more probable that you killed them, and are trying to push the blame onto me!" Yu He indeed wasn't a normal person, still able to turn around and bite back at such a time.

Yu He's sentence completely rebutted Chu Mu's previous words. Seeing Chu Mu no longer speak, Yu He started laughing coldly in his heart.

"Give him another crime, defaming the Soul Palace Young Master." Just then, a voice that sounded both like an old man and a child came into the debate.

Everyone's eyes quickly fell on the speaker, yet what made them surprised was the speaker was a short bodied, raccoon headed, half human half soul pet organism!

"Old Zei?" Tang palace master looked at Old Li and his eyes opened wide.

Zhao Yi seemed to also have heard of this half human half

raccoon thing, so his expression became strange.

“Heng, soul palace young master, how could he be a soul palace young master?” Yu He let out a cold humph, not caring about this talking raccoon’s words.

Yu He knew the situation in the Soul Palace even clearer than Yu Lang. Of the nine soul palace young masters, the second and fourth young masters rarely showed their faces. The other young masters, Yu He had seen. Those he hadn’t seen, he approximately knew their general whereabouts, so it was impossible for some young master to be here.

“Has the person been saved?” Chu Mu ignored Yu He and asked using remembrance.

“He’s been saved. The beatiful legs chick already brought him back to heal up. He has a slow insect poison on him.” Old Li replied.

Chu Mu smiled. Since the person had been saved, Chu Mu naturally could be very at ease. Looking at the person that had gotten him into a very bad situation at Heavenly Crystal Peak, and seeing that the person was still cleverly trying to say something to protect himself, Chu Mu very decisively walked right up to him.

“Pa!!!!!!”

A slap heavily hit Yu He’s face. Just as Yu He was about to speak,

he was slapped silent by Chu Mu!

Chu Mu's slap was very loud, causing all the voice in the Soul Palace to die down amidst gasps and sighs.

Yu He's position was something that many people knew. He was also a big young master level person in Elemental Sect, not lower than Yu Lang. Chu Mu's tyrannical slap truly displayed his young master manners fully.

"Old Tang, if you don't have the authority for this matter, go tell those who do. This elemental sect kid has the ambition of a wild wolf. It is fortunate this event was seen by the training Young Master, so we can return justice to Yu Lang." Old Li gestured towards Tang palace master and spoke.

"Young master Yu He, Yu Lang and Feng Ya's death don't seem to be that simple. Since Yu He young master knows the truth, then please stay in our Palace for a few days. Yu He young master doesn't like others saying nonsense either, so if you stay, we can make the truth of this thing evident." Tang palace master said.

Tang palace master was already partial towards believing Chu Mu, so he told Zhao Yi and people to bring the Yu He, with blood leaking out of a corner of his mouth, into a house arrest room and closed him up.

When Yu He was brought down, he stared bitterly at Chu Mu. FInally, when leaving, he specially used remembrance and sent a message to Chu Mu, "No matter who you are, even if you are a Soul

Palace Young Master, I will remember today's events and leave you without a corpse when you die!"

Chu Mu used his thumbs to rub his ears, completely ignoring his existence.

"This event is connected to the relations between Soul Palace and Elemental Sect. Before this event's true nature is revealed, no one is allowed to spread rumors or speak erroneously. Those who break this rule shall be dealt with severely!" Tang palace master finally displayed his palace master demeanor and warned all the soul palace members in the the entire soul palace hall.

After speaking, the Tang Palace master cast an incantation to melt the thick ice wall on the soul palace door, and he also commanded a few expert ground type soul pet trainers to fill up the crater in the floor of the hall.

"Then, young master, what do you plan on doing next?" After dealing with things cursorily, Tang palace master specially inquired Chu Mu.

"Old Tang, this young master is very busy and doesn't have time for such matters. Call over those you need to call over and deal with it accordingly." Old Li put on an arrogant demeanor.

Old Tang looked at the old raccoon and his face changed just like Zhao Yi's. After quite a while did he finally use a normal tone to ask Old Li, "Which young master is this?"

“Old Tang, this is something you don’t know. I am under her majesty’s command to accompany young master in his training outside. I also have her majesty’s soul palace sub decree……” Old Li said excitedly.

Old Li’s words made Old Tang’s face grow even darker. He hadn’t even started asking about the old man’s debts five years ago with this damned old man, yet he didn’t expect that this old man had somehow gotten on good terms with her majesty and received an invincible, all protecting medal.

“Under normal situations, the young master wouldn’t randomly show his identity to avoid random people having ulterior motives against him. But, if someone intentionally comes for trouble, hehe……” Old Li laughed treacherously.

Old Li was very willing to follow Chu Mu because of this reason. This way, he could completely rely on her majesty’s identity to parade himself ostentatiously about town, and those he had once angered before would only be able to swallow their anger and bear it.

“Since he’s her majesty’s son, then isn’t he the tenth young master?” Old Tang suddenly realized this, and stared at Chu Mu, wide eyed.

“You’ve been in Tianxia City for a time and know of her majesty’s identity. The matter of the tenth young master shouldn’t be spoken of. If anyone wants to target her majesty and specially trouble young master, causing damage, both you and I have trouble.” Old Li put his hands behind his back and stared.

“That is natural.” Tang palace master nodded.

Real experts need training in the real world to become powerful. Even young masters who had superior positions in soul palace.

Yet, because of their special identity, if they went training, there were lots of uncertain variables. For example, older generations couldn’t attack the younger generations in the open, but in the dark, people would still try to meddle in shady affairs.

So, when soul palace young masters went out to train, they usually used aliases, and appeared in many big cities as commoners. Even if they entered the soul palaces of cities, they wouldn’t make a big deal and instead keep it as low profile as possible, not revealing their identities until it was absolutely necessary.

“Then young master and Yu He’s matter……” Tang palace master didn’t know how to deal with it, so he could only ask Old Li, who he had some small grudge against.

“It is true that Yu He wanted to kill Yu Lang and Feng Ya. His subordinates Qing Li and Zhang Qin had done it, and they even tried to kill young master to shut him up. It is fortunate that young master was brave and quick-witted, using Heavenly Crystal Peak’s soul pets to his advantage to alleviate the situation. I, Old Huan, of course know that you can’t deal with this well. Just follow young master’s commands and close Yu He up. Either wait for higher ups to arrive, or send him to Li City……” Old Li said.

“En, en, I’ve already sent people to contact Li City’s soul palace sub palace.” Tang palace master said.

“This incident may not be as simple as it seems, you just do your best……” Old Li said with a meaningful tone.

Zei is word for thief, deceit. Presumably Old Li had ripped this guy off in some way and thus the nickname.

Chapter 216: Poisoned Ye Wansheng

“Not that simple?” Hearing this sentence, the Tang palace master’s headache grew even worse.

The person who died was the son of one of the seven great palace masters. The one who committed it was also the great young master Yu He of Elemental Sect. This problem was already very serious, yet this Old Li said things weren’t so simple……

“Alright alright, you deal with it yourself. Young master is very busy, and he doesn’t have time to act as witness or anything.” Old Li said.

“This……” Tang palace master’s eyes quickly fell upon Chu Mu’s body. His face became more respectful as he quietly asked Chu Mu.

“Young master, this event I do not have the power to deal with. If the higher ups ask why I think Yu He is the killer, and you suddenly leave, since I can’t say your identity, this will be very hard to deal with. After all, Yu Lang’s father Yu palace master is far in Tianxi City, and hard to reach at the moment……” Tang Palace master said.

Chu Mu was too lazy to deal with the Soul Palace and Elemental Sect’s struggles. Since they have saved Ye Wansheng now, he didn’t want to stay here and waste his time.

Old Li also quickly jumped in front of Chu Mu and said, “Young master, that Yu He is very crafty. The moment Qing Li returned to

Elemental Sect, he sent another subordinate to kill him, meaning Yu He had long since been ready to push off all things, as well as remove all potential evidence. You have become the last witness."

"This Yu He's power is that great, to the point where even Soul Palace people can't deal with him?" Chu Mu asked.

"Not really. It can only be said that Yu Lang and Feng Ya were too uncareful, falling into a definite death as well as involving you. Yet Yu He and Yu Lang both aren't normal characters. If Yu He is guilty, you have to interfere." Old Li said.

"I don't have interest to waste time on this matter." Chu Mu said.

"But if Yu He is totally fine, I think he would definitely find trouble with you. This will be somewhat of an obstacle in your immersive training. I feel that you need to go to Zhanli Kingdom's Li City and point out that Yu He is the mastermind there. The seventh great palace master Yu palace master is definitely already angry, so no matter if you have direct evidence, if you point him out like this, no one would dare to protect Yu He." Old Li said.

Chu Mu furrowed his brow, "So do I have to accompany him to specially to Li City?"

"There's no need for that. You walk your way and continue to train. After all, going to Tianxia City means you must pass by Li City. They'll be in charge of moving Yu He to Li City. Once you reach Li City, the seven great palace master Yu palace master would probably be there too. As long as you slightly show your

thoughts and say a few words, even if they're completely rubbish, with your identity as young master, no one would dare to refute you. Once things are settled, you can slowly train your way towards Tianxia City or follow Yu palace master there, all up to you." Old Li said.

Chu Mu had never liked to involve factions in his training process, but Chu Mu knew that as his power grew, he would still inevitably face it, so there indeed was a need to make connections with these soul palace people.

"Ok, then let's make our next city goal Li City. Oh, and Li City is a Kingdom Capital?" Chu Mu asked.

"Yes. Kingdom Capital's flourishing landscape is actually very fit for you to go and check out. Walk around, and if you have enough money, you can buy lots of things that suit your soul pets. There will also be many young generation experts there. If you want to start gathering fame, you could find some other faction people to challenge. This will also help you." Old Li said.

Chu Mu nodded, thinking this doable. After all, increasing his strength was most important.

Old Li saw that Chu Mu agreed, and Old Li quickly jumped beside and started communicating with Tang palace master. "Old Tang ah, I've helped you a huge deal. All you have to do is make sure Yu He gets to Li City and hand it off to Li City soul palace manager, and you won't have to deal with anything else.

The Tang palace master was just about to speak when Old Li spoke again, “I had to spend so much effort convincing young master to head to Li City and deal with this matter there. Think about it, if the young master had just walked away without caring, this would give you a headache for a long time, maybe even taking away your ninth level palace master identity. So, shouldn’t you really thank me for my vehement persuasion?”

“That is of course, that is of course. Old Huan, truly thank you this time.” Tang palace master’s face became strange, but he still smiled and said.

“Thank you only in words?” Old Li said meaningfully.

Tang palace master’s face blackened……

……

Chu Mu was quite the spectacle in Soul Palace great hall, but everyone seemed to know that Chu Mu was either a soul palace young master, the subordinate of a young master, or some sort of character with a position of power. If Chu Mu wanted to enter and exit soul palace, naturally no one dared to stop him. Also, Tang palace master was also very cautious, especially telling Zhao Yi to follow Chu Mu in case any accident happens.

After things were fixed, Chu Mu had to check on Ye Wansheng as well. Following what Old Li said, Chu Mu passed through a few streets and quickly found Ye Qingzi busy concocting medicine in a medicinal shop.

“You’ve come……” Ye Qingzi’s pale face smiled, clearly haggard, and her eyes were still slightly red and puffy.

A soul teacher needed soul power when making medicine. Her paleness was probably due to overusage of soul power.

The medicinal shop seemed to have been rented by Ye Qingzi. When Chu Mu walked to the back room, he saw a bed under the sun in the courtyard. On the bed was a black faced young man.

“Ye Wansheng?” Chu Mu looked at the teen and revealed an amazed expression.

Ye Wansheng used to look decent, occasionally attracting a girl’s gaze, yet his current face was completely covered in blue-black blisters, causing his facial features to become completely unrecognizable. Such looks could only be described as revolting……

A normally casual and undisciplined young man becoming like a rotting corpse-Chu Mu couldn’t imagine what sort of torture he had to face…… It was no wonder that even Ye Qingzi, who was normally strong and calm, had red eyes. Even Chu Mu felt pangs through his heart when he looked.

“Its……its……Chu Chen…… Chu Chen right?” Ye Wansheng was lying down, only able to see the sky with his eyes. He was clearly having some difficulty speaking using his rotten mouth.

“En, are you okay?” Chu Mu nodded. The moment he finished that sentence, he felt this was very unnecessary.

He had already become like this, how much worse could it get? Chu Mu was sure that Ye Wansheng had suffered inhumane treatment. It was possible that in a few more days, he would have been permanently eaten clean by the bug poison.

“Ai……I’ve already become like this……these days……you’ve always been with my sister……” Ye Wansheng slowly began.

“I’d say you should stop speaking, stuff is coming out of your mouth……” Chu Mu said.

“It’s……it’s okay, if I don’t say it now…… in the future……there will be no chance……” Every time Ye Wansheng opened his mouth, disgusting black bubbles oozed out. It was fortunate that Chu Mu had been through all sorts of bitter experiences, so he wouldn’t throw up from disgust at this sight.

“My sister……my sister is…… she’s a good girl……once I’m gone…… you….. You have to take care of her…… I’ll give her to…… give her to you……” Ye Wansheng was losing strength as he spoke, until he finally closed his eyes……

Chu Mu stared blankly, feeling that something was strange……

Ye Qingzi finished concocting the medicine and walked over

lightly. She had clearly heard the previous sentences and said angrily, “You still have the thought for jokes at this time?!”

Ye Qingzi was adorably angry, and Ye Wansheng’s eyes immediately opened. His face full of black blisters seemed to be laughing, but he seemed unbearably disgusting.

Ye Qingzi looked at Chu Mu and regained her composure and spoke, “He won’t die; only his body is heavily affected by bug poison and needs lots of medicine to heal, or else his body will still continue to rot. I’ve already sent the medicinist here to go buy it in the business area.”

“Oh, as long as he’s ok.: Chu Mu was speechless about this guy. He was already like a rotting black zombie, yet his mind was just as lively as before.

“He……hei……Chu Chen……just now……just now did I make you happy for nothing?” Ye Wansheng looked into the sky and swallowed the disgusting black bubbles back and barely let out a deceitful laugh.

“Let him be exposed to the scorching sun here. That can control the poison. Stop speaking to him, there’s no end to it.” Ye Qingzi pulled Chu Mu away and walked to a nearby room.

Chu Mu looked at Ye Qingzi’s slightly frail yet beautiful face and asked caringly, “Since he’s fine, you should be rest assured too.”

“Ye Qingzi shook his head and said quietly to Chu Mu, “He’s too deeply poisoned, and needs a huge amount of medicine and soul items. I’m afraid Colored Sky City won’t have enough of all the medicine I need. If it isn’t controlled well, it will cause a huge harm to his body……”

“Then let’s walk to a few more cities to buy it.” Chu Mu said.

Ye Qingzi nodded. Staying silent for a second, she lifted her head and looked at Chu Mu with her slightly wet eyes, asking, “When I left I think I saw some commotion in Soul Palace, what happened?”

Chu Mu briefly described meeting Yu He and how he took him down, acting before speaking.

Hearing Yu He, Ye Qingzi’s eyes became much colder and his entire body started emitting frost.

“He killed my brother’s War Court Black Beast and made him the way he is, I won’t let him off that easily!” Ye Qingzi said coldly.

“En, I already plan on going to Li City and meet with these powerful soul palace characters and finish up the issue with Yu He.” Chu Mu again briefly described his plans of going towards li City.

Ye Qingzi also knew that directly killing Yu He was hard, and would give her lots or trouble. She showed that she was willing to

go with Chu Mu.

When they were speaking, the medicinist of the shop had already come back and found Ye Qingzi.

“Miss Ye, this is all there is. Even if you go to the regional city, it will be hard to find the 500 servings of medicine you need. From what I see, the only way to gather this much medicine is to go into Yuan Forest……” The young soul teacher took a look at Chu Mu and spoke to Ye Qingzi.

Chapter 217: Yu He's Release

The insufficient medicinal ingredients were within Ye Qingzi's expectations. After all, she really did need too much medicine this time. These medicinal ingredients that were bought from the city could pretty much only suppress the poison in Ye Wansheng's body.

"Old Li, where is Yuan Forest?" asked Chu Mu.

"I've become a map... the Yuan Forest covers a very extensive area. I'll describe it like this: if the entire region this Colored Sky City is in was an island, then Yuan Forest would be like the ocean that surrounded this island. Its shape differs, and once you reach Zhanli Kingdom, it covers four regions. This Yuan Forest is a paradise for plant kingdom soul pets and demon kingdom soul pets. Inside are various precious medicinal ingredients and spirit items..." Old Li said what he knew to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu glanced at Ye Qingzi and asked her: "What medicinal ingredients does Ye Wansheng need?"

"Jianbei Grass, Flowing Wood, Magic Nectar, and Ancient Vine Heart. All four of them require at least 500 of them and aside from this, I also need an Ancient Azure Devil Tree's fruit. The first four medicinal ingredients can probably be obtained in places where soul pets are densely packed. However, the Ancient Azure Devil Tree is a relatively rare commander rank soul pet. There's a rather high difficulty involved in finding it." Ye Qingzi had understood these plant kingdom soul pets quite well.

“If it’s an Ancient Azure Devil Tree, it should be located approximately southeast of Colored Sky City. Once you reach Thousand Wood City, head north to that patch of Yuan Forest. It’s said that there often is news of Ancient Azure Devil Trees there. Earlier, I was there gathering medicine when I heard an old friend say he obtained an Ancient Azure Devil Tree from there. An Ancient Azure Devil Tree, even with what is considered common aptitude, has a value of 5 million gold coins...however, the area near Thousand Wood City lacks medicine like Jianbei Grass.” said the soul teacher.

“How about this, let’s split up and search. You collect those materials you mentioned earlier, and I’ll go to Thousand Wood City to find the Ancient Azure Devil Tree’s fruit.” said Chu Mu.

Ye Qingzi nodded her head. Ye Wansheng’s poison wasn’t fatal, but it still had to be removed as soon as possible. If it caused the soul a wound that was hard to heal, it would be an extremely heavy blow to Ye Wansheng.

“Alright, then let’s meet in Li City.” said Ye Qingzi.

“See you in Li City. You need to be careful eh.” said Chu Mu.

“Yes, you too.”

.....

Chu Mu looked through the map and found Thousand Wood

City's location. Thousand Wood City was a bit far, and according to Chu Mu's estimate, he probably needed half a month to reach there.

Fortunately, Thousand Wood City lay in a direction that didn't deviate too far from the route to Li City. This also happened to provide a chance to increase the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's and Zhan Ye's phase and stage, while also raising his new soul pet, the Ghost King, to the sixth phase.

Chu Mu stayed a few more days in Colored Sky City and, after buying a few medicinal ingredients, Chu Mu promptly rode on the Night Thunder Dream Beast leaving from the city's eastern exit.

As he was heading towards the eastern gate, for some reason, Chu Mu felt like he was being watched. This feeling wasn't a misperception, as Chu Mu had cultivated the special intuition from the many years he was in the depths of Prisoner Island.

"Hua!!!!!"

Just as Chu Mu left the city gate, several water pillars abruptly surged on either side of the wide street. These water pillars surged to a height of over thirty meters and were higher than the city walls. When they reached their highest point, they were suddenly frozen into ice, transforming into over ten ice pillars that extended on either side of easter gate's road!

Both inside and outside the city gate people were coming and going. When the shocking ice pillars appeared, it instigated a large

shout of astonishment and everyone began to run to a safe place in panic. As for the guards on the city gate, they summoned their elemental soul pets, vigilantly watching the surroundings.

The dozen or so ice pillars stood tall on either side of Chu Mu. The space between the ice pillars was only wide enough to let a small child pass through and they extended for approximately thirty meters.

Chu Mu stood in this ice pillar path and his gaze stared coldly ahead.

It was very clear that these ice pillars were solely here for him. However, these ice pillars weren't an attacking technique; instead, they were more like they were arranged like this on purpose.

"Young master? Young master's subordinate? Doesn't matter who you are, give me your name." a voice carrying a bit of cold intent slowly rang out. Immediately after, a man wearing snowy white clothing walked out from the very end of the ice pillar path. He was thirty meters away from Chu Mu and his two lightning-like eyes imposingly stared at Chu Mu.

After seeing the young man, Chu Mu immediately creased his eyebrows.

This young man happened to be Yu He, who Chu Mu had ordered to be arrested. Yet, Chu Mu didn't expect that he would be released. This fellow's capabilities were truly great.

“Chu Chen.” Chu Mu wasn’t afraid of Yu Jia though, and he calmly looked at this young man.

“Chu Chen, hmph, you really aren’t a young master. The matters from the past few days will be remembered in my heart.” said Yu Jia with a cold tone.

As his voice faded, Yu Jia chanted an incantation, and practically instantaneously completed a double summon!

A green pattern formed on the left side of Yu Jia. As the radiance grew faintly dimmer, countless roots unexpectedly grew out of the pattern. These roots frantically grew out into the surroundings like countless octopus tentacles.

When the roots neared a five meter radius, they suddenly burrowed under the ground. Immediately after, the radiance completely disappeared, and a tree frighteningly sprouted up. The branches on the top of that tree were all missing and it looked like a demon woman whose hair had been wrapped up by tree bark!!

“Old Li, what soul pet is this?” Chu Mu showed a rather astonished expression. He had never seen this plant world soul pet before.

“Hundred Tree Female Demon, an abnormally violent and ruthless plant world soul pet. His Hundred Tree Female Demon is only at the seventh phase third stage, but it has undergone a lot of strengthening so its fighting strength is extremely powerful. You absolutely have to be careful.” said Old Li.

“What about the other?” Chu Mu’s expression turned quite serious. The second soul pet summoned by Yu Jia hadn’t been seen before by Chu Mu.

“The other is an Ice Wizard. A warrior rank soul pet and its strengthening degree is only slightly less than your Ice Air Fairy. Its fighting strength has also surpassed the peak commander rank, and it moreover is at the seventh phase fifth stage…” immediately said Old Li.

“His two soul pets are both seventh phase, but their rank isn’t high. Nonetheless, the amount they’ve been strengthened brings them near the monarch rank. They aren’t easy to deal with” added Old Li.

Yu Jia didn’t stop summoning. He once more chanted an incantation and summoned the strengthened Sturdy Rock General that he had summoned in Soul Palace’s great hall in front of him.

Three soul pets: the Hundred Tree Female Demon, the Ice Wizard and the Sturdy Rock General. Each one had been strengthened to an extremely pinnacle state. Their phase and stage had all reached the seventh phase at least, and even if Chu Mu summoned Mo Xie, they may still not be easy to deal with!

“Beng!! Beng!!!!! Beng!!!!!!!!!!”

The Hundred Tree Female Demon took the initiative to launch an attack at Chu Mu. Its wooden roots like the hairs of a female

demon transformed into terrifying steel ropes that danced in the air. They shot towards Chu Mu’s location!

Chapter 218: Transcend, Yu City's Appointed Fight

Chu Mu retreated a few steps and as he did so, he chanted an incantation, summoning the Ice Air Fairy in front of him.

An icy cold came together, and amidst an ice colored pattern, the Ice Air Fairy's floating snow body slowly appeared. Just as the Hundred Tree Female Demon's countless roots flew over, the Ice Air Fairy instantaneously completed in incantation, erecting several extremely sturdy towering ice walls. Layer after layer piled on until there were five towering ice walls!

"Peng!!! Peng!!!! Peng!!!!!!"

All of the steel, chain-like roots fiercely smashed into the towering ice walls. Three of the seventh rank in effect ice walls were immediately shattered, and became numerous ice crystals that fell to the ground.

Witnessing this scene, Chu Mu chanted another incantation, summoning the Devil Tree Battle Soldier in front of him.

After the Devil Tree Battle Soldier appeared, its roots rapidly came together, quickly completing a web of roots that strengthened the two remaining ice walls' defenses.

Only, even adding on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's root defense, the last two walls were still unable to block the onslaught of

numerous roots. Very soon, the roots completely broke through into the Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier's range...

Seeing the numerous wooden roots fly over, Chu Mu's expression turned quite serious. He instantly ordered the two soul pets to retreat a bit and had Mo Xie on his shoulder take action.

Mo Xie maintained her pitiful appearance, and she jumped off of Chu Mu's shoulder. After seeing the attack of those roots, Mo Xie hopped a few consecutive times, and her claws observed these tree roots before abruptly striking out!!

"Shua!!!!"

The Royal Flame Claw slashed across the roots and the one claw swept past several tens of roots, but only a few of them were severed while a mere light scratch was left on the others!

Late seventh stage claw blade. Adding on the technique's effect and her strength, Mo Xie' Royal Flame Claw's shredding force was definitely not something a normal creature could bear. Yet, Mo Xie's one claw had only severed a few roots; the tenacity of these wooden roots was truly exceptional.

"These are water wood roots, and do not fear being harmed by the fire type. This wood type soul pet counters your small fox very well. It's not very wise to summon her to fight." immediately said Old Li.

Indeed, as Old Li had said, no matter how fast Mo Xie was, she simply could not dodge the release of the three wood type technique. Mo Xie didn't even have the chance to remove her pitiful appearance when she was bounded by several roots. No matter how she released her flames, they were unable to burn off the roots.

Having her body bound by roots, Mo Xie was clearly angry. A scorching heat began to surge forth from her body as she attempted to remove pitiful state and transform into the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox with stronger fighting strength.

"Mo Xie, return." Chu Mu didn't let Mo Xie remove her pitiful state; instead, he promptly chanted an incantation and recalled Mo Xie to her soul pet space.

As Old Li had said, even if Mo Xie's speed and dodging abilities were at a higher level, she could not dodge the Hundred Tree Female Demon's attacks. After all, the Hundred Tree Female Demon's fighting strength had evidently surpassed the peak commander rank. Under a phase/stage and attribute disadvantage, Mo Xie further wasn't covered in moonlight, so it was very hard to defeat this wood type soul pet whose tentacles carried the water attribute.

The surrounding temperature suddenly dropped, and the technique of Yu He's Ice Wizard finally came. A cold aura swept through, suddenly freezing the city gate behind Chu Mu.

After Chu Mu recalled Mo Xie, he creased his eyebrows, because he didn't know what soul pet to summon to deal with Yu He's

three strengthened to an extreme abnormality soul pets.

The Ice Air Fairy possessed towering ice crystals, while the Ice Wizard had a high level black crystal. In terms of rank, the Ice Wizard was slightly higher than the Ice Air Fairy, and both soul pets' ice type control was even.

Originally, Mo Xie who possessed the fire type was a certain counter to plant world soul pets. However, when she encountered these plant type soul pets that didn't fear average flames, even if her beast and demon attributes were stronger, she would be completely countered. This was because Mo Xie's claws could not rip apart those tenacious roots, and Mo Xie fundamentally could not get near the Hundred Tree Female Demon.

As for that seventh phase third stage Sturdy Rock General, Chu Mu didn't know how to deal with it. Even if he summoned Zhan Ye, Chu Mu couldn't guarantee that the sixth phase Zhan Ye wouldn't be instantly killed by the Sturdy Rock General's exceptionally terrifying strength.

"Leave the city. If you don't summon the White Nightmare, you probably aren't his opponent. However, you can't summon the White Nightmare, because Soul Palace members are not allowed to sign a soul pact with evil and sinister soul pets." Old Li said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu also had realized that it would be very difficult for him to fight against Yu He without the White Nightmare. He promptly decided to retreat into the city, and stand next to those city guards. He didn't truly express an intention to continue fighting against

Yu He.

Yu He saw Chu Mu retreat and a cold smile rose on his face. He strode out from behind his three soul pets and stood twenty meters away from Chu Mu. Using a haughty gaze carrying a bit of ridicule, he stared at Chu Mu: “In the Soul Palace, I only didn’t want to take action. Just with those soul pets of yours, you want to injure me?”

Chu Mu stood there looking at Yu He, but didn’t engage in senseless talk with him. He merely stood there silently, waiting for the group of Soul Palace members who walked up to him.

“Young master… you… you’re okay, right?” Palace Master Tang quickly walked up to Chu Mu and asked him with a bit of fear.

Palace Master Tang was clever, and after knowing that Yu He had been released, he knew that he would definitely find Chu Mu for trouble. Therefore, he intentionally had people follow Yu He.

Indeed, Yu He had found Chu Mu and moreover inadvertently provoked an incident outside the city gates. After obtaining the information, Palace Master Tang hastily made his way over to stop the fight.

“Who permitted you to release him?” Chu Mu looked at Palace Master Tang and apathetically asked a question.

“This…this wasn’t this subordinate’s order. Instead it was an elder’s instruction.” Old Tang’s expression was that of

awkwardness as he spoke.

“How can he be released like that? What on earth is Palace Master Yu of the seven great palaces doing?” Old Li was immediately aggrieved as he spoke to Palace Master Tang.

“He... he also wasn’t released. He’s only been temporarily granted freedom. Two months later, he has to head to Li City to attend the trail for Yu Lang and Feng Ya’s deaths. These two months are temporarily giving young master freedom.” said Palace Master Tang.

Chu Mu’s gaze became cold. His eyes swept over Yu He wearing a satisfied smile, and he was silently shocked. This Yu He unexpectedly possessed such an ability to have a Soul Palace elder help him ask for a favor, and allowed him to head to Li City to attend the trial while not under arrest.

“Chu Chen, it doesn’t matter if you’re a Soul Palace young master. The slap on the face you gave me a few days ago, I’ll remember it well. Further adding on your tarnishment of me, I, Yu He, will not leave the matter be. Therefore, I have come to you today to challenge you!”

“The time is two months later, and the place is Li City. You can not accept it, but you must accept a slap of mine and accept that you were slandering me!”

As Yu He spoke, he strode towards Chu Mu a few steps and his eyes were rigidly fixated on Chu Mu.

Yu He's actions were very clearly to let everyone see. After giving a display as if he had been completely slandered by someone, he put on the attitude of someone extremely angry.

Chu Mu wouldn't randomly accept someone else's challenge. However, since this fellow had put Ye Wansheng in such a miserable state, Chu Mu really couldn't just leave it be.

Moreover, to Chu Mu, a young generation expert like Yu He was a goal that he had to surpass. This time, Chu Mu really did want a true challenging fight!

"Before you've been sentenced as a murderer by the Soul Palace, I, Chu Chen, will appease your insignificant wish." indifferently said Chu Mu.

"Hmph, if you wish to convict someone, don't worry about the pretext. People like you who use such despicable means to get rid of young experts, I, Yu He, dislike the most. The Soul Palace and Elemental Sect will ultimately give me justice." Yu He put on the airs of someone who was devoted to righteousness so as to inspire reverence. When the adjacent people heard it, it really did seem as if Yu He had been wronged.

Chu Mu coldly watched Yu He leave, and also knew that this time he had encountered a slightly difficult opponent with both intellect and strength.

Practice, challenge, and train. If he couldn't step on these

outstanding young experts as he climbed upwards, how could he defeat the level of people like Princes Jin Rou and Lu Shanli? When he could do so, he would finally be able to enter the ranks of experts!

Back when he fought Princess Jin Rou, Chu Mu felt that she hadn't used her full strength. If the moonlight hadn't increased Mo Xie's strength and condemning stare hadn't raised the White Nightmare's force, then perhaps Princess Jin Rou only had to summon the Towering Ice Cursed Demon Fox and the White Nightmare to defeat all of Chu Mu's soul pets...

Chu Mu knew that he still very far away from true young experts. Indeed, the strength of this Yu He was clearly stronger than those so-called peak young experts he encountered back in Western Kingdom. To Chu Mu, this was a transcendence and a challenge. If he could defeat him, then it meant that he was growing closer to the highest level of the young generation.

"Young Master, your small fox was clearly countered by the Hundred Tree Female Demon, and your White Nightmare couldn't be summoned either. Taking a risk and accepting his challenge like that isn't too good. The strength of those few soul pets he summoned was extremely strong." said Old Li.

"Don't worry, even if I lose, it doesn't matter. Under those circumstances, he wouldn't dare to kill me." said Chu Mu.

In truth, when he fought against Yu He in that fight, he didn't plan on having the White Nightmare and Mo Xie participate.

Chu Mu already had his own intentions now. When he considered the future where he would ceaselessly come into contact with the Soul Palace people or those from others factions, in order to hide the matter of Mo Xie possessing continuous mutations, Chu Mu decided that when he came into contact with Soul Palace or other factions, he would appear under the guise of the young master Chu Chen. During the fight, he wouldn't summon the White Nightmare, and he would primarily have the pitiful state Mo Xie, the Ice Air Fairy, Zhan Ye, and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier fight.

And when taking the identity of Chu Mu, or when there weren't other factions present, he would be able to summon the White Nightmare, the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox Mo Xie, the Ghost King, the Night Thunder Dream Beast etc...

Doing things in this way would perhaps leak the truth, but with the double identities, at least it wouldn't be easy to be seen through.

Chapter 219: Thousand Wood City, Bloodsucking Wood

“If you only have these soul pets, then you will lose very unsightly.” when Yu He finally left, he said in a cold laugh to Chu Mu.

“These are enough.” Chu Mu replied indifferently.

Yu He didn’t say any more. He removed the two risen ice pillars along the sides of the road and walked impassively into Colored Sky City.

After Yu He left, the city reverted back to its original flow. Everyone who passed by Chu Mu took a special look at him. Many even looked at him strangely, and talked quietly with their companions.

Just now, when Chu Mu battled Yu He, their soul pet formations were very obvious. Yu He’s three soul pets were, as a whole, much stronger than Chu Mu’s.

So when Chu Mu scheduled a fight with him, it was probably sure that he was going to lose. Though these people might not ever reach Chu Mu’s height, most people felt that the weaker Chu Mu would lose.

“Young master, are you leaving city to go to Li City?” The Tang palace master dispersed the crowds attempting to watch and asked.

“En, towards Thousand Wood City.” Chu Mu nodded.

“For safety, I’ll let Zhao Yi follow you there. You’re identity is noble, so you can’t have any accidents.” Tang palace master opened his mouth to say.

“That’s good.” Chu Mu didn’t decline the offer. Now that his identity of young master was revealed, if he was targeted by factions against Soul Palace, Chu Mu’s troubles wouldn’t be small. They would have to leave the area, hide their identity and routes, before becoming safe.

……

“Young master, do you want to send someone to kill him? This guy being alive is very bad for you.” On the building, a dark blue clothed middle aged man stood behind Yu He and said apathetically.

Yu He stood with his hands behind his back at the edge of the building, watching where Chu Mu left for. After quite a while, he finally shook his dead, “This Chu Chen is either a soul palace young master with an alias or a young master’s able subordinate. If I kill him, its the same as telling them I’m killing a witness. Also, he’s not someone I can easily provoke. If I kill him, I need a perfect plan, and I can’t even touch him until after the trial.”

Yu He already knew that Chu Chen’s Soul Palace Decree wasn’t fake, so his identity was very mysterious.

In the dark, Yu He indeed could play some tricks to deal with him, but characters at the level of young master still weren't people that he could provoke, so he could only use the challenge to vent his anger.

"Seven great palace Yu Palace Master is a tough nut to crack. In the trial in two months, with that kid as evidence, you will have a lot of trouble." The dark blue clothed middle aged man said.

"Heng, you thought I wanted it to be this way?" Thinking of that, Yu He was also unbearably irritated.

This plan was very successful. Even if the Yu palace master was suspicious it wasn't an accident, without any proof, he definitely wouldn't be able to give him any trouble.

Yet, Yu He would never have thought that a soul palace young master would suddenly appear and ruin his plans, causing him to become the greatest suspect. To escape truly was difficult here.

Before, when Yu He taunted Chu Mu, he could still hold a calm and composed appearance. In reality, Yu He had long since been gnawing his teeth in anger. Because of Chu Mu's appearance, he would very likely get punished severely by soul palace. This would also affect his position in the Elemental Sect.

Yu He was also lamenting how unlucky he was. Of the nine soul palace young masters, only four or five were roaming around outside. The world was massive, yet he just happened to meet a

soul palace young master with a higher position than he had, causing him to have to take a slap to the face and be unable to retaliate, as well as receive an abnormally tough soul palace judgement.

If he could safely pass through the judgement, it wasn't too bad. If he couldn't, he would be on the receiving end of an apocalypse. In these two months, Yu He truly had to squeeze his brain to think of a way to escape guilt.

……

……

Following orders to escort, Zhao Yi, with stubble on his cheek, also walked east.

Along the way, Zhao Yi had constantly tried to figure out which young master Chu Mu was, as well as somewhat hoping to receive the special attention of this young master Chu Mu to try to enter the main soul palace.

Those who could enter the main soul palace were all true experts and authoritative figures. Zhao Yi was but a ninth rank sub palace's soul official. If he wanted to get a higher position and become a soul official for a tenth level soul palace, he would need an important person like Chu Mu to recommend him.

Yet, it was impossible for Chu Mu to give Zhao Yi a

recommendation. After all, even Chu Mu himself didn't know of the ranking within soul palace. Other than his mother, he didn't know a single other person within soul palace.

After reaching thousand wood city, Chu Mu dispatched of Zhao Yi with a few words, and told the guy to go wherever he pleased.

"Young master, this Thousand Wood City had many plant world soul pets. Don't you need Bloodsucking Wood? It might be sold here." Old Li reminded Chu Mu.

The Coronary Blood Fat had been in Chu Mu's spatial ring for a long time. In the few cities he passed by, Chu Mu had specially looked for Bloodsucking Wood, but unfortunately none of them sold it, so Chu Mu had never gotten the chance to combine it with the Coronary Blood Fat and strengthen his Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Thousand Wood City was a relatively welcomed city for plant type soul pets. The main reason was because it resided in the very famous Yuan Forest. This meant that most soul pet trainers would choose plant type soul pets that were common in Yuan Forest.

"The Hundred Tree Female Demon is very hard to deal with. If you don't summon the White Nightmare to fight it, you must greatly increase the strength of your Devil Tree Battle Soldier in the next two months, and let the Devil Tree Battle Soldier control the Hundred Tree Female Demon, or else your little fox will be heavily restricted." Old Li said.

Chu Mu also realized this. The counter between types was very obvious. Especially with the increase in stage and phase, soul pet techniques were getting more and more powerful, so the advantages of each type of soul pet was becoming more prominent.

Yu He's Hundred Tree Female Demon's fighting strength was definitely lower than Mo Xie's. However, when multiple techniques were cast and with the powerful restrictive nature of wood type, they could counter the beast type Mo Xie as well. Without finding a way for countering this, in the battle against Yu He, Chu Mu would definitely lose.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was at the sixth phase sixth stage currently. In two months, Chu Mu had to heavily focus on strengthening his Devil Tree Battle Soldier and strive to let it reach seventh phase first stage, so it could have a change against the Hundred Tree Female Demon.

Of course, Chu Mu knew that there was a huge difference between the two.

The Hundred Tree Female Demon had clearly strengthened its wood type ability to near low level monarch ranks. The devil tree battle soldier's wood type was barely at the middle class commander rank. In talent, phase, and stage, there were all massive gaps. Even Chu Mu didn't know whether he could strengthen his Devil Tree Battle Soldier enough to fight against the Hundred Tree Female Demon.

"In summary, try my best to strengthen and improve it." Chu Mu had set a goal.

A wood type soul pet was always crucial in multiple soul pet fights. Just like when he was facing the eight hundred Crafty Rock Guards, if he had raised his Devil Tree Battle Soldier to the likes of the Hundred Tree Female Demon, the devil tree battle soldier would've been able to deal with a hundred Crafty Rock Guards with ease. This was the huge advantage of wood type soul pets in team battles!

Thinking of the Crafty Rock Guards, Chu Mu had also remembered that Yu He still had a Sturdy Rock Guard that surpassed top tier commander rank in strength.

The Ghost King was merely at the five phase eighth stage. In two months, raising the Ghost King to the point where it could compete against the Sturdy Rock Guard wasn't likely, but Chu Mu still wanted to let it fight.

The Ghost King and the Sturdy Rock Guard were both of the same species, where the Ghost King was a higher rank than the Sturdy Rock Guard.

The Ghost King had never experienced strengthening. With a sum of money to buy some soul items and strengthen it, it could reach the sixth phase. Although it wouldn't be able to defeat Yu He's Sturdy Rock Guard, as long as it could occupy it, the mission for the Ghost King would be complete!

……

Chu Mu walked around the marketplace and trading place, but he unluckily didn't find any Bloodsucking Wood. If one thought about it, a thing priced in the millions wasn't something that an eighth level city could have at will.

Only ninth level cities and above had sub palaces of the Soul Palace, so even if Chu Mu wanted to use the resources of Soul Palace to buy Bloodsucking Wood, it wasn't possible.

After some searching, Chu Mu finally found traces of the Blood Sucking Wood in a bounty within Soul Pet Palace.

What Chu Mu found wasn't Bloodsucking Wood, but the habitat of Bloodsucking Wood Demons.

The Soul Pet Palace bounty mentioned that fifty kilometers north of Thousand Wood City, a commander ranked Bloodsucking Wood Demons often appeared. In the bounty, a soul pet trainer was offering 5 million gold for a high quality Bloodsucking Wood Demon under fifth phase.

"What, are you interested in this bounty?" Just as Chu Mu was looking at this bounty, a pretty boy walked up.

"En, you're going there too? Chu Mu eyed the seventeen or eighteen year old teen.

Most soul pet trainers slowly started contacting soul pets at the age of ten, and leave their family, power, and elders at around 18 to

start their own training outside. This training could last until 25, where most would, based off their strength, join some faction. Of course, those who didn't like factions could continue to train……

Chu Mu looked at the teen that looked seventeen, and could guess that he was most likely a young soul pet trainer that was in his early training stages.

"I have to pass through this Bloodsucking Wood Demon's territory to continue north. If you accept this bounty, just take me along and let me successfully pass through the Bloodsucking Demon's territory. I can pay you a commission." The pretty teen said.

"Bringing an extra person is burdensome,it is not convenient." Chu Mu looked at the kid and said lightly.

"I'm a sixth remembrance spirit teacher. I just want someone to go with me so we can look out for each other. As for who's the burden, that isn't so easily determined." The teen revealed a smile.

Chapter 220: The Trap of Bloodsucking Wood Demon

The young man sure was confident in himself. Chu Mu looked him over before speaking again, “How much are you paying?”

“Five hundred thousand.” The young man opened his mouth to say.

In the wild, the price of leading the way was never low. After all, places where one needed others to protect was definitely very dangerous. Those not powerful enough wouldn’t even be able to complete the mission.

Judging by the price of bringing a person through, one could approximate how dangerous the place was. The teen’s generous offer of 500,000 told Chu Mu that this Bloodsucking Wood Demon wasn’t any safe haven.

“Sure, if you know the way.” Chu Mu said.

“……” The teen was speechless. He originally thought Chu Mu was a local that could bring him towards the Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s territory, but Chu Mu turned out to also have come from elsewhere, completely clueless of how to go to the territory.

“Almost no one is willing to go to the Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s Territory now. Whatever, I tried going through once and remember the basic route. I think we’ll be able to find it.” The teen

said.

Chu Mu nodded and asked, “Do you need any other preparation?”

“No, why?” The teen asked questioningly.

“Then let’s leave now.” Chu Mu was used to swift decisions. After accepting the bounty, he didn’t even wait for the next day, choosing to go straight ahead.

The teen stared blankly for a second before laughing, “Might as well, then let’s leave now.”

“Oh, almost forgot to introduce myself, I’m called Ting Nan.”

“Chu Chen.”

……

Bounties and entrustments all had levels, from the lowest first level to the highest tenth level. The bounty Chu Mu accepted was a seventh level bounty. Those daring to accept such a high danger bounty had to have strength, so the teen didn’t ask what rank soul pet trainer Chu Mu was. He only approximately knew that Chu Mu was powerful, but that was enough for him.

With the chant of an incantation, Chu Mu quickly finished the

soul pact summoning. This time, Chu Mu didn't directly summon Night Thunder Dream Beast, but instead called out Zhan Ye in front of him.

Zhan Ye's speed and endurance was definitely weaker than the Night Thunder Dream Beasts, but they were heading to the north to look for the Ancient Azure Devil Tree, and the main objective is to train the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, Zhan Ye, and Ghost King's strength. If he summoned Night Thunder Dream Beast, sometimes Chu Mu would need to switch soul pets, which would waste a lot of soul power.

"Battle beast Mo Ye, sixth phase first stage, pretty impressive." The teen saw that Chu Mu summoned a majestic battle beast and smiled positively as well.

The Zhan Ye raised an eyelid to look at the teen, looking completely detached and numb. When not fighting, Zhan Ye often looked proud of its power, completely disregarding others.

A soul incantation rose and the teen also summoned his soul pet. As if on purpose, the teen didn't summon any endurance based demon soul pet, but also summoned a battle beast Mo Ye.

Covered in shining ink colored armor, with angular points and an unbreakable feel, the sturdily built tiger god displayed wildness in every step. Its reserved black eyes emitted a ruthless aura that seemed to be able to explode completely at the slightest tease!

"Sixth phase third stage battle beast Mo Ye, this teen is pretty

good, having such a soul pet at this age.” Old Li opened his mouth to say.

Chu Mu voiced his agreement. Though Chu Mu was also only nineteen, two years ago, Chu Mu didn’t have a sixth phase commander rank.

Chu Mu didn’t give any comments about Ting Nan’s Mo Ye, simply riding his Mo Ye towards the north gate.

Compared to Zhan Ye’s hard and thick armor, Chu Mu still liked sitting on the back of Mo Xie and Ye’s. Their backs were much more comfortable than Zhan Ye.

Speaking of which, Chu Mu hadn’t ridden Zhan Ye before. He still remembered that in Mo Ye forest, when Zhan Ye was only fourth phase, it was still a little Mo Tiger not even a meter tall. Usually, a fourth phase Mo Ye was at least a meter tall. This was precisely because of Zhan Ye’s beast type deficit, causing him to be this weak and skinny.

Yet now, Zhan Ye’s length was already two meters long. With its powerful tail, it was near three meters long. Its jacked muscles, broad back showed a beast type soul pet’s wildness and craze. It was no longer the initial weak little Mo Ye……

Normally speaking, a high quality commander talent soul pet was equivalent to a normal high class commander rank soul pet.

When Chu Mu had found Zhan Ye, the Zhan Ye's beast type was as weak as a warrior rank soul pet. Now, after constant training, Chu Mu had gotten it past top tier commander rank, and it was now a formidable part of Chu Mu's soul pets.

……

In the distance of fifty kilometers, if it were flat ground, it didn't even need an hour to traverse. Yuan Forest's terrain was decently complicated, Chu Mu and Ting Nan walked from afternoon to nightfall. They didn't meet any soul pets, but had wasted much time trying to find the way. Finally, they found traces of Bloodsucking Wood Demons when the sun was about to disappear.

Bloodsucking Wood Demon: Plant World – Wood type – Wood Demon species – Bloodsucking Wood Demon subspecies – commander rank

Bloodsucking Wood Demons, one of the cruelest soul pets of the plant world. These organisms didn't extract natural nutrients from dirt as fertilizer for their growth. Instead, they relied on blood. The stronger the soul pet, the more useful the blood was to them, and the faster they would increase in strength.

A trait that needed the blood of powerful beings caused it to become the most inclined to kill of all plant world soul pets. Because of this, they slowly gained the cruel, terrifying, and ruthless reputation around them.

Bloodsucking Wood was the essence of a Bloodsucking Wood

Demon. Only Bloodsucking Wood Demons with great growth would have it, and the chance of obtaining it was very small. Usually, the market price was in the millions.

After Chu Mu and Ting Nan walked into the territory, they slowly started to see the partner species Green Wood Demon appear.

Green Wood Demon: Plant World – Wood Type – Wood Demon species – Green Wood Demon subspecies – warrior rank

The warrior rank Green Wood Demon were scattered in the Bloodsucking Wood Demon's territory. When Chu Mu and Ting Nan entered, these Green Wood Demons didn't attack them, but instead intentionally let them into the Bloodsucking Wood Demon, also seeming like they were telling the hidden Bloodsucking Wood Demons that food was here.

"Thirteen Green Wood Demons, should we get rid of some first?" Ting Nan sent his remembrance out and captured the aura of thirteen Green Wood Demon.

"En, clean some up." Chu Mu nodded.

The Green Wood Demon lived in Bloodsucking Wood Demon's territory, and presumably, they were all the subordinates of the Bloodsucking Wood Demons. Them not attacking and simply following was probably because they were waiting for the more powerful Bloodsucking Wood Demon to appear and start the main assault. To clean the Green Wood Demons out now was also a

safety measure.

The warrior rank Green Wood Demons that were all around fifth phase were no match for the two sixth phase Mo Ye's slaughters!

"Shuashua!!!!!!!"

Zhan Ye continuously attacked and instantly killed four Green Wood Demons, causing the surrounding Green Wood Demons to scatter with their root filled bodies, letting out shrill screams while they ran into the deep forests.

"Huhu~~~~~~"

Suddenly, two branches passed through the dense tree leaves and appeared strangely in front of Chu Mu and Ting Nan, directly piercing towards Ting Nan.

These two branches travelled very quickly, able to compete with Devil Tree Battle Soldier's piercing. Chu Mu didn't think that he would meet a relatively powerful Bloodsucking Wood Demon this quickly.

Ting Nan's battle beast Mo Ye reacted very quickly, jumping to the side. The two branches passed by the Mo Ye's ink armor and, after letting out a metal screeching sound, it heavily pierced into the tree ten meters behind Ting Nan!

"Death Ray!" Chu Mu sent a command to Zhan Ye.

Zhan Ye's black eyes stared at the root of the branch and lifted its head, charging a dark light in the depths of its throat. This dark light quickly coagulated into a destructive death light!

Dark light spewed out, immediately blowing up where the Bloodsucking Wood Demon was hiding.

"Watch me." Ting Nan also laughed lightly, similarly giving a command to his own Mo Ye!

A black light coagulated in the Mo Ye's throat and quickly became an even larger charge of dark energy. With a roar of the Mo Ye, a thick dark type beam spewed towards Bloodsucking Wood Demon!

"Hong~~~~~~"

The bush blew up there. The moment the energy blew up, they could see a dried up demon wood soul pet blow up, with parts of its body broken by the Destruction Ray.

The blood colored demon wood fell down and quickly climbed back up, let out the sound as ugly as an old man coughing, and dragged its wounded body quickly deeper into the forest.

"Haha, my Mo Ye's Destruction Ray is stronger." Ting Nan laughed.

“Your Mo Ye’s dark type is pretty valued?” Chu Mu asked.

The Mo Ye had a total of three types, with beast and bug as main and dark as support. The Destruction Ray was a sixth rank dark type technique, double the strength of Death Ray. The fact that it had Destruction Ray meant that his training was pretty dark type inclined.

“Not fully. My Mo Ye’s dark type talent was pretty high, so naturally in my training, I would slightly pay attention to the dark type.” Ting Nan said proudly.

Chu Mu was just about to say something when he suddenly felt something fly towards him.

Chu Mu closed his eyes and sent his remembrance out. The next moment, Chu Mu stared blankly, because there were four to five Bloodsucking Wood Demon from all directions!

Chu Mu’s face became more serious. He had just walked into the territory and haven’t even entered deeper, yet he had met this many Bloodsucking Wood Demons, this was against common sense!

“There’s a lot of Bloodsucking Wood Demons nearby, you be careful yourself……” Chu Mu was just about to remind Ting Nan, but when he turned around, he suddenly found that Ting Nan had rode his soul pet towards a dense forest spot on the side without even turning around.

Watching Ting Nan's escaping back image, Chu Mu suddenly realized something. The danger that Yu Lang and Feng Ya had just faced had befallen him quickly!

Chapter 221: Evoked Brave Jungle

Back when Chu Mu had discovered the Soul Pet Palace's bounty, he had revealed a bit of suspicion, because the bounty didn't obtain the permission of Soul Pet Palace.

Furthermore, the Bloodsucking Wood Demon was a commander rank soul pet and its Bloodsucking Wood was extremely precious. Yet, the normal price of a Bloodsucking Wood Demon should have been about 1 million, while the bounty had offered 5 million gold coins. Even if it was a top quality Blood Sucking Wood Demon, it wouldn't necessarily have such a high value.

As for the young man suddenly coming over to pair up with him while further equipped with a 500,000 commission, an extremely beneficial coincidence had essentially appeared. Thus, it didn't cause Chu Mu to go and confirm if the bounty was a true thing.

……

"Haha, Ting Nan, you've caught another fish for us again. Once our Bloodsucking Wood Demon's eat the blood of this fellow's soul pets, they'll probably reach the seventh phase!" a laugh came out from the shrubs, belonging to a thirty year old or so soul pet trainer.

This person's skin was dark, and he had a ferocious appearance with a face that resembled a criminal.

Next to this dark skinned man were three other soul pet trainers.

The four soul pet trainers were all about thirty years old and their appearance was coarse and wild. If it was a female looking at them, these men would give them an untrustworthy and insecure feeling.

“Brother Jiang, the people from Soul Pet Palace seem to have already discovered our trap. After we finish this one, let’s switch locations.” said a soul pet trainer with a rather thick face.

“Let’s get rid of this brat first.” said the man called Brother Jiang.

……

Four soul pet trainers, and they each had one Bloodsucking Wood Demon. This meant that there were a total of four Bloodsucking Wood Demons around Chu Mu!

Chu Mu himself was very surprised, having encountered a group of people without the morals of a soul pet trainer. His expression turned much colder.

“Devil Tree, Root Net!”

When Chu Mu had sensed the arrival of danger, he had summoned the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a roar, and its tree trunk arms brandished in the air. Abruptly, several roots sprouted up from the ground; these roots possessed independence like they

were alive as they twisted together, rapidly forming two root nets. They protected Chu Mu and Zhan Ye inside.

Of the four piercing branches, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's root net only managed to stop two of them. The other two appeared in the front and back, respectively, of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

"Zhan Ye, Heavenly Splitting Claw!"

"Hou~~~~~~~~"

Zhan Ye locked his eyes on one of the piercing branches, and suddenly pounced towards it. Its claws violently ripped across, ruthlessly tearing the piercing root to pieces!

However, there was still one root that was unable to be defended against. It struck the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body with extreme accuracy and entered its abdomen!

"Ao~~~~~~~~~" the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out an angry howl.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was a wood type soul pet, and its fighting strength wouldn't be largely affected by a piercing branch entering its body. Chu Mu didn't mind it either, and had the Devil Tree Battle Soldier continue unleashing techniques.

Nonetheless, Chu Mu quickly discovered things weren't right, because this piercing root that was originally withered

unexpectedly became more full. Furthermore, he could sense something flowing in the root!

"Ao~~~~" the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body was an azure green color, but as the piercing branch strangely wriggled, its tree bark color gradually turned a slightly azure black.

A wave of astonishment ran through Chu Mu's heart, because he could clearly detect the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's blood being quickly depleted!

Bloodsuck!

This branch was feeding on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's blood!

In a short period of time, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier lost ⅓ of its blood and its body entered a weak state!

Losing one third of its blood was equivalent to losing one third of its fighting strength. Chu Mu really had been careless, forgetting that it was the terrifying and savage Bloodsucking Wood Demons attacking the Devil Tre Battle Soldier. Their frightening ability was to suck the blood of other soul pets and then transforming the blood into their own life force!

Realizing that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's fighting strength had been seriously weakened, Chu Mu decisively chanted an incantation.

“Ning, Ice Wall. Cover our retreat.”

“Ling~~~~~~~”

The Ice Air Fairy’s aura was extremely powerful. After it appeared, towering ice crystals began proliferating everywhere. They froze all of the flying knife-like leaves into ice cubes before crushing them to dust in the air.

Chu Mu didn’t continue to zealously fight. Once the Ice Air Fairy condensed those crushed ice pieces into a wall, he immediately brought Zhan Ye and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier as he retreated in a direction where there were no Bloodsucking Wood Demons.

“What Ice Air Fairy is that? How is it so unreasonably strong?!” the dark skinned man called Big Brother Jiang opened his eyes wide.

Ice Wall could be regarded to be the most average defense among ice type techniques, Yet, just now, when the four sixth phase high staged Bloodsucking Wood Demons had simultaneously unleashed attacks, the Ice Air Fairy was able to use ice wall to block them. Its ice type controlling ability really was too powerful.

“Ling~~~~~”

Ice Air Dance!

The Ice Air Fairy’s incantation quickly finished and instantly,

countless faint snowflakes began to waft through the air. A numerous amount danced in the air, covering this part of the forest and dying it in a snowy white color.

In the white expanse, Chu Mu jumped out of the four Bloodsucking Wood Demons' encirclement with the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Zhan Ye.

Aside from Zhan Ye, Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier had followed Chu Mu in the jungle of Prison Island for a long time. They were extremely familiar with forest fights. When the Ice Air Fairy used Ice Air Dance to confuse the ambushers' field of vision, Chu Mu charged out of their soul pet encirclement with his three soul pets. Very soon, he disappeared in the Bloodsucking Wood Demon's forest.

"Damn, we've even ambushed multiple soul pets on the outside. How did we let that brat flee?!" the dark skinned Brother Jiang spat out some saliva as he angrily cursed.

"Brother Jiang, don't worry. This Bloodsucking Forest is a small maze. He won't be able to leave for a while." said the thick faced man.

"Hmph, it's all because of Old Zheng. If he he hadn't accidentally let that wild Bloodsucking Wood Demon run in, we could have waited for him to fully enter our soul pet encirclement before attacking him. Now look what happened; we could have originally dealt with him quickly, yet now we have to waste a bit of time." said the coarse man wearing short sleeves.

“Blaming me? Isn’t your soul remembrance stronger than mine? How did you not sense those Cyan Wood Demons and that Bloodsucking Wood Demon? Didn’t I say so before that this place wasn’t suitable for ambush? Yet you guys didn’t listen!” angrily said the man called Old Zheng.

“Enough with the rubbish. We’ll enter the forest. The brat being able to escape means his strength is very powerful; we should try our best not to split up and after we find him, our Bloodsucking Wood Demons will have a feast.” said the dark skinned Brother Jiang.

……

……

“The Bloodsucking technique is indeed terrifying.” Chu Mu looked at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier which bark had turned an azure black color and inwardly spoke to himself.

It was only a mere few seconds of sucking, but the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s fighting strength had depleted by ⅓. This was also considering its life force was stronger than normal soul pets; if it was another soul pet, after such sucking it, probably wouldn’t even have half its fighting strength left.

It wasn’t that Chu Mu couldn’t defeat those people, but he had clearly been ambushed just now. Chu Mu only had three soul pets in total, and he still had to enter the deeper parts of Northern

Forest. If he summoned mighty soul pets like Mo Xie and the White Nightmare and exhausted their fighting strength early on, it would be extremely hard to deal with the even stronger Ancient Devil Tree. Therefore, retreating was exceptionally wise.

"Devil Tree, you're okay, right?" asked Chu Mu.

"Ao~~~~" the Devil Tree Battle Soldier nodded its head. Nonetheless, those two eyes deeply set in the treebark were evidently slightly dimmer, and it seemed a little dispirited.

"What's the matter?" Chu Mu could naturally sense its emotions and asked it a question.

"Ao~~~~~" the Devil Tree Battle Soldier shook its head, not articulating its thoughts.

"Don't worry too much about it. It's only because I haven't found any suitable spirit items to strengthen you yet. Right now, this patch of Yuan Forest is pretty much your paradise. It'll be very soon before you strength can increase. You won't lose to Ning." Chu Mu patted the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's tree bark hand and used a gentle tone to comfort it.

"Ao~~~~ Oh~~~" the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was always honest and considerate. Whatever Chu Mu said, it wouldn't retort nor would it express its opinions.

Indeed, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier probably was Chu Mu's

weakest fighting strength soul pet right now. Even the fifth phase eighth stage Ghost King which was the newest addition, due to it being a monarch rank, had fighting strength that was slightly stronger than the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

However, Chu Mu wouldn't renounce raising a slow strength increasing soul pet due to this reason. Since Chu Mu decided to have the Devil Tree Battle Soldier become his second soul's third soul pet, he absolutely had to have it become like his other soul pets, and become an undefeatable powerful soul pet in its respective realm.

"Ok, don't be discouraged. This Bloodsucking Wood Demon Forest is a place for you to thoroughly display your skills. As long as you obtain Bloodsucking Wood, your strength will greatly increase." said Chu Mu.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier nodded its head, and it slowly stood up from its sitting position.

"Drink this first and recover your blood." Chu Mu retrieved a seventh level life force medicine he obtained from Ye Qingzi.

This seventh level life force medicine had a value of at least 100,000 gold coins. Yet, Ye Qingzi only needed 10,000 to concoct it. Chu Mu had also grabbed ten of these bottles from her so he was prepared when he needed it.

The seventh level life force medicine could increase the speed a soul pet's life force recovered substantially. However, it could only

be used when it wasn't in a fight.

"Continue walking, eh. Let's walk around them first and obtain the Bloodsucking Wood before we get rid of them." a cold sneer rose on Chu Mu's face.

It had been a long time since he had played a game of killing people in a forest, and Chu Mu wanted to know how long these people would be able to play his game for.

Chu Mu alo felt that it had been a long time since he had killed someone, and these few people happened to have aroused his bloody nature.

Further, to a Prison Island King, there was no setting better than the wilderness of a forest to commit slaughter!

Chapter 222: Abnormal Lineage, Coronary Bloodwood Demon

Bloodsucking Wood Demon Forest

“Piercing Branch!”

“Nourishment!”

The Piercing Branch’s follow up technique, Nourishment, grew countless small branches. These small branches were like incomparably tenacious ropes that rapidly binded the sixth phase eighth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s body. This wild Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s terrifying bloodsucking arms were rigidly bound, not giving them the chance to extend.

“Root Puncture!”

Chu Mu gave an order, and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a howl before its roots quickly flitted thirty meters across the ground. Suddenly, seventy roots transformed into countless extremely sharp points that violently pierced the Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s body. From beginning to end, it was unable to defend against the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s Root Puncture attack, and after it let out a howl that resembled an old man’s, a plethora of holes were pierced in its body…

As the Piercing Branch Nourishment’s small branches slowly disappeared, this Bloodsucking Wood Demon finally fell to the

ground, completely losing signs of life.

Once he got rid of this Bloodsucking Wood Demon, Chu Mu quickly walked in front and had Zhan Ye use its claws to rip open its red colored bark to see if there was Bloodsucking Wood inside.

It was very unfortunate that this was already the fifth Bloodsucking Wood Demon Chu Mu had killed today, but he still hadn't obtained the Bloodsucking Wood...

"It seems that I really have to go there." Chu Mu raised his head and stared at the forest about two hundred meters ahead.

The patch of forest Chu Mu was standing in was completely green, and the trees weren't exceptionally tall. Sunlight was able to shine inside, making the entire forest seem slightly tranquil and peaceful; it gave others a feeling of being close to nature.

Yet, the forest two hundred meters in front of Chu Mu was completely different. It was a forest that no sunlight was able to shine into, and it was so dimly lit that it looked like a dusky night.

The trees there were tall and dense. Their roots were twisted and joined, and each tree was very close to the other. It simultaneously gave others a rather depressed feeling. Such a forest would normally harbor a few Bewildering Worlds, or a few dangerous soul pets. Otherwise, the atmosphere wouldn't be so despondent, and neither would a cold wind blow against one's face from time to time.

Chu Mu had just now been only walking around the exterior of the Bloodsucking Wood Demon's territory. The Bloodsucking Wood Demons he had encountered had primarily been of the fifth and sixth phase.

Bloodsucking Wood was relatively rare. Only a few Bloodsucking Wood Demons with special lineage could nurture this unique spirit item that could fuse into other wood type species.

The bodies of fifth and sixth phase Bloodsucking Wood Demons could produce Bloodsucking Wood, but the higher the phase and stage was, the higher the chance of producing it would be.

The interior forest territory of the Bloodsucking Wood Demons was extremely terrifying. Chu Mu originally didn't plan on stepping foot into there, but he hadn't been able to find Bloodsucking Wood. In order to save time, Chu Mu could only head in.

The sunlight in the outer region of the Bloodsucking Wood Demon territory was rather warm. The moment he walked into the dark forest, Chu Mu felt the environment's temperature abruptly drop quite a bit.

Perhaps it was because the plants had changed from a green to a grey and black color, but Chu Mu felt that he had stepped into a different forest.

A few strange sounds rang out in the gloomy forest, and from time to time, certain weird shrubs would begin shaking. Several

black colored figures of soul pets rapidly ran in front before vanishing in the developed branches of the tree trunks. Very quickly, they disappeared from their original location.

The light was blocked by the extremely dense grey colored leaves. Sometimes, a small ray of sunlight would break through a crack in between the leaves and spill onto a spacious ground full of dead leaves. Only, this didn't bring the forest much of a sign of life, and it was still full of a spiritless atmosphere.

When Chu Mu brought the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Zhan Ye a hundred meters inside, he had released his soul remembrance and always maintained vigilance, evidently feeling something wriggling in his surroundings.

Chu Mu's soul remembrance had reached spirit master. Under normal circumstances, when he covered a place with his soul remembrance, he could search for life and soul pets within a range of two hundred meters. Soul Pets that weren't able to hide their aura well would all be detected by Chu Mu.

Yet, in this gloomy forest, Chu Mu's soul remembrance had evidently also been affected. Further adding on the fact that these plant type soul pets had an aura that was intimate to nature, it was very hard for him to find the existence of these soul pets. The reason why he would sense something in the vicinity was completely because he had nurtured a kind of vigilance on Prison Island.

"Sou~~~~~~"

Suddenly, the dead leaves ten meters in front of Chu Mu erupted, and a python-like object twistingly flew at Chu Mu!

“Devil Tree!”

Chu Mu knew that he couldn’t dodge in time, and he immediately had the Devil Tree Battle Soldier save him.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s reaction was very fast, and its arms rapidly extended. It quickly grabbed Chu Mu’s body, and dragged him back while retreating twenty meters.

“Peng~~~~~”

The python-like object’s body smashed heavily into the place Chu Mu was just at. Instantly, a deep mark appeared there, causing the withered branches on the tree on either side to all be smashed apart!

“Drag it out!” Chu Mu immediately saw through the soul pet. This python-like body was evidently an enormous and thick vine. The majority of soul pets that used this type of vine were plant world vine species creatures. Furthermore, the main body of the vine type soul pet brandishing the vine would always be located a small distance away.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s arms released Chu Mu before suddenly smacking the ground. Its arm of branches were like

underground bugs that rapidly appeared at the location of the vine type soul pet's main body.

"Pu~~~~~"

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's tree bark arms suddenly emerged from underground fifty meters away. They transformed into two incomparably sharp wooden drills that pierced towards the vine type soul pet's main body!

That vine type soul pet's reaction was very fast. It quickly recalled its vines, and it accurately bounded the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's arms, preventing its sharp wooden drills from piercing it.

"So it's a Coronary Blood Vine." as the Devil Tree Battle Soldier engaged this vine type soul pet, Chu Mu determined what it was.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier possessed a certain beast attribute, and the strength of its arms were much stronger than normal plant world soul pets. The vine type soul pet primarily launched severe vine attacks from afar. If it was dealing with another beast type soul pet, it would be able to directly bind it and drag it backwards. However, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier could dig its roots into the ground, and soul pets with stronger arm strength would even be inferior to it by a fair margin.

Its long arms flung upwards. Despite its wooden drill arms being bounded by the vines, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was able to drag this Coronary Blood Vine out from the trees.

After dragging it out, the Coronary Blood Vine's main body was exposed. It had a red colored tree trunk that was comparatively large; moreover, there were several python-like vines coiling around its trunk body.

"Eh? It doesn't seem to be a Coronary Blood Vine?" looking at the slightly weird looking soul pet, Chu Mu expressed a quite astonished expression.

The Coronary Blood Vine's body was completely composed of intricate vines, and it didn't have a tree trunk as a body. Yet, this soul pet had the body of a Bloodsucking Wood Demon causing one to feel that it was a combination of a Coronary Blood Vine and a Bloodsucking Wood Demon.

"Old Li, what is this thing?" asked Chu Mu as this was the first time he'd seen this creature.

"This... it's hard to call it something. On the basis of my conjecture, it should be a hybrid of a Coronary Blood Vine and a Bloodsucking Wood Demon. At least from its external appearance that's what it looks like... as for strength, it's probably about the seventh phase... your Devil Tree Battle Soldier may not be able to handle it." said Old Li.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's strength was approximately equivalent to a standard plant world commander. Regardless of whether if it was a Coronary Blood Vine or a Bloodsucking Wood Demon, both were commander soul pets. Thus, if this soul pet was seventh phase, it really would be hard for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to defeat it.

The moment Old Li finished speaking, the combined Coronary Blood Vine and Bloodsucking Wood Demon soul pet let out a sharp cry. Its body waved about as ten python-like vines appeared. They passed through fifty meters of the gloomy forest towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier hastily retracted its arms, and grabbed onto two of the powerful vines, breaking them in half. However, there were still another seven or eight vines that continued to shoot out at its body.

“Pai!!!! Pai!!!! Pai!!!!!!!!”

Five of the mighty seventh rank vines hit the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body, which began to evidently sway. Five deep scars further appeared on its tree bark skin.

“Ao!!!” the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a painful cry. Its creased tree bark face showed a visibly angered expression!

“Zhan Ye, Heavenly Splitting Claw!”

Zhan Ye had already prepared to fight. As the Coronary Bloodwood Demon had yet to recall its vines, it abruptly used the Dark Assault technique, its body transforming into a sprinting black colored orbit amidst the dark forest, and it slashed its claws at the Coronary Bloodwood Demon’s body!

Zhan Ye was a fully equipped soul pet that surpassed a peak commander. Although it was only at the sixth phase, its fighting strength was much stronger than seventh phase commanders. The Heavenly Splitting Claw's might had further reached the eighth rank, and after its claws slashed across, a deep scar surfaced on the Coronary Bloodwood Demon's body.

"The chance that the Bloodsucking Wood appears on this variation or hybrid soul pet is higher. You must capture it; don't let it flee." Old Li warned Chu Mu.

The moment Old Li finished speaking, the Coronary Bloodwood Demon seemed to have sensed Zhan Ye's powerful strength. Its seven to eight vines suddenly gave a swing and, after it knocked Zhan Ye flying, it unexpectedly decided to immediately flee.

Since Old Li had said so, Chu Mu naturally could not let it flee. He immediately had the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Zhan Ye pursue it...

The Coronary Bloodwood Demon's fleeing speed wasn't very fast. However, what made Chu Mu extremely annoyed was that when he released his soul remembrance, he discovered that there surprisingly were several sixth and seventh phase Bloodsucking Wood Demons around the Coronary Bloodwood Demon protecting it. This made it even harder for him to kill the Coronary Bloodwood Demon.

"Ghost King, come out!" an incantation gradually chanted, and a black colored ghost fog began to curl up on Chu Mu's body. It slowly drifted to the side, transforming into a rock type

summoning pattern full of dense ghost aura!

Chapter 223: Devil Tree, Wood Finger Prison

The monarch ranked summoning symbol was different from others. It was no longer a summoning diagram. The symbol that appeared within Chu Mu's summon looked more like the soul imprint of Chu Mu and Ghost King. This symbol was shrouded with a ghostly aura, emitting a dark and deviled feel.

With the finish of Chu Mu's incantation, the symbol slowly shrunk and the ghostly aura, as if alive, revealed a grotesque look. The inner layer full of shattered Dark Sturdy Rock flew about, quickly combining into the Ghost King's iron-hard body!

"Huhuhu~~~~~~~"

The wind blew over, and the straightened Ghost King's right hand grasped powerfully. The Monarch Ghost Curved Sword quickly assembled, and the ghost runes appeared and finally imprinted themselves onto the sword.

"Deal with the sixth phase eighth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon!" Chu Mu sent a command to the Ghost King.

The fifth phase eighth stage Monarch Rank soul pet was more than enough to deal with any commander rank below seventh phase. Receiving the command, the Ghost King gravely stepped forward and walked towards the sixth phase eighth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon.

"Huahuahu~~~~~~~~"

The leaves were like knives as the Bloodsucking Wood Demon's blades flew over densely, cutting up the nearby trees!

The Hundred Leaf Blade of the Bloodsucking Wood Demon wasn't powerful, but it covered a large area. If many Bloodsucking Wood Demons casted it simultaneously, the damage was very powerful.

"Nong!!!!!!!!!"

The Ghost King stood at the very front. The ghost aura on its body suddenly burned up, and darts of ghost fire-like aura came out of its body.

As the ghost fire burned, the Ghost King's body started expanding. All its muscles bulked up, and in a short two seconds, the Ghost King had finished its Monarch Ghost Transformation, becoming a doubled strength giant!

"Dingdingdingding~~~~~~~~~~"

The vision covering leaf blades all pattered onto the Ghost King's body like a storm, yet the Ghost King was like an immovable mountain, standing there silently, letting the leaves hit its body. They only left a shallow mark on its Dark Sturdy Rock body.

Elemental World soul pets' life force weren't too powerful, but normal wounds completely didn't affect their fighting strength. As

for the marks left by these leaves, they were synonymous to tickles.

The Ghost King's skin defense was at the seventh rank initial stage. In normal circumstances, the rock type seventh phase initial stage defense was even stronger than other intermediate stage defenses.

Wood type soul pets' attacks were mainly numerous, unpredictable, dense, and quick, but their actual damage wasn't very high. The Ghost King's typing had quite the advantage.

"Nong!!!!!!!!!!"

It took a big step forward. After the Ghost King finished the Ghost Transformation, its speed fell, but its menacing aura became even greater. Its four meter tall body heavily stepped onto the Root Spikes that didn't break its defense, and it lifted its Monarch Ghost Sword high up, heavily slamming it towards the sixth phase eighth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon to its left!!

Hundred Ton Sword!

The Ghost King's sword's weight immediately tripled. Its original weight was already near one hundred kilograms. After tripling, how terrifying would the destruction caused by the four meter giant be!?!

"Hong!!!!!!"

The sword fell, and its weight pushed the surrounding ground down further. The Bloodsucking Wood Demon's dodging ability was in itself slow. With this sword, its entire body was bent into the deep crater.

Since it was already underfoot, this sixth phase eighth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon wouldn't be able to compete against the Ghost King. The Ghost King used its huge foot to step on the two branch arms of the Demon, sentencing it to imminent death.

"Devil Tree, Demon Wood Puncture!" Chu Mu put his attention onto the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's battle.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was only at the sixth phase sixth stage, so it wasn't much stronger than the Bloodsucking Wood Demon. Chu Mu didn't let Zhan Ye or the Ghost King to help it fight, but instead let it face the Bloodsucking Wood Demon alone.

The ground covered in yellow leaves suddenly blew up as seventy thin Demon Wood roots darted out from the ground and, like javelins, pierced towards the sixth phase ninth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon's body.

"Pupupupupu~~~~~~"

Demon Wood Root Puncture quickly left many holes on the sixth phase ninth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon's body.

Blood flowed through the Bloodsucking Wood Demon, so when the holes were made, red liquid immediately oozed out and slowly flowed down from its gnarled body.

“Good, we wounded it.” Chu Mu smiled and commanded his Devil Tree Battle Soldier to continue fighting.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s demon wood arms suddenly lengthened and became two long and hardened arms. As the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body suddenly twisted, the two arms, extending thirty meters, whipped powerfully towards the Bloodsucking Wood Demon!

“Lielieli~~~~~~~”

The sixth phase ninth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon let out the laughter of an old man, and its two arms also extended. When the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s two arms whipped across, it suddenly grabbed on.

Bloodsuck!!

The arms of the Bloodsucking Wood Demon suddenly grew sharp spikes. These sharp spikes dug into the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s arms and, while tightly grappling onto the arm, they also started sucking the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s blood frantically!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s blood was sucked into the Bloodsucking Wood Demon. When it was absorbing the blood, the

bleeding wounds on its body was closing at rapid speeds. In a few seconds, its body had healed fully!

“Overgrowth!” Chu Mu furrowed his brow as he sent the command.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s arm quickly grew thin branches. Seeming to be affected by the blood loss, these branches grew very slowly and were not numerous.

When the branches finally displayed their binding effect, the Bloodsucking Wood Demon had already sucked enough blood and retreated, so the Devil Tree Battle Soldier couldn’t do much but retract its arms as well.

“Its wounds are healed along with its fighting strength.” Chu Mu said to himself.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier had the more powerful Demon Wood energy crystal. Normally speaking, it shouldn’t have trouble dealing with a commander rank three stages higher, yet this Bloodsuck ability was truly hard to deal with.

After fighting for forever, its strength had recovered again. Chu Mu had finally realized that this Bloodsuck ability truly was powerful. No wonder many soul pet trainers didn’t want to fight Bloodsucking Wood Demons.

After getting sucked, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s fighting

strength decreased by about a third. It never had much of an advantage. Now that its fighting strength fell, defeating this Bloodsucking Wood Demon was even tougher.

“Ao!!!!!!!!!”

Just as Chu Mu was thinking, the anger built up through these days seemed to have exploded within the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. It suddenly squatted down and pressed its wooden palms onto the ground.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s fingers were very long. When he stuck them all into the ground, it was like it was casting a technique.

Chu Mu watched his Devil Tree Battle Soldier with confusion. Before Chu Mu reacted, ten vine-like things suddenly appeared in a five meter radius around the Bloodsucking Wood Demon.

Looking closely, these ten vine like things were the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s infinitely lengthened wooden fingers. These wooden fingers were like vines, quickly darting above the Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s head. In a blink of an eye, they tied together five meters above the Bloodsucking Wood Demon.

The ten fingers formed a circle and tied together at the center, creating this Wooden Finger Prison made up of ten fingers!

The sixth phase ninth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon clearly

hadn’t seen this technique before, but it had vigilance. It stepped away slowly, trying to walk out of the large gaps between fingers and escape the prison.

“Ao!!!!!”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a roar and, like grabbing onto his own arms, it yanked upwards heavily and retracted its fingers at the same time!

These ten fingers all tied together at the same high point. With this retraction, the prison fell downwards onto the Bloodsucking Wood Demon, brutally restricting it to the ground!

The Bloodsucking Wood Demon couldn’t dodge in time and was quickly tied up. Its body twisted around crazily, but the finger prison was very tough and restricted the Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s movement. It wouldn’t be able to escape for some time.

Looking at the Bloodsucking Wood Demon that was restricted, Chu Mu finally realized that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had learned a new technique!

“Wood Finger Prison, en en, sixth rank wood type technique. Usually only advanced Exquisite Dodging soul pets could dodge it easily……” Old Li’s voice immediately came.

Chu Mu also smiled. Clearly, only when the Devil Tree Battle Soldier fought often would its strength increase quickly.

When Chu Mu captured it, its wood type talent was at the top tier warrior rank. If he let it fight and strengthen, its use on the battlefield was definitely not inferior to the Ice Air Fairy. But most importantly, as the amount of soul pets increased, a wood type soul pet's restrictive abilities would become even more important. In team fights in the future, he still had to rely on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

"Finish it!"

"AO!!!!!!!!!"

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier had long since reached the Triple Cast state. Though its Finger Prison was still there, its Devil Tree Roots had already approached the Bloodsucking Wood Demon like soul reapers!

"Pupupupupu~~~~~~"

Seventy Demon Wood roots darted out and pierced through the Bloodsucking Wood Demon's body!

Getting attacked, the Bloodsucking Wood Demon could no longer get up. These seventy roots continued to pierce for near five seconds, rendering the sixth phase ninth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon a pulpy mess that oozed with blood!

Chapter 224: Mutated Bloodsuck

The seventh phase ninth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon was finally killed. The Devil Tree Battle Soldier displayed a rare anger, piercing the Bloodsucking Wood Demon until it was unrecognizable. It didn't even leave its soul core intact, shattering it with a pierce.

"Ao~~~~~~~~"

Just as the Devil Tree Battle Soldier retracted all its techniques, it suddenly let out a roar, as its black-green body slowly regained its green hue.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body still had some demon wood wrapped on it. When the Devil Tree Battle Soldier started glowing green, the demon wood suddenly became thicker, and its color became purer!

Growth!

Chu Mu looked at the small changes to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body and smiled again.

Sixth phase seventh stage. After the experience of fighting, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had finally started its steps to rapidly growing!

"Ze ze, its demon wood energy crystal should be at the middle

stage. Once it reaches the seventh phase, you can try to spend some ten thousand gold coins to strengthen the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's devil wood crystal to bloody wood crystal. With Bloodsuck and the unbreakable Bloody wood, even if it's placed in a huge group of soul pets, as long as they aren't incredibly powerful, your devil tree battle soldier will be able to fight endlessly." Old Li said.

Wood type energy crystal: The most normal was wood, then demon wood, then bloody wood. Bloody wood crystal was equivalent to the Ice Air Fairy's Towering Ice crystal.

When they were in Colored Sky City, they found the Ice Snow Fruit that could increase the chance of an ice type soul pet to learn a new energy crystal. Such a fruit was priced at 20 million.

Things like the Ice Snow Fruit weren't always readily available. Chu Mu could only look for it again at Li City. If he found anything similar for the wood type, he would decisively buy it.

That is, if Chu Mu had 20 million gold to spare.

.....

Though Zhan Ye was already at the sixth phase, he wasn't as proficient in dealing with these wood type soul pets, and was only able to get rid of one sixth phase eighth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon

After the Ghost King did its Monarch Ghost Transformation, the Bloodsucking Wood Demon were all scared, so the Ghost King himself also got rid of two Bloodsucking Wood Demons. It was truly terrifying.

At the fifth phase eighth stage and with such a powerful fighting strength, Chu Mu was more and more confident in his own soul pets.

The Bloodsucking Wood Demon was quickly dealt with by Chu Mu's three soul pets, leaving only the Coronary Bloodwood Demon.

The Coronary Bloodwood Demon was at the seventh phase. When Chu Mu's soul pets were fighting the Bloodsucking Wood Demons, it kept hiding at the back. Seeing the situation had changed, it decisively started escaping.

Chu Mu's remembrance had long since locked onto this Coronary Bloodwood Demon. How fast could a wood type soul pet possibly run? Very soon, Chu Mu caught up to this Coronary Bloodwood Demon.

"Devil Tree, Wood Finger Prison!" Chu Mu commanded

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier knelt down and pressed its hands into the ground, sending ten of its fingers swiftly into the ground.

The range of the Finger Wood Prison could reach a hundred

meters. The Coronary Bloodwood Demon was only fifty meters away. At such distances, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's techniques were also much more accurate.

Ten wooden fingers leapt out and quickly knotted above the Coronary Bloodwood Demon's head and just as quickly fell down, firmly holding the Coronary Bloodwood Demon down!

The Coronary Bloodwood Demon clearly had much stronger roots than the Bloodsucking Wood Demon. When the Devil Tree Battle Soldier intentionally retracted its fingers, the Coronary Bloodwood Demon didn't get pushed to the ground, but instead stood straight up, not allowing its body to be pressed down.

"Zhan Ye, Dark Assault!"

"Ink Armor Spike!"

Zhan Ye's speed was the fastest of the three. Receiving the command, it became a black whirlwind and dashed towards the Coronary Bloodwood Demon!

The Coronary Bloodwood Demon's roots constantly darted up from the ground densely to try to stop Zhan Ye from nearing it.

"Ghost King, Rock Pressure!"

The Ghost King knew the majority of sixth rank and below rock type techniques. It almost didn't need an incantation. With a point

of its sword, the previously rotten ground suddenly became extremely dense. Under the control of the Ghost King, it became even sturdier than actual rocks!

The Coronary Bloodwood Demon's roots came from the ground. If the ground became harder, it was harder for its roots to pierce through, and the dwindling amount that did get through couldn't possibly stop the extremely fast Zhan Ye!

Extending its Ink Armor Spikes outwards, Zhan Ye's body was like a curled-up maggot. Facing its ink spike towards the Coronary Bloodwood Demon, it heavily pierced into its body!

Dark Corrosion!

After the Coronary Bloodwood Demon was pierced, Zhan Ye's dark type corrosive technique instantly started spreading, causing the entire upper body of the Coronary Bloodwood Demon to become black!

Heavenly Ripping Claw.

Demon Wood Root Puncture.

Hundred Ton Sword!

The three each cast a technique, and the Coronary Bloodwood Demon finally couldn't escape death. Under the last strike of the Ghost King, its body was almost squashed flat. It laid heavily in the

crater.

“Zhan Ye, rip open its body.” Chu Mu said.

Zhan Ye’s Ink Armor Spike had already completely corroded through the Coronary Bloodwood Demon’s defense. With its sixth rank full form offensive soul claw and seventh rank claws, it easily ripped into the body.

“Still no bloodsucking wood……” Chu Mu shook his head disappointingly. He handily retrieved the Coronary Bloodwood Demon’s soul core to keep it as food for his Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

“Ao? Ao!” The Devil Tree Battle Soldier didn’t give up. Using its sluggish arms to push the body aside, it pointed at a small, thumb-sized blood amber and looked at Chu Mu blankly.

Chu Mu’s attention quickly fell on the ground. He carefully looked at it and pulled it out from the Coronary Bloodwood Demon’s body.

“Old Li, what is this?” Taking the little red amber out, Chu Mu asked.

“I haven’t even seen this soul pet before, how would I know what is in it…….” Old Li jumped out of Chu Mu’s soul capture ring and glanced at the blood amber before saying with disdain.

“Eh, wait a second, let me see it again……” Suddenly, Old Li stole the blood amber away.

Old Li flipped it around for a while, sometimes thinking, sometimes tinkering. He even bit down on it with his teeth, looking like a devious trader figuring out the authenticity of a gold coin.

“Have you figured anything out yet?” Chu Mu said impatiently.

“Young master, this should be the combination of Coronary Blood Fat and Bloodsucking Wood, like the lineage of the organism. Though I can’t say its exact effect, you should try combining it with the Coronary Blood Fat you have; there may be surprising effects.” Old Li said.

“Is there any possibility of side effects?” Chu Mu asked.

“Nope, this organism already has the bloodline of a Coronary Blood Vine. The Coronary Blood Fat can be combined with this. Don’t you have the combining medicine given by the beautiful legged girl?” Old Li said.

Coronary Blood Fat and Bloodsucking Wood were both advanced soul items. To combine these two would be impossible for Chu Mu alone. Only a soul teacher could do it.

Ye Qingzi also knew that Chu Mu had been searching for Bloodsucking Wood. To help Chu Mu out, she concocted a flask to

combine Coronary Blood Fat and Bloodsucking Wood, saving Chu Mu a million gold. After all, that would be the price any other soul teacher would give.

Chu Mu didn't think much of it. He took the Coronary Blood Fat out and put the blood amber into it.

"Zizizi~~~~"

When the blood amber fell into the Coronary Blood Fat, it immediately let out blood colored gases and it dissolved into the fat……

"Pour the combining medicine in." Old Li said.

Chu Mu followed directions and poured the expensive medicine into the flask……

After the combining medicine went in, the blood colored gases immediately disappeared, and the splashing Coronary Blood Fat calmed down, slowly becoming a transparent blood-colored medicine.

"It calming down means that its edible, I just don't know what the effects are. You can let your Devil Tree Battle Soldier try." Old Li said.

Chu Mu hesitated for a while. If Ye Qingzi said that, Chu Mu would definitely let the Devil Tree Battle Soldier try it without

hesitation, but Old Li didn't know much about medicine at all, so Chu Mu had to decide whether or not there were side effects for eating it.

"Ao~~~~~~~~"

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a sound, displaying its willingness to try. Presumably, it was eager to raise its own power.

"If anything goes wrong, tell me immediately." Chu Mu passed the medicine to Devil Tree Battle Soldier and warned.

Devil Tree Battle Soldier nodded and didn't say much, decisively pouring the medicine into its mouth and finishing it.

Five seconds passed, and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's expression was still blank, not looking any strengthened.

A minute passed, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was still standing there, but its deeply sunken eyes slowly started turning red.

Five minutes passed, and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's eyes were emitting a bloodlust and viciousness.

"What's up?" Chu Mu asked. Chu Mu could feel evil tendencies within the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. This ball of evil tendencies made the Devil Tree Battle Soldier want to fight!

“Ao!!!!!!!!!!”

Suddenly, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out an angry roar, and its two arms shot towards two nearby trees, burying straight into each tree!

The two trees used to be dark green and dead looking, but when the Devil Tree Battle Soldier sent its arms in, these two trees completely shriveled, as if all its life essence were absorbed!!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier still had wounds from the fight just now, yet when the two trees completely shriveled, some wounds on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had quickly healed a bit!!

Seeing Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s actions and its healed wounds, Chu Mu was surprised even further.

“Strange, it isn’t Bloodsuck, because bloodsuck isn’t capable of sucking these plants……” Old Li rubbed its silver whiskers.

Chapter 225: The Strongest Absorbing, Life Force Absorbing (1)

“Ao~~~~~~~~~”

A long shout resounded from the gloomy forest, causing the encompassing tree leaves to visibly shake.

“Did you hear that shout?” said Old Zheng who had previously ambushed Chu Mu.

“Why are you so scared? Isn’t it just a soul pet’s shout?” said the coarse man wearing short sleeves.

“It seems to be the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s shout from the soul pet trainer before. That voice was like a wild beast with a steady voice, and I’m pretty sure that only the Devil Tree Battle Soldier can make that shout.” said the young man Ting Nan.

“Oh? Could it be that he entered the inner part of the Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s territory? Then he really is looking for death.” laughed Old Zheng.

“No wonder we haven’t been able to find him. It turns out he hid in the inner part of the Bloodsucking Wood Demon’s territory.” said the leader of the criminals, the dark skinned Brother Jiang. His face displayed a rather sinister smile.

“He probably isn’t too far from us. Let’s catch up to him.” said the short sleeved coarse man. After speaking, this fellow took the lead as he rode on his soul pet towards the origin of the shout. The others followed on their soul pets one after the other.

……

In the gloomy forest, all of the trees in the twenty meter range around the Devil Tree Battle Soldier were withered. The life force of these trees had all been absorbed by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, and had become its nutrients.

In the previous fight, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had lost one third of its fighting strength. After continuous absorbing, its fighting strength returned to its original state, and Chu Mu could further feel its coarse and wild aura that was similar to a wild beast. Such aura caused its strength to be in the process of increasing.

“Evolving? It’s also similar to the excited state of the Violent Blood Pupil strength increase?” Chu Mu looked at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, and couldn’t come to a real conclusion for it.

Presently, its eyes were scarlet red, and it very clearly was because of the special effect that the mixture of the Coronary Blood Fat and blood colored amber caused. Yet, Chu Mu couldn’t make clear of its sudden increase in strength, specifically whether it was temporary or whether it had obtained a true strengthening because of this unique spirit item.

“It can absorb trees, but the energy from these trees is too little. If it absorbs a hundred trees, it will barely be able to replenish its fighting strength. This will definitely be very effective in a fight.” Old Li rubbed his silver beard, and he continued to consider what this technique was that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier possessed.

“Do you know what this technique is yet?” asked Chu Mu.

“This... in my opinion, this technique is a bit similar to Bloodsuck...” Old Li could ultimately only give this answer.

Chu Mu drew back the corners of his lips. Old Li’s words were equivalent to nothing have being said, and Chu Mu might as well communicate with his Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

However, just as Chu Mu was planning to ask it what was different, Chu Mu’s soul remembrance suddenly caught a few soul pets rapidly rushing in this direction.

“Hu hu hu hu~~~~~”

The wind blew unnaturally, the noise of dead leaves being stepped on rang out and the sound of branches being broken was heard...

Chu Mu had already detected several people approach. A evil smile carrying a bit of bloody intent rose on Chu Mu’s face. These few fellows very evidently didn’t understand fighting in the wild forest. Otherwise, they wouldn’t make so much noise. These noises

were practically yelling at Chu MU: We're coming to kill you…"

"Perfect, let's see what effect this technique has." Chu Mu jumped onto the tree with evident proficiency. He had his three soul pets hide in the shadows of the trees and silently waited for these criminal soul pet trainers to appear.

The sounds grew closer and closer. These several schmucks ostensibly exposed their tracks and the short sleeved coarse man at the very front further stepped on a number of branches, allowing Chu Mu to instantly lock him down!

"Devil Tree, have your roots lie in wait a hundred meters ahead." Chu Mu used soul remembrance to order the Devil Tree Battle Soldier hidden in between the trees.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier silently stood under the gray colored treetops. In front of it were several rays of sunlight spilling down, but it didn't affect its hiding.

Without requiring any movement, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots were like vipers that silently wriggled underground and slowly set up a root trap a hundred meters ahead.

The short sleeved coarse man was riding an eighth phase Hunting Wolf. From its build, this soul pet should have undergone certain strengthening and its fighting strength could be compared to a few warrior rank soul pets…

The Hunting Wolf's face was malevolent, and its pale white hunting teeth were exposed to the air. As it ran, its mouth was open as if could savagely pounce at its prey at any time.

"It should should be near. That brat can't have ran far!" the coarse man stopped and turned around, searching everywhere for Chu Mu's tracks.

The short sleeved coarse man was a hundred meters away from his four companions. He always enjoyed running at the very front because he had a Hunting Wolf that was much faster than the others. He, who was always arrogant, naturally wanted to display his superiority.

Only, this fellow didn't know that fifty meters ahead was a grey colored treetop, where a pair of black eyes were staring at him. That cold face gradually cracked a merciless smile.

"Root Bind!"

Finally, Chu Mu gave the order!

If the short sleeved coarse man had continued to run, with his Hunting Wolf's speed, he had a certain small probability of being able to dodge the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's trap lying there.

However, this fellow had a type of courting death factor in his bones, and unexpectedly had stopped on the trap Chu Mu had set for him as he looked around everywhere. He practically had

presented his neck to the blade of the homicidal maniac, Chu Mu. if Chu Mu didn't kill him, he felt that he would be offending the great location he was in.

"Hua~~~~~"

The leaves covering the ground flew up and danced in the air as over ten extremely tenacious demon wood roots suddenly appeared. They quickly bounded the Hunting Wolf's four paws and extended up the legs of this four meter long Hunting Wolf, practically binding its entire body!

"Awuuu!!!!!"

The hunting wolf let out a panicked shout. As it tried to break its legs free and dodge, it discovered that it had been completely bounded by the ten roots, not letting it budge an inch.

The coarse man's face changed, and he immediately chanted an incantation, wanting to summon another soul pet to help him break free of his plight.

"Zhan Ye, Heavenly Splitting Claw!"

The dark attribute allowed Zhan Ye to easily hide its aura in the dark forest. Zhan Ye, in reality, was hiding not even twenty meters from the Hunting Wolf!

Using Dark Assault, the twenty meter distance was covered in

under a second, and Zhan Ye's incomparably sharp claws were already in front of the course man.

The sixth level full form offensive soul claw twinkled with starlight making Zhan Ye's claws possess more attacking properties. Heavenly Splitting Claw was used, and even though the short sleeved coarse man had already finished his Bug Pupa technique defense, the seventh rank defense was equivalently empty air to the eighth rank Heavenly Splitting Claw as the defense was easily ripped apart by Zhan Ye!

Ink Armor Spike!

Zhan Ye was already near his body, and the ink armor spikes on its body abruptly shot out. At the exact moment this soul pet trainer finished his incantation, the Ink Armor Spikes that ignored defense directly pierced through his useless fifth level soul armor, entering his chest and stomach, instantly piercing through!

"Hou!!!!!!!!"

Zhan Ye produced a bloody angry roar. The ink armor spikes on its back pierced and lifted up this fellow's body before ruthlessly throwing him off. Suddenly, a streak of blood spilled through the air and the captivating red droplets splattered all over the dried yellow leaves on the ground.

With the death of its master, how could the eighth phase Hunting Wolf survive? The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots full of a bloody intent appeared and punctured a myriad of holes in the eighth

phase Hunting Wolf; blood splattered…

The coarse short sleeved man was only separated by a hundred meters from everyone else, but the other four had only moved fifty meters before the soul pet trainer and his soul pet lost their lives. They lay there dripping in blood in front of the other four.

The four people were stunned by the scene in front of them; they never expected their team member to be killed so easily!

“Kill him for me!!” the dark skinned leader was angry, and the veins on his face bulged. He immediately summoned his Bloodsucking Wood Demon!

Old Zheng’s summoning speed was also very quick, and as he rode on his soul pet, he also summoned his Bloodsucking Wood Demon!

Sixth phase ninth stage, sixth phase eighth stage. The two Bloodsucking Wood Demons simultaneously locked down the Devil Tree Battle Soldier standing under two dark trees. They promptly threw of their branches on its body!

“Ao~~~~”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s dodging abilities were very poor and after seeing the four branches flying at it, it simply couldn’t dodge and allowed them to pierce its abdomen.

Yet, as the minute wooden needles appeared on the four branches, and began to absorb the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's blood, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier threw its arms forth, covering a distance of sixty meters, which respectively stabbed into the two Bloodsucking Wood Demon's abdomens.

"Hmph, isn't this courting death?! Bloodsuck, suck out all its blood!" sneered the dark skinned Brother Jiang.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots only had the ability to pierce through things, but his Bloodsucking Wood Demon could absorb blood!

The two Bloodsucking Wood Demons simultaneously absorbed and within a short period of time, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier lost half its blood and half its fighting strength!

"Transform it into a dry tree!" yelled Old Zheng as he had his Bloodsucking Wood Demon suck the blood.

"Ao~~~~~"

Suddenly, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out an angry roar, and a slight wriggle appeared on its two branches. As the speed of the wriggles grew faster, the wounds where it had been pierced by the four branches showed signs of healing!

Chu Mu was somewhat shocked as he looked at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. It had just lost practically half of its blood, but after

the branches began to wriggle, its blood not only stopped decreasing, but instead began to quickly gain back!

Being able to heal its wounds despite having its blood sucked by two Bloodsucking Wood Demons simultaneously meant that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's bloodsucking ability was over two times as fast as the two Bloodsucking Wood Demon's absorbing speed!

Chapter 226: The Strongest Absorbing, Life Force Absorbing (2)

"What happened?!" the dark skinned leader opened his eyes, and he looked at the wounds on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body slowly healing. Ultimately, those four roots directly fell off the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body.

Very quickly, this criminal leader abruptly discovered that indications of withering had appeared on his Bloodsucking Wood Demon's body as its life force was rapidly depleting!

In an identical circumstance with leader Brother Jiang, Old Zheng's sixth phase eighth stage Bloodsucking Wood Demon began to shrink, and its body looked like it was composed of shrivelled bones and dying wood after having its life force absorbed...

"Quick, break its branches!" the dark skinned man named Jiang responded by immediately giving an order to the Horn Beast he was riding on.

The Horn Beast's form was like a cow, and there were two horns on either side of its head. After the dark skinned leader gave an order, the Horn Beast made a loud noise and charged towards the two branches!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier had pretty much finished absorbing, and once it saw the Horn Beast launch its attack, it decisively recalled its two branches. The Horn Beast charged through empty air, and its horns smashed into a tree, crushing it.

“My Bloodsucking Wood Demon…” Old Zheng stupefyingly watched his own Bloodsucking Wood Demon.

His Bloodsucking Wood Demon had life force that was comparatively weaker among plant world soul pets. After the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s absorbing, it had lost nearly ¾ of its life force. The remaining ½ life force probably could not support this plant type soul pet if it continued to fight.

“His Devil Tree Battle Soldier has the Bloodsucking technique!!” said the young man Ting Nan at this moment.

From the situation just now, he was immediately able to discern that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier not only possessed a bloodsucking ability, but its bloodsucking speed was even faster than the speed of the two Bloodsucking Wood Demons combined!

“Enough with your rubbish. I’ll summon an elemental world soul pet, and you guys have your beast type soul pets deal with that Zhan Ye!” angrily roared the dark skinned leader. He recalled the Bloodsucking Wood Demon that had lost most of its fighting strength back into the soul pet space and summoned a Raging Flame Fairy.

Old Zheng quickly switched his soul pets too, and he changed the Bloodsucking Wood Demon for a seventh phase ninth stage Dark Fairy.

The other member previously didn’t summon his Bloodsucking

Wood Demon, and his two soul pets were already rushing at Zhan Ye as they were engaged in a close-ranged fight in the dim forest.

“Hmph, let’s see how powerful your Warbeast Mo Ye is!” the young man Ting Nan quickly locked onto Chu Mu’s Zhan Ye and gave his Mo Ye an order!

Ting Nan’s Mo Ye intentionally roared as if it was giving a challenge. Subsequently, it used the Dark Assault technique and rapidly flew in front of Zhan Ye, using its thick armor to ruthlessly smash into Chu Mu’s Zhan Ye!

Zhan Ye was facing two violent beasts, and didn’t notice Ting Nan’s Mo Ye. It wasn’t able to dodge in time and was knocked flying. Its body flew nearly 20 meters and smashed an old rotten tree!

Seeing that Zhan Ye had been injured by the charge, the other two violent beasts followed up and threw themselves at the fallen Zhan Ye. Their wild nature of attacks were quickly used!

A smile appeared on the young man, Ting Nan’s, face. With his understanding towards his soul pets, this charge with thick ink armor would definitely cause huge damage to that Mo Ye!

As for Chu Mu, who was silently standing under the tree, he glanced over at Zhan Ye, but quickly withdrew his gaze.

Zhan Ye was a soul pet that Chu Mu had spent 4 million gold

coins to strengthen. Moreover, it was his only full form soul armor soul pet. Even if Ting Nan's Mo Ye with an outstanding dark attribute reached the seventh phase, it wouldn't necessarily be able to deal that much damage to Zhan Ye which life force exceeded normal soul pets by six times.

"Hou!!!!!!!!"

The warlike Zhan Ye was angry. His six-fold self healing ability was slowly healing the wounds from being knocked back by that Zhan Ye. Its fighting strength wasn't weakened in the slightest, and it courageously charged at Ting Nan's Zhan Ye!

The sixth level full form offensive soul claw's effects were attached to Zhan Ye's claws, and its ruthless strike ripped apart the weak ink armor of Ting Nan's Mo Ye!

Zhan Ye's fighting method had always been very barbarous. Moreover, when it was fighting against multiple enemies, it would often directly bear the attack of other soul pets before rigidly locking his eyes on one of them and went after them until it died!

Presently, Zhan Ye was using this fighting method!

Just now, when Zhan Ye had smashed the armor of Ting Nan's Mo Ye, it had suffered the ripping claws of those two violent beasts before launching at Ting Nan's Mo Ye!

Leaping up, tiger body flying through the air!

Fragmenting Steps!!!

The effect of the sixth level full form offensive soul armor was also attached to Zhan Ye's front paws. Suddenly, the surrounding five meters of ground was smashed by a stamp while Ting Nan's Mo Ye was knocked flying. The wound from earlier was ripped open wider!

Death Ray!!

An angry roar, a dark light began fermenting in Zhan Ye's throat. As Ting Nan's Mo Ye was still in the air, Zhan Ye promptly spat the Death Ray out, and its force exploded in between the tree tops!!

"Hong~~~~" Ting Nan's Mo Ye was knocked flying once again. Its body was battered all over as it fell from high above, smashing countless branches before crashing to the ground. It didn't even have the strength to stand up.

Ting Nan was stunned. He looked stupefyingly at his Mo Ye, which had been battered so badly and for a moment he couldn't say anything!

"Full form offensive soul claw... this brat is too rich..." Old Zheng also noticed the savagery of this Warbeast Mo Ye. His sharp eyes further took note of the star-like radiance that condensed on Zhan Ye's claws each time it attacked.

It was the radiance effect of a full form offensive soul claw!

Soul equipments were always luxury goods, especially sixth level and above soul equipment. Chu Mu's full form offensive soul equipment costed 10 million, and these people would only barely be able to afford it if they sold all their assets!

There was a big difference between having soul equipment versus not having soul equipment. Zhan Ye's inherent fighting strength was powerful enough to allow it to fight against normal seventh phase commanders. By adding on the full form soul equipment, it definitely wasn't a problem to face three seventh phase commander ranks alone.

"Enough with the nonsense, kill him fast! What are your soul pets doing? Are they just watching from the sidelines?!" angrily roared the dark skinned Brother Jian as he displayed the mannerism of a leader.

The three of them each summoned an elemental soul pet that respectively were a seventh phase fifth stage Raging Flame Fairy, a seventh phase ninth stage Dark Fairy, and an eighth phase third stage Wind Fairy.

"Wait, why do we have to use elemental soul pets to deal with his Devil Tree Battle Soldier? Can't my Fire Cat Demon counter it?" softly asked the soul pet trainer without a Bloodsucking Wood Demon.

"Even if your Fire Cat Demon was stronger, it wouldn't be any

use. With the bloodsucking, it would be able to heal even if it was being burned. Elemental soul pets don't have blood and the blood won't be absorbed. Why don't you listen when I tell you to study more and gain knowledge?!" said Old Zheng

This soul pet trainer finally understood. He specially chanted an incantation, adding Dragon Wind's effects onto his Wind Fairy, allowing it to control the wind type better.

The other two people also chanted incantations, adding double damage to their soul pets respectively.

Chanting an incantation, the Wind Fairy used the fastest speed and a muddy stream of air gradually appeared in the dark and indiscernible forest.

Very soon, this stream of air rose up, transforming into a hurricane that collected countless leaves and branches as it swept towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Facing the hurricane's onslaught, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier decisively buried its two arms into the ground, rendering its body firmly stuck into the ground!

The hurricane swept past and the powerful destruction force ravaged the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body. Stream after stream of air were like cutting knife blades with exceptional power; Several tiny scars appeared on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body ...

Destruction Ray!

The moment the hurricane swept past, the Dark Fairy's Destruction Ray appeared and imposingly flew towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

Its body was already locked there so it couldn't dodge. The Destruction Ray that was stronger than the Death Ray exploded on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body causing it to ulcerate!

"Ao!!!!!"

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was in a blood frenzy state. No matter how severe the attacks were, it wouldn't make it feel pain. When the Raging Flame Fairy's Burn arrived, its demon wood roots and branches simultaneously shot out!

"Continue attacking and we'll see who dies first!" sneered the dark skinned leader as he also ignored the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's demon wood branch attack.

The three elemental soul pets were extremely terrifying, and they didn't have any blood that could be absorbed. The dark skinned leader understood this bit of common sense and if he got rid of one of Chu Mu's soul pets, it would be even easier to kill him!

"Ao!!!!!!!"

Raging flames burning its body, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let

out an extremely frenzied cry. Its treebark skin was already showing visible signs of charring, but it still used the technique. The branches on its right and left arms respectively pierced through the Dark Fairy and Wind Fairy's bodies and its roots ruthlessly pierced the Raging Flame Fairy.

"It'll die soon, let me send it on its way!" seeing that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was being bombarded by different attributed techniques so that its body was growing deformed, Old Zheng gave a smile. He ordered his Dark Fairy to continue releasing Destruction Rays, giving the Devil Tree Battle Soldier its last attack.

The Destruction Ray took form and fiercely struck the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body!

Its body ulcerated once more, and it practically transformed into a burnt wood stack without any use.

"Ao!!!!!!!!!!"

Another angry roar came out, but after the Destruction Ray, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier hadn't died. Unexpectedly, its ulcerated body showed small signs of healing!

An engulfing storm left it with a ravaged body and the torrential flames made its skin burn!

Only, just as the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's life force was about to

be completely dried up, wriggling appeared on its demon wood branches and roots. Moreover, with each wriggle, it brought the Devil Tree Battle Soldier a large amount of life force!

This life force energy poured into its body as it suffered from attacks!

Ravagement and recovery were happening at the same time!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was on the brink of death and after suffering from four or five fierce attacks, it was still deadlocked with the three soul pets for nearly twenty seconds!

Chapter 227: Multikill, Bloody Devil Tree Battle Soldier

“Ao~~~~~~~~~~~~”

With an angry roar from the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, its demon wood roots simultaneously sucked at the three elemental soul pets’ lives. The three elemental soul pets’ life force quickly weakened!

The weaker the life force, the lower the fighting strength. The three elemental soul pets started chanting slower and slower, and their techniques also grew weaker.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was still sucking, but with the weakening of the three elemental soul pets, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body slowly recovered!

“How is this possible!!” The dark skinned Brother Jiang opened his eyes wide as he could, as he looked at the dying Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s wounds slowly heal.

The other two were also dumbstruck, completely not expecting the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to be able to suck their Elemental World soul pets’ lives.

“You……didn’t you say elemental world soul pets had no blood to be sucked?……” The soul pet trainer without a Bloodsucking Wood Demon said.

Old Zheng was also profusely confused. The Bloodsucking Wood Demon's Bloodsuck could suck plant world and beast world soul pets because they were the only two kingdoms with blood vessels, having the life sustaining blood.

Elemental world soul pets were completely born from elemental matter, devoid of organs, blood vessels, and even a fleshly body. Under such circumstances, it was impossible for it to be sucked of blood.

Yet, what was hard to explain was, this Devil Tree Battle Soldier could even suck their elemental world soul pets and transform it into its life force, recovering at clearly visible rates!

On the tree, Chu Mu stood and watched as his Devil Tree Battle Soldier quickly transformed the life force of the three elemental world soul pets into his. He forcefully stopped the incantation that he was ready to cast, and looked surprised at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

"Ah, I remember!" Young master, I remember, I know what technique it is!!" Suddenly, Old Li's voice echoed through Chu Mu's brain.

"What technique?" Chu Mu himself was also confused, because the Bloodsuck he knew indeed could only suck beast and plant world soul pets. And before, when the Devil Tree Battle Soldier pushed its roots into normal trees, it could take their life force as well.

“Life Force Absorb! It’s one of the most powerful sucking abilities. As long as its a life form, even if it isn’t a soul pet, one could suck the life away and transform it into one’s own.” Old Li said.

“Life Force Absorb?” It was also Chu Mu’s first time hearing such a technique name. When his eyes fell on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body, he was surprised to see that it had already recovered half of its fighting strength, and the three elemental soul pets were on the verge of death. The one with the least life force was already sucked to the point where it no longer had a body!

“Young master, Life Force Absorb is much faster than Bloodsuck, usually determined by the sucking organism’s life force. Your Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s life force is about twice a normal soul pets, meaning in one second, it could suck 10% of this doubled life force. This doubled 10% is equivalent to a normal soul pet’s 20%. If your Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s life force was like your cockroach Mo Ye, six times a normal soul pet, then in one second it would be able to suck 60% of a normal soul pet’s life force!” Old Li said.

Old Li said a bunch of things, yet Chu Mu was still slightly confused, not understanding the concept of the speed of the Life Force Absorb.

Old Li rolled his eyes, “Anyways, the sucking speed is 10% of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s life force limit every second. This means, the higher the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s life force, the more damage his Absorb does!”

“Your Devil Tree Battle Soldier is continuously sucking three

elemental soul pets' lives. This means every second it is recovering 30% of its life, yet their elemental world soul pets were losing 10% of their lives every second. In such a situation, how could they possibly kill your old tree?" Old Li smiled.

With this messy jumble of explanations from Old Li, Chu Mu finally understood the power of Life Force Absorb. As long as the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's life force was stronger, it meant that the Life Force Absorb's speed would be faster. Even if its one second 10%, when its life force was massive, this 10% could mean half a normal soul pet's life!

Finally, when the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's fighting strength recovered around ⅔, the three elemental world soul pets were all near their ends. The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out another angered roar, and used its roots to throw the Storm Fairy and Dark Fairy away.

The Storm Fairy and Dark Fairy were already nearly lifeless. With this throw, they were clearly dead!

Very quickly, the feedback of the soul pact breaking hit the two soul pet trainers' souls and wounded them, causing their faces to quickly pale!

The dark skinned leader reacted faster than the other two, but the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots had already disregarded the flames and wrapped around the Raging Flame Fairy's body as continuous demon wood root pierces caused the weakened fairy to be unable to cope.

“Quickly come back!” The dark skinned Brother Jiang finally finished the retracting soul incantation, but he was still a step too slow. The Raging Flame Fairy was heavily yanked by the bloodthirsty Devil Tree Battle Soldier and didn’t get enveloped in the retraction incantation. Following that, nearly seventy demon wood roots pierced it through, causing the Raging Flame Spirit’s life force to go down by 15% every second.

The flames on its body slowly disappeared, and the Raging Flame Fairy ultimately couldn’t escape this terrifying Life Force Absorb technique, becoming a small fire that dissipated with a chilly wind from the depths of the forest.

“Ao~~~~~~~~”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s fighting strength still wasn’t completely recovered, so its roots quickly attacked the dark skin leader’s Horn Beast!

The Horn Beast had already run in front of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s face. Those two long horns heavily slammed into the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body, creating two large holes in the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s torso area!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier had its roots deadly locked into the ground, not allowing its body to move. Just as the Horn Beast attacked, the demon wood on its body suddenly grew out and became a flexible vine wood that locked the Horn Beast!

Brother Jiang saw that his Horn Beast was trapped but didn't show much fear. The Horn Beast's outer defense was very high. Even his Bloodsucking Wood Demon couldn't easily break through. As long as its defense was good, not allowing the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots to pierce to its blood vessels, it wouldn't be able to be sucked of life!

But, this soul pet trainer was too naive.

His Bloodsucking Wood Demon had an initial stage blood Demon Wood energy crystal. Its attack was limited, so naturally it didn't break through the Horn Beast's defense.

Yet, Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier already had intermediate Demon Wood. Though it couldn't easily rip apart the Horn Beast's defense, piercing through wasn't anything difficult!

"Huo~~~~~~~~~~~"

Suddenly, the Horn Beast let out a pained cry. This sound made Brother Jiang's face go white, as he watched his Horn Beast get pierced by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's demon wood!

The Horn Beast's life force was relatively high, but it was still quickly absorbed by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. Its life was quickly being transformed into the life of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

The Horn Beast was tightly bound by the Devil Tree Battle

Soldier, only able to kick its short four hooves around. Yet, as it was losing its life, its body quickly shriveled up……

The dark skinned leader naturally couldn't just watch as his soul pet was sucked clean. He quickly started an incantation to summon his third soul pet to save the Horn Beast.

"Ghost King, Death Blade!"

Chu Mu smiled coldly. Taking the opportunity that the person was frantically casting an incantation, he commanded the Ghost King that was in ambush to attack!

The Ghost King had the ghost type. In heavily shady areas, it could hide itself. Brother Jiang didn't even notice the existence of Ghost King!

Death Blade!! Sixth rank ghost type soul technique!!

The Ghost King had long since finished its Monarch Ghost Transformation. After its power doubled, it was more terrifying than seventh phase beast type soul pets. With the sweep of the Death Blade, even the light beams that fell down between the leaves were cut in half!

"Shua!!!!!"

The Ghost King's technique was very dominant, not giving Brother Jiang a chance to finish his incantation. The Death Blade

flew through his neck!!!

A head fell down. A ball of death surrounded the area it was severed at. After a second, fresh blood splattered out of the wound!

The Death Blade's ghost blade aura didn't just disappear because of the guy's death. It passed further through Old Zheng's arm. Without any preparation, Old Zheng's arm was immediately corroded by the black aura, showing heavy signs of rot!

Brother Jiang didn't even have time to let out a scream. His head fell, body fell, and blood splattered everywhere.

Old Zheng let out a miserable scream, as he held his rotting arm and rolled around on the ground as the beast type soul pet he just summoned jumped straight towards Ghost King!

The Ghost King was only at the fifth phase eighth stage, but any commander under seventh phase wouldn't even think of competing against this powerful monarch rank soul pet. Barely needing an incantation, the Ghost King stared hard and a large sprout of stalagmite-like rocks appeared, heavily sending the soul pet away!

Its Monarch Ghost Curved Sword fell down, and a sharp ghost aura cut right through its abdomen before it even fell to the ground. This soul pet didn't even have time to let out an anguished howl before its body was cut open. After its body decomposed into black gas quickly, only its white bones fell down to the ground.

“Houhouhou!!!!!!” Reaching sixth phase third stage, Zhan Ye let out an intimidating roar and used Heavenly Ripping Claw to rip the last beast to pieces.

Though full of wounds, this time Zhan Ye solely relied on his powerful self healing and six times life force, getting rid of three beasts without even using Broken Limb Rebirth a single time!

Chapter 228: End of the Dark Forest

“That’s…… that’s……” That soul pet trainer without Bloodsucking Wood Demon backed off frighteningly, watching shocked the Ghost King. His face was already completely pale with fear!

Ghost King, monarch rank soul pet. How powerful was its imposing manner? Especially with the dense ghost aura, those with weak mental support were easily pushed down by such a powerful ghost type aura!

“Ghost King, this is a Ghost King, god, a monarch rank soul pet!!!!”

The Young man Ting Nan was already completely stunned. How could he have known that Chu Mu would summon a monarch rank soul pet. One must know that those who had monarch rank soul pets were all experts that they didn’t dare to even talk to. These experts were either all famous already, or had a high position at some faction!

“Ao~~~~~~~~~~”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier suddenly pushed both its arms into the ground, sending ten fingers into the ground!

Wood Finger Prison!

Ten fingers pierced through the ground and suddenly poked up from around the soul pet trainer's surroundings, quickly tying up at the top of the person's head and trapped him in the prison!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's arm pulled upwards, and its wood fingers started to retract. Very quickly, the soul pet trainer was restricted to the ground!!

The soul pet trainer's body was already weak. With the Wood Finger Prison wrapped down tightly, it even cut straight through its skin, causing ten bloody marks to appear!

"Ten Ton Sword!!!"

Chu Mu let out a command and, with the Ghost King's two hands around its sword, its pure power slash went straight for this soul pet trainer's body. This soul pet trainer had already cast an incantation to protect himself, but it was simply too weak to stop the Ghost King's sharp blade!

With the blade falling down, this soul pet trainer's body was shattered to chunks, causing blood and flesh to splatter outwards from the sunken crater.

Looking at this soul pet trainer die horribly, the teen Ting Nan was already numb with fear. He would never have thought that the soul pet trainer he tricked was actually a soul master with a monarch rank soul pet.

With his three powerful soul pets, he continuously killed four people. Such strength was already considered an expert in the entire Thousand Wood City, and for some reason, Ting Nan felt that the man who, sitting apathetically on the tree top, watched the bloody scene unfold didn't even use his full power, possibly having even stronger soul pets!

The others were all dead, so how did Ting Nan dare still stay there. Trembling with fear and treipdation, he summoned a wing type soul pet and wanted to escape into the skies, away from Chu Mu's three bloody soul pets.

Yet, Ting Nan's soul pet had just taken off when the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots darted out from underground, wrapping around its lower limbs and forcefully yanked it back to the ground, not giving Ting Nan a chance to escape.

The Ghost King stepped its four meter tall body forward and enveloped Ting Nan and his soul pets in its shadow. Its two ghost pupils burned into the teen's eyes. The moment the Ghost King's Curved Sword fell, it would definitely end the teen's life.

"Let me..... let me go, I beg of you..... I was forced by them to do this, I actually didn't want to hurt you....." Ting Nan was already pale with fear, begging Chu Mu to let him go.

Chu Mu looked apathetically and said dimly, "How long have you been in Thousand Wood City?""

"Me..... one year..... around one year....." Ting Nan didn't dare

to lie anymore, giving Chu Mu the complete truth.

"Have you heard any news about the Ancient Azure Devil Tree?" Chu Mu continued.

"Ancient Azure Devil Tree?" Ting Nan's eyes spun and, after a moment of hesitation, he replied, "I know, I know, I can lead you there as long as you don't kill me……"

Chu Mu shook his head as he said apathetically, "Your death is certain. Saying it or not simply changes the way you die."

When he spoke, Chu Mu slowly lifted his right arm up. In his right palm was a calm, burning ball of White Demonic Devil Flame. This Devil Flame let out piercing cold air, causing this black-hearted young man to start shaking all over!

With a light wave, the white demonic devil flames flew straight into Ting Nan. Before he even reacted, the flames went straight into him and started to burn his soul!

"Ah!!!!!!!!"

A hair-raising scream resonated through the dark forest. Ting Nan's five senses were pinched together in pain, rolling around painfully on the ground.

"Kill me……kill me please……please end my life……"

The burning of a soul was unbearably painful. In the beginning, when Chu Mu had just signed a contract with the White Nightmare, he had wanted to end his own life countless times.

Now, Ting Nan was withstanding the white demonic devil flame, which was even more powerful than the white devil flames alone. This pain definitely wasn't something a normal person could withstand!

Chu Mu's palm slowly closed, and the flames burning Ting Nan died out.

"From what I've heard, pass……pass through…… the Bloodsucking Wood Demon's territory, walk north, it will get darker and darker…… at the end of this dark forest, there will be an Ancient Azure Devil Tree……" Ting Nan finally opened his mouth, clearly unable to withstand Chu Mu's torture method any longer.

"Zhan Ye." Receiving the information, Chu Mu didn't hesitate any longer, calmly telling Zhan Ye.

Zhan Ye understood Chu Mu's meaning. Slowly walking up behind Ting Nan, as if not moving at all, its arm simply lifted up slightly and fell down.

Yet after this nearly invisible movement, a sharp line of blood came out of Ting Nan's neck. This blood slowly started oozing blood, more and more, until finally spraying it out…… Ting Nan's

body spasmed a few times before falling down, eyes dull, and the life leaving his body quickly.

"Old Li, see if he has anything valuable." Chu Mu said to Old Li.

Old Li jumped out of Chu Mu's Soul Capture Ring and very diligently swept through the corpses, quickly swiping the spatial rings of the corpses into his hands.

"All of its just some garbage. A bunch of soul cores, a few soul crystals, and the rest is medicine bottles. The only valuable stuff are things you can't use as well, so everything added together is only about 5 million gold." Old Li said.

"Pick out the valuable things and throw away the useless one." Chu Mu's spatial ring was limited. Especially since he was already holding this many soul cores, Chu Mu was too lazy to carry anything not too valuable.

After collecting the corpses' wealth, Chu Mu didn't stay for much longer. After all, the smell of blood could easily attract cruel soul pets to appear. Chu Mu didn't want to get accidentally surrounded by some soul pet species group.

Walking north for a distance, Chu Mu found a relatively safe place to sit down and rest.

Of course, Chu Mu himself didn't need much rest. The ones who needed rest were the Devil Tree, Zhan Ye, and the Ghost King, who

all had just experienced a battle.

“Life Force Absorb, with this technique, beating Yu He’s Hundred Tree Female Demon would be much easier.” Chu Mu said.

“Ao~~~~ Ao~~~~~~~” After becoming stronger, Devil Tree Battle Soldier was also elated, letting out a few calls.

“Rest well, though life force can be absorbed through your technique, you still expended a lot of stamina.” Chu Mu patted Devil Tree on the shoulder.

Soul pets’ fighting strength were naturally affected by life force and stamina. Now, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had basically limitless life force, but if its stamina couldn’t hold on, its fighting strength would decrease still..... “Speaking of which, did you grow a stage again?” Chu Mu suddenly noticed when patting the Devil Tree’s shoulder that it grew again.

Just not long ago, Devil Tree Battle Soldier had gone from sixth phase sixth stage to the seventh stage. With the combination of the Coronary Blood Fat and the blood colored amber creating a real strengthening effect, it made the Devil Tree Battle Soldier raise another stage right after. This gave Chu Mu a pretty big surprise. This meant that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was sixth phase eighth stage already.

If they found some high level soul item able to strengthen Devil Tree Battle Soldier on this journey to the Ancient Azure Devil Tree,

raising the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to seventh phase shouldn't be an issue. After all, other than using a demon wood heart in Gangluo City, the Devil Tree had not underwent any high level soul item strengthen. Through some even stronger soul item's strengthening, breaking the bottleneck of sixth phase was very hopeful.

"Old Li, do you think the kid's words are reliable? That there's an Ancient Azure Devil Tree at the end of this dark forest?" Chu Mu looked into the pitch black and gloomy north.

"It should be true. The Ancient Azure Devil Tree was also known as the Ground Quality Devil Tree. It usually laid at the intersection of two different forests. This dark forest should extend hundreds of miles. After a hundred miles there will still be the Yuan Forest's green forests or rolling mountain ranges. Presumably, it is possible that an Ancient Azure Devil Tree grows at the end of this dark forest." Old Li said.

"Looks like there's still a very long way to go……" Looking at the endless dark forest, Chu Mu laughed bitterly.

Such atmosphere forests Chu Mu rarely walked. The depressing aura always made one feel strange, as if there was always a pair of eyes in the dark woods, watching coldly.

Once in a while, a chilling wind blew by as well. Of Chu Mu's three soul pets, Zhan Ye had dark type, Devil Tree Battle Soldiers loved forests, and Ghost King was ghost type, so they all liked this dark forest. However, Chu Mu was still a normal person, naturally wanting to walk in lighter, verdant, and vital environments.

Chapter 229: Marsh Corpse Hand

After resting for an entire day, Chu Mu continued to advance.

He followed the dark forest's path where it was dusky like a black night. Chu Mu even wondered if some departed spirit world soul pets would appear in this corrosive aura of the dim forest.

Departed spirit world soul pets normally were enveloped by the aura of death, and slowly absorbed this aura from the abandoned corpses in the wild, manifesting into a creature.

Chu Mu had very few contact with departed spirit world soul pets, and he had very little understanding of them. It was said that there was a large piece of land that was habitat to countless departed spirits on. That place was filled with departed spirit world soul pets...

After passing through a muddy patch of earth that was like a swamp, Chu Mu could clearly feel the density of the death aura. This dense death aura made breathing much harder.

"Gezhi Gezhi~~~~~~"

Suddenly, a noise that would make one's blood run cold came from the dead tree marshy area. It sounded like some savage creature was chewing bones!

Chu Mu raised his vigilance, and he released his soul

remembrance, searching for the source of the sound.

Suffering from the effects of death aura, Chu Mu's soul remembrance had a limited range it could search. Moreover, that soul pet clearly was extremely adept at hiding as its soul remembrance, as it wasn't able to locate it.

"Gezhi Gezhi~~~~~~~"

Another sound, this time closer. He could feel that it was moving towards him.

An indescribable panic arose in Chu Mu's heart.

"Nong!!!!!!!!"

The Ghost King standing behind Chu Mu suddenly lifted its monarch ghost blade and let out an angry roar in a certain direction!

The Ghost King's majesty was extremely powerful and when it roared, a dense ghost aura swept up and like a black tornado, swept forwards!

After the black ghost aura appeared, the silhouette of a floating creature faintly appeared on the indiscernible path ahead. This extremely strange creature's body was practically transparent and if it wasn't enveloped by ghost aura, he never would have seen its body.

“What is that?!” Chu Mu looked with astonishment at the creature hidden in the cold fog ahead.

It’s silhouette outlined a human’s figure. It seemed to have hair, it was covered in rags, its two arms hung down and its head drooped down. Its entire person seemed to be like a person that was hanged in midair...

“Young master, don’t panic. That’s a specter type soul pet, and its clearly the soul of a soul pet trainer which has borne the aura of death for countless years before being refined into being.” said Old Li.

“Specter type?” Chu Mu had only heard of this type of soul pets. However, he who had lived in a narrow-minded region that had never actually seen a specter type soul pet, especially a human form specter type soul pet.

“A majority of soul pets cultivate souls, and their souls are relatively strong. After their body dies, their souls are attached to an unmoving corpse and they will bear the long term permeation of death aura giving a definite chance of transforming into a specter. This is similar to those elemental kingdom soul pets where they are born from some spirit good and receive the nurturing of their element for a long time...”

Feeling the intimidation of the Ghost King’s powerful ghost type aura, that specter soul pet that seemed to be hanging itself didn’t dare approach Chu Mu and merely floated in the distance...

“That is the most low, specter rank, specter type soul pet. It practically has no offensive capabilities and can only use a few interference and restrictive techniques. Young master doesn’t have to be worried.” said Old Li.

Chu Mu nodded his head. Seeing that the Ghost King could subdue this creature, he bravely walked forward.

However, the moment he stepped a few steps forward, that specter type soul pet retreated in fear as if it had seen some terrifying object.

A cold gale blew over from some unknown place, hitting Chu Mu’s face. The dense aura of death made it so that Chu Mu had trouble breathing.

“E wu~~~”

“E wu~~~~~~~”

Strange sounds resounded from under the marsh, and these noises were like something was stuck in a throat and something abnormally hard was happening. It sounded a bit terrifying.

Chu Mu immediately creased his eyebrows. Right now his soul remembrance seemed to be limited by something for some mysterious reason, and he was unable to search around.

This situation normally would only occur when one's soul was locked up, or there was some powerful mental suppression. Only, Chu Mu couldn't feel the mental power of some creature pressing on his body. It was merely the surrounding strange atmosphere that fully inhibited his soul remembrance.

"Eh, young master... I suggest that you summon that black deer horse... then recall your current three soul pets..." Old Li's voice became rather odd.

Although Chu Mu didn't understand, he still recalled Zhan Ye, Devil Tree and Ghost King before gradually summoning the Night Thunder Dream Beast in front of him.

Chu Mu jumped on the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body and to remain safe, he immediately had the Night Thunder Dream Beast enter its Night Dance state.

Within the shadows, the Night Thunder Dream Beast could walk on air. As the Night Thunder Dream Beast proceeded forward, it stepped higher up, gradually walking into midair....

"Run with your fastest speed, and once you leave this marsh we'll talk." Old Li's voice came, only, this time his voice didn't come from Chu Mu's soul capture ring into his mind, instead it was right in front of Chu Mu.

Chu Mu was shocked and watched Old Li disappear in front of him instantly.

“Ewu!!!!!!”

“Ewu!!!!!!!”

A terrifying shout abruptly came from under the marsh and Chu Mu abruptly realized something.

“Night, Extreme Speed, run forward and don’t stop!” hastily said Chu Mu.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast also became aware of danger and tilted its head as it didn’t step on the marsh and ran over the dead tree marsh!!

“Ewuwu!!!”

“Ewuwuwu!!!!!!!!!”

A completely ulcered arm extremely frighteningly shot out from under the marsh. Its palm was like a ghost claw and coated on top was a terrifying corpse poison!

This hand happened to snatch at the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s four limbs ostensibly, wanting to ruthlessly drag it under the marsh!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s dodging abilities were not inferior to Mo Xie’s. As it stepped in the air, its body suddenly

swayed left and right, nimbly dodging this terrifying arm that shot out quickly.

“Gulu Gulu Gulu~~~~~~~~”

The mud in the marsh began to boil as countless black bubbles erupted in the bud. Each time they exploded, they would splash black-colored fluid and within each fluid were arms, hands and bony palms. They wanted to directly drag Chu Mu and the Night Thunder Dream Beast in!

“Chasing Wind Pursuing Moon!”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s running speed increased as a special stream of air further began to coil around its body. Its run amidst the dead tree marsh with numerous claws was like it was stepping on these terrifying claws as it ran!

It speed grew increasingly quick. The Night Thunder Dream Beast reached a speed three times its original full strength run. Such a speed was already extremely close to the speed MO Xie used Instant Assault and moreover it was a continuous run!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s endurance was enough to allow it to run an entire night maintaining this speed. It passed through this large swamp full of claws, corpse hands and bony palms before it was possible to see that short old leopard cat...

Chu Mu turned around and looked. A few beast type soul pets

that had originally come out to find prey and hadn't evaded the danger were dragged alive under the marsh by those ruthless corpse hands. As he looked, Chu Mu felt a wave of alarm, as he never expected the marsh to gather such a group of terrifying objects.

"Young master, you also saw just now. If there are a ceaseless number of creatures dragged into the marsh, the death aura in the marsh will grow heavier and the corpses will grow more. After nearly 100 years of such a vicious cycle, these terrifying Marsh Corpse Hands will appear..." Old Li who had run to a safe place let out a long sigh of relief.

Chu Mu was already used to Old Li fleeing from danger and asked: "Then aren't there thousands upon ten thousands of departed spirit world soul pets in the marsh?"

Old Li extended his leopard cat claw before swaying left and right: "No, no. The Marsh Corpse Hands aren't thousands upon ten thousands of departed world soul pets; instead, it's only one departed world soul pet."

"One?" Chu Mu was slightly astonished as he looked at the innumerable corpse arms extending from the marsh. It really was hard to believe that it was only one soul pet...

"Departed spirit world soul pets are quite special. A number of them have the ability to devour each other and those corpses that are dragged into the marsh will become a part of that soul pet's body. In truth, underneath those arms that you saw is definitely a master corpse, and that master corpse is this main soul pet's body.

In my opinion, this Marsh Corpse Hand is roughly a commander nearing a monarch and about the seventh phase. If it was even a bit stronger, it would be rather hard to escape.

Of course, if young master is interested, you can go and capture it and play around. With the Nine Tailed Inferno Fox's existence and further with the White Nightmare's other type, there's a possibility to defeat it." said Old Li.

"Even if I capture this soul pet, how will it fight?" Chu Mu's expression was outlandish as he spoke.

"Of course it can fight. In truth, the marsh is its field and after you capture it, it will able to take the lead to use the field. In other words it'll become a portable marsh. Moreover, in this marsh, it will be able to use attacks at will. The Marsh Corpse Hand you currently see isn't very strong, and this marsh was naturally formed. The marsh field it currently possesses is only approximately 20 meters in perimeter. The reason it'll feel like untold numbers, or in other words seems like those corpse hands cover the entire marsh, is because it used Illusion. Don't tell me you didn't feel that you couldn't release your soul remembrance?" said Old Li.

"Illusion? Is it similar to the Dream technique?" Chu Mu heard another new technique.

"That's about right, but there's also a difference. This soul pet's way of fighting is extremely particular, and many people who

don’t understand it will fall into its trap. If young master feels that you have space with your soul pacts, then you really can afford to think about it.” said Old Li.

“Forget about it. This thing is strange. Perhaps it doesn’t eat soul crystals and wants to eat flesh to grow....” Chu Mu shook his head and didn’t plan on contracting this soul pet.

Chapter 230: Bell Noise Concubine

“Young master doesn’t have to worry about this. Soul crystals and soul cores are energy, and even humans can use them as food to allay hunger. Such a soul pet will definitely be able to use soul crystals and soul cores to train and eat. Of course, if you occasionally give it flesh to eat, it will definitely be even happier. Moreover, the more corpses are inside its marsh field, the stronger it will be.” said Old Li.

Chu Mu bitterly laughed. Although this soul pet was unique, it still gave Chu Mu the creeps and wasn’t one of his ideal soul pets, so he didn’t have any intentions of capturing it.

After leaving this extremely fatal marsh, Chu Mu gradually discovered that the sunlight was able to shine into the forest and that the dense gloomy air was slowly dispersing, giving one a feeling of seeing the sun and sky again.

As he continued to walk forward, it was like there were two different worlds-green versus black, sunlight versus darkness, nature versus corrosion…

Old Li indicated that there were two locations where the plant forest changed that a Ancient Azure Devil Tree could appear. Chu Mu began to search, but didn’t find an Ancient Azure Devil Tree, merely discovering a forest of flowers instead!

In Chu Mu’s memories he had seen a flower sea. It flowed and blew in the wind; the multitude of colors fluctuated giving others a

beautiful sight to behold.

The reason why the world of flowers in front of him wasn't called a flower sea was because these flowers were all blooming special plants. Just like countless trees blossoming from flowers, they blew in the wind, fluttering about like floating snow...

"There surprisingly is such a beautiful scenery after the dark forest..." a light smile rose on Chu Mu's face as he stared at this gorgeous flower forest and his taut emotions gradually relaxed.

A fragrant wind blew over; it was like the fragrance of a woman, and a faint inhale would make one relax, and a large inhale would bewitch someone.

Contrary to the safety of the dark forest, the aura of life here was extremely dense. Whilst walking here, one unconsciously would forget about his or her worries and enjoy the sight and smell...

"Young master, don't relax your guard so easily. The Great Thousand Kingdoms are full of extraordinary things. Flowers may look variations of docile, beautiful and gentle, but in truth, among plant world soul pets flower types are the ones that scare people at the mere mentions of them. There once was a person who evaluated the statistics of soul pet trainers training in the wild, and over thirty percent of them died to flower type soul pets. There aren't many flower type soul pets among plant world soul pets, but whenever they appear, it will always be rather fatal." Old Li's voice resounded in Chu Mu's ear.

Chu Mu was shocked and he returned from being unconsciously intoxicated in his soul.

Intensity, bloodbaths, slaughter and death. These were all things that made Chu Mu raise his vigilance. He was always able to be surrounded by perils, but maintaining this mindset in a beautiful and fragrant environment were not something Chu Mu felt he had yet to do. Just now, he had nearly completely relaxed.

Just as Old Li had said, the Great Thousand Kingdoms were full of extraordinary things. Flower type soul pets possessed the most spirituality while also being the most dangerous creatures. Their appearances seemed alluring and moving, pure and unblemished, and aroused one's emotions. However, underneath their gorgeous appearances, they were full of venomous stings, and the stamen of a flower's stalk circulated blood that was full of a plethora of filth and mercilessness...

When he saw this large group of flowers, Chu Mu couldn't help but think of that young woman who was born from spirit flowers. That perfect complexion and noble and pure body; yet, her heart was a shadowy forest full of unknown darkness.

Thinking about this, Chu Mu's heart slowly sank. His eyes swept over this flower forest, and he released his soul remembrance...

"Ding~~~Ding Dang~~~~~Ding Dang~~~~~~~~"

The wind passed and the sound of bells rang; when Chu Mu focused his mind, he heard this pleasant sound. It was like the

sound of wind bells faintly swaying, giving one a tranquil and beautiful feeling.

“This sound. Could it be a Bell Noise Concubine?” a rather shocked expression appeared on Chu Mu’s face.

The Bell Noise Concubine was an extremely unusual flower type soul pet that Chu Mu had seen in books. This soul pet would often produce a moving wind bell-like noise. This noise possessed mental effects that could pacify the grievances and evil tendencies inside a soul pet’s heart.

Similar to Violent Blood Pupil, Bloodsuck and Resentment Gathering which were techniques that increased one’s strength through ruthlessness and blood. When this mental bell sound was used, the effects of Bloodsuck, Violent Blood Pupil and Resentment Gathering would quickly disappear. It was a soul pet with extremely strong assistance abilities.

“Young master, quickly go and find it. This Bell Noise Concubine is something great!” when Old Li heard the noise, he gave Chu Mu a reminder.

“You don’t need to say it.” Chu Mu naturally understood the value of the Bell Noise Concubine.

Flower type soul pets originally were relatively rare in the soul pet world, and they were normally split into two types. One type slowly bewildered one in a pleasant trap before painlessly killing him or her. The other type was a pure support type soul pet. They

possessed healing and supporting abilities that were even stronger than water types. They were definitely the top choice of soul pets for support type soul pet trainers.

Chu Mu's soul remembrance had already locked down the location of the clear wind bells, and in order not to scare away this soul pet, Chu Mu intentionally summoned the blank-faced Mo Xie and had her find a route in her pitiful state.

"Wu wu wu~~~~~~'

Mo Xie wrang her nine adorable fluffy small tails, and nobly and elegantly took small steps. She lithely walked towards the Bell Noise Concubine resting behind the flower tree.

Chu Mu stood far away and stared at the beautiful young woman-like soul pets and a smile slowly rose on his face.

Bell Noise Concubine: Plant world – flower type – Bell Noise Concubine species – commander rank

The Bell Noise Concubine had an elegant and curvy appearance of a young lady. Under its slender waist blossomed seven colored flower petals that were like the skirt of a young lady. It could be regarded as one of the most beautiful looking soul pets in the soul pet world.

The Bell Noise Concubine, aside from its pleasing appearance, had several support abilities. The flower type self-healing effects

were innately stronger than water types. When one traversed in the wild, if he or she had a flower type soul pet, the amount of medicinal healing, antidote medicines and resistance medicines one brought could be heavily reduced. Moreover, a few powerful flower type soul pets possessed the formidable ability to revive from the dead.

On the market, a commander rank flower type soul pet could fetch a price of over a million. The flower type Bell Noise Concubine was a soul pet that received a huge amount of fondness from female soul pet trainers, and it was normally sold for 5 million gold coins; moreover, there often was no supply of it.

5 million gold coins wasn't a small sum to Chu Mu, and Chu Mu happened to be lacking money. Otherwise, how could he afford to purchase a spirit item worth tens of millions for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to increase its strength?

"Young master, it's also a child Bell Noise Concubine, about the third phase. It can be sold for even more." said Old Li softly to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn't dare make loud noises right now either, and merely watched the small Mo Xie slowly approach the third phase Bell Noise Concubine.

Mo Xie was completely a silver-white color, and her furry fur blew in the wind. To others she looked like an adorable thing that was incapable of harm.

The Bell Noise concubine seemed to notice the silver colored nine tailed small fox approach. Like a young woman, she lightly blinked her eyes, and like a young princess, she lifted her multi-colored flower petal dress as she slightly retreated.

Mo Xie's silver eyes were very beautiful and looked glossy like the beauty of a running-water gem. However, at the same time, Mo Xie quietly used Sinister Glare Demonic Pupil, causing this small Bell Noise Concubine to gradually loosen its guard.

"Wu wu wu~~~~~~"

Having finally gotten near, the small Mo Xie intentionally gave a signal to Chu Mu, indicating that he could come and attempt to chant an incantation. Using an luring technique, he could attempt to capture the small Bell Noise Concubine into the soul capture ring.

If Chu Mu was still at the spirit teacher level, he wouldn't have hesitated to make a soul pact with this Bell Noise Concubine and make it his support soul pet. However, right now, Chu Mu no longer had an empty soul pet space. Moreover, while the Bell Noise Concubine's support ability was strong, Chu Mu wasn't very adept at using it.

"Tingchang~~~~~ Tingchang~~~~~"

Just as Chu Mu was approaching, the small Bell Noise Concubine which had been bewildered by Mo Xie suddenly let out a panicked noise; unexpectedly, it sprayed a pink colored pollen cloud as it

turned and fled!

“Mo Xie, chase after it!’ Chu Mu couldn’t let 5 million gold coins run away.

“Wu wu wu~~~~~~”

Mo Xie swept her tail, dispersing this hypnosis pollen cloud. She astonishingly transformed into a silver light and caught up to the Bell Noise Concubine in under three seconds as it attempted to flee.

Extending her tail, Mo Xie quickly swept up the Bell Noise Concubine with her tail. When she considered that this small flower type soul pet was very fragile, Mo Xie didn’t use too much force as she swept it up.

“Tingdang~~~~~Tingdang~~~~~”

The Bell Noise Concubine let out a flustered shout as if it was calling for help.

“Young master, be a bit careful. The Bell Noise Concubine can be regarded as the most virtuous flower type soul pet. They always enjoy helping heal soul pets that have been wounded in battle and thus obtain the protection of these soul pets. The moment they call for help, there’s a chance that many soul pets will appear.” said Old Li.

Chu Mu nodded his head and very decisively summoned the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Zhan Ye.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier guarded next to Chu Mu while Zhan Ye's black eyes vigilantly watched the surroundings. It was prepared at any time to take on the enemies that came.

"Ao~~~~~~~~~~"

Suddenly, a powerful roar came from the flower forest in the distance. The roar was somewhat similar to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's voice, but was even more firm than its roar!!

"Wengweng Wengweng~~~~"

The ground began to lightly shake, and Chu Mu could clearly feel some enormous creature moving towards him...

The flower forest began to sway and suddenly the tree tops were parted by two large hands. From within the twenty meter tall trees abruptly appeared an old withered tree-bark face. Its two eyes were incomparably angry as it stared at Chu Mu and his group of soul pets.

"Young master, it's an Ancient Azure Devil Tree!! This is an eighth phase Ancient Azure Devil Tree!" Old Li suddenly gave a sharp cry!

Chapter 231: Ancient Azure Devil Tree

Chu Mu lifted his head and looked at the giant devil tree. Huge waves of emotions were set off in his heart. He didn't think that the Ancient Azure Devil Tree was actually that massive.

Its head had already poked out of the forest canopies. Its large hands pushed by the woods like he was pushing aside wheat stalks. Every step of its two branch consisted legs made a huge vibration in this flower forest.

"Spread apart!" Chu Mu sent a command to his soul pets.

Mo Xie naturally realized the power of this Ancient Azure Devil Tree. Nine spurts of royal flames started burning on her body, shrouding her and quickly turning around her paws. Following that, Mo Xie's body started growing within the royal flames, and nine gorgeous tails fanned open amongst the chaotic flames!

"Ding dang~~~~~~~~ Ding dang~~~~~~"

When Mo Xie became a royal flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox, the Bell Noise Concubine let out a light whimper, clearly frightened by Mo Xie's powerful aura and heat.

One of Mo Xie's tails was permanently curled around the flower demon Bell Noise Concubine, not giving it a chance to escape. With the wave of Mo Xie's long tail, this Bell Noise Concubine was also shaken around and around……

“Ao~~~~~~~~~”

The two eyes of the Ancient Azure Devil Tree quickly locked onto Mo Xie, and it commanded its two giant arms to smash downwards, full of power and vigor!

“Mo Xie, Nine Tail Confuse!”

With tails like clouds unfolding, a silver flicker danced in the middle and Mo Xie’s body moved near thirty meters to the side. The Ancient Azure Devil Tree’s two arms smashed into the position Mo Xie was in before, creating a huge crater, but missing Mo Xie.

“ Mo Xie, you distract him.” Chu Mu said to Mo Xie.

“Wuwu~~” Mo Xie nodded. Just like last time, when she forcefully took the Ghost King and ran away, this time Mo Xie rolled the Bell Noise Concubine and started running away.

“Ao~~~~~~~~~~”

The Ancient Azure Devil Tree was very angry. Its large arms violently broke off the twenty meter tall tree in its way and stepped forward in terrifying strides, casting techniques continuously towards Mo Xie.

“Devil Tree, Root Pierce!”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was only three meters tall, and it looked like a humanoid warrior wearing wooden armor. From its appearance, it seemed to be clearly worse than the Ancient Azure Devil Tree.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s arm quickly extended and, when the Ancient Azure Devil Tree was facing away, it successfully pierced its roots into the barky back of the tree.

“Life Force Absorb!” Chu Mu again commanded Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was full on life force right now. Using Life Force Absorb right now was akin to using soul cores. If it absorbed from a powerful soul pet, it would be like using soul crystals, potentially evolving it immediately……

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s roots started squirming. However, when the Devil Tree Battle Soldier actually started absorbing, it realized that it wasn’t absorbing the life of the Ancient Azure Devil Tree, but instead just some scraps on the outside of its skin……

“Young master, your Devil Tree Battle Soldier can’t even penetrate its defense, so how could it Absorb Life? This Ancient Azure Devil Tree has already grasped initial stage Natural Wood and has reached eighth rank in defense. It completely ignores your Devil Tree’s attacks.” Old Li said.

When the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's Life Force Abosrb failed, Chu Mu realized this, so he decisively told Zhan Ye to look for an opportunity to use Dark Corrosion to break through this Ancient Azure Devil Tree's defense.

"The Ancient Azure Devil Tree is a top tier commander rank soul pet. Even without being strengthened, its combatting strength is much higher than other commander ranks. Adding on to that, its a wood type soul pet. Your two soul pets will only be able to scratch it……" Old Li said again.

Chu Mu ignored Old Li's words and jumped onto Zhan Ye's back himself, chasing the Ancient Azure Devil Tree with large steps.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was also smart. Knowing that its speed was very slow and that it probably wouldn't be able to catch up to the Ancient Azure Devil Tree, and knowing that the Ancient Azure Devil Tree was ignoring its attacks, it simply used its Piercing Roots to wrap around the Ancient Azure Devil Tree, letting the massive being drag it along!

The Ancient Azure Devil Tree ignored Chu Mu's two soul pets, which gave Zhan Ye the chance to get in.

Zhan Ye's running speed wasn't too slow. After casting Shadow Assault, it got to the feet of the Ancient Azure Devil Tree.

"Devil tree!" Chu Mu turned around and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier quickly understood Chu Mu's meaning. One of its arms let

loose, and it grabbed onto the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's thigh.

Zhan Ye jumped onto the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's arm and, with a push on the long arm, it lept to the Devil Tree's other higher up arm.

"Ink Armor Spike!"

Chu Mu leaped up as well, following the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and slid onto the Devil Tree's body. After leaving Zhan Ye's back, the ink armor spikes on Zhan Ye's back all protruded outwards, piercing violently towards the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's back!

Ink Armor Spikes ignored defense, and it was the most effective weapon of Zhan Ye's close combat. The near one meter long ink armor spikes pierced deeply in, and the Ancient Azure Devil Tree let out a long howl!

"Life Force Absorb!" Seeing the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's back all corroded, Chu Mu decisively told the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to pierce its roots towards the corroded region!

"Pupu!!!!!" Two piercing roots went into the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's body and the roots started wriggling, causing the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's life to start to diminish……

"Ao!!!!!!!!!!"

After the Ancient Azure Devil Tree was hurt, it again let out an

angry roar!

After this roar, the bark on the Ancient Azure Devil Tree suddenly opened with many airholes. Out of these air holes came countless whip like vines!

These vines grew crazily and quickly wrapped Zhan Ye, who hurt him, up. Zhan Ye couldn't dodge in time and, half way into the air, it was inescapably locked in the thin vines!

The thin whip vines started tightening, heavily constricting Zhan Ye's body, causing Zhan Ye's armor itself to become deformed!

If it were any other sixth phase commander, such a powerful constriction would definitely have killed it already.

Thankfully, Zhan Ye's life force was six times that of a normal soul pet. Six times life force meant a seventh phase middle staged commander rank's life force.

"Rapid Freeze!"

With an incantation, Chu Mu swiftly finished this soul technique that he hadn't completed in a long time.

Ice frost air gathered in Chu Mu's palms. With Chu Mus wave,

this frost floated towards the thin vines that binded Zhan Ye. The ice first slowly froze the vines.

Chu Mu didn't need to completely freeze all these vines, only needing the ice effect to remove some of the terrifying toughness and make it brittle.

"Houhou!!!!!!!!"

With an infuriated roar, Zhan Ye's ink armor spike again extended. These spikes hit the brittle vines and immediately shattered them. As Zhan Ye's body extended open, the rest of the vines all broke.

The process where Zhan Ye was caught and escaped was about three to four seconds. In the meantime, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had already absorbed a decent amount of life force.

However, the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's life force wasn't just a little big, either. Three to four seconds of absorbing didn't even seem to take ten percent of its life. Its attention was still fixated on Mo Xie……

"Mo Xie, Nine Tail Flame!" Chu Mu also realized that for Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Zhan Ye to kill this high life force and defensive soul pet wasn't easy, so he told Mo Xie to join the battle.

"Wuwuwu~~~~~~~~~~"

The tail that Mo Xie held the Bell Noise Concubine in suddenly shot upwards, throwing the Bell Noise Concubine high up. Her nine tails started getting consumed in raging fires as she was running. When the flames reached their peak, she heavily swept towards the Ancient Azure Devil Tree!

“Huhuhu~~~~~~~~~~”

Demon Fire Evil Flames and Blood Flames pounced forwards in two layers, all hitting the Ancient Azure Devil Tree’s body. The Ancient Azure Devil Tree that feared fire immediately let out a painful howl and started windmilling its arms, trying to put the fire out with pure force!

“Devil Tree, Wood Finger Prison!”

Devil Tree Battle Soldier slapped its palms on the ground, and its ten fingers extended into the ground. After a moment, ten chain-like fingers appeared near the Ancient Azure Devil Tree. Quickly darting thirty meters into the air, they fell down from above the Ancient Azure Devil Tree!

The wood fingers weren’t actually part of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body, and it was able to withstand more fire than its other body parts. Very quickly, these chain-like wooden fingers became fire chains, covering up the nearly twenty meter tall Ancient Azure Devil Tree.

“Chong Mei – Heavenly Flame Rite!”

As white demonic devil fire started burning on his body, Chu Mu lifted two balls of flames up with his hands as he chanted an incantation……

“Pa~~~Pa~~~~~~”

The Wood Finger Prison was violently broken by the enraged Ancient Azure Devil Tree, but at this moment, Chu Mu had finished his incantation!

“Wuwuwu~~~~~~~~~”

The Heavenly Flame Rite Mo Xie was casting also finished. Above the Ancient Azure Devil Tree’s head, a white, red, and crimson colored light beam silently fell!

“Beng!!!!!!”

When it fell, the Ancient Azure Devil Tree’s body and the ground all started shattering severely!

“Huhuhu!!!!!!!!!!”

The flame dragon rolled around, and the three different flames all stacked up, making it even more powerful. Even the massive body of the Ancient Azure Devil Tree couldn’t withstand such dancing of flames. After its body was caught with flames, it started shaking even worse, falling to the ground heavily.

Fire itself was very harmful for wood type soul pets, not to mention the terrifying power of Mo Xie and Chu Mu's combined Heavenly Flame Rite!

After Ancient Azure Devil Tree was fallen, it was clearly heavily wounded. In the fire, it painfully propped itself up, roaring loud enough to shake the entire flower forest……

Mo Xie's silver eyes watched the Ancient Azure Devil Tree apathetically as it burned within the flames, yet one of its tails was as if it had a mind of its own, extending to grab the Bell Noise Concubine back into her tails.

The Bell Noise Concubine was only at the third phase, so it was like an adult facing a third year old for Mo Xie. The Bell Noise Concubine couldn't possibly leave Mo Xie's control……

"Young master, the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's fruits are within it. The soul crystal and others are also all in its body. Try not to kill it with fire, or else most of it will be destroyed. The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's Life Force Absorb can suck advanced soul pets' energy. This eighth phase Ancient Azure Devil Tree's life is very helpful for it. If absorbs it, it may even grow again." Old Li reminded Chu Mu.

Chapter 232: Eighth Rank Wood Type Soul Crystal

Chu Mu nodded, decisively retracting his Zhan Ye back into his soul pet space and summoning his Ice Air Fairy before him. While the Ancient Azure Devil Tree was greatly weakened, it casted a series of ice type attacks.

The Ice Air Fairy's current fighting strength wouldn't be much weaker than Mo Xie's now. Its towering ice crystal could very effectively freeze the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's body!

"Ice Chain Formation!"

"Mo Xie, Nine Tail Chain!"

With an incantation, the Ice Air Fairy's ice chains heavily locked onto the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's body.

Mo Xie's eight tails became durable fox tail chains that extended to trap the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's arm, causing its arms to be unable to move.

"Devil Tree, Piercing Root!"

With a throw of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's arm, the piercing roots dug deep into the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's body!

Life Force Absorb!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldiers roots crazily wriggled, and they started to absorbed the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's life. The Ancient Azure Devil Tree struggled greatly, yet it couldn't fight free of Chu Mu's Mo Xie and Ning's control, only able to let out angry roars.

Wood type energy was already very pure and was often saved in the body for many years. Yet this huge amount of wood type life force was like a river as it entered the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body. During this process, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body had already undergone big changes!

Ten seconds of uninterrupted absorbing!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's absorbing lasted ten seconds. Once the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots were retracted, the Ancient Azure Devil Tree also fell like a wooden mountain, becoming withered and rotten with no sign of life in it left……

The Ancient Azure Devil Tree's rank was by itself already higher than the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's. After its life essence was all absorbed by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, the Devil Tree clearly gained lots of benefits.

"It grew again?" Chu Mu's eyes watched as Devil Tree's body slowly changed and said with surprise.

In the past few weeks, the Devil Tree had continued to grow, and every growth meant its type was strengthened!

“Same species soul pet had life forces that merged well already, and the energy was extremely pure. Your Devil Tree Battle Soldier was, at most, high tier commander rank in strengthening, so after absorbing such a massive amount of top tier commander rank life force, how could it not grow?” Old Li said.

Sixth phase ninth stage. Half a month back, the Devil Tree had risen two stages, reaching the sixth phase eighth stage. Now, it reached the sixth phase ninth stage. When they return to the city and buy some soul items, they would have no problem breaching the seventh phase!

Its fighting strength could definitely be strengthened to the same level as the Ice Air Fairy. In fact, with life force absorb, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier could be undefeated.

“Ao~~~~Ao~~~~~~~~~~~~”

After reaching sixth phase ninth stage, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out excited roars.

To the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, growth of a stage was already not to big of a deal. The most important was that, through the pure life force of the Ancient Azure Devil Tree, its wood type had progressed from high tier commander to top tier commander level.

Though it was a high class warrior rank soul pet, its fighting strength right now was definitely higher than any high class commander rank!

“One more strengthening. Once it reaches seventh phase, fighting Yu He’s Hundred Tree Female Demon definitely won’t be an issue.” Chu Mu smiled.

He wondered how strange Yu He’s expression would be when he notices a wounded Devil Tree Battle Soldier recovering to its full status in the middle of the fight.

“Wuwuwu~~~~~”

Seeing the Devil Tree reach sixth phase ninth stage, Mo Xie started to murmur. If they were ranked by stage and phase, Mo Xie was the third from the bottom now.

Chu Mu rubbed little Mo Xie’s head and laughed, “Your talent is too strong, so eating anything is useless. You can only grow through battle……”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier used to be normal commander rank. From normal commander rank to beyond commander rank was a very large space for strengthening.

The strengthening of type would simultaneously bring growth in stage, so the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s stages naturally increased quickly.

As for Mo Xie, her original type was already at the monarch rank. Any soul item under a few dozens of millions was akin to normal food for Mo Xie.

Those above ten million could barely increase Mo Xie's type by a little, but that was still only a little, not having a great effect.

……

Mo Xie's three big type talents were all monarch ranked. When Chu Mu strengthened her, he had to take into consideration the three type talent ratios. This made the amount of soul items he could use very limited.

Even if there was an advanced, three type soul item, Chu Mu's old naive self would've imagined it to be over ten million gold. Now that he got in touch with higher level soul items, he knew that if he wanted to raise Mo Xie's three monarch rank talents another level, the soul item would very likely be in the hundreds of millions of gold!

Similarly, the White Nightmare was the same. It wasn't that Chu Mu didn't strengthen the White Nightmare or Mo Xie to increase their stage quickly, it was just that their talent was too high. Things worth over ten thousand gold could only improve their type slightly and maybe raise their stage by one. Those that cost over hundreds of thousands, on the other hand, wasn't something that Chu Mu could afford……

The situation with the Ghost King was slightly better. The Ghost King's stage was lower. Though ten thousand gold soul items couldn't strengthen its rock or ghost type by much, it could still raise its stage by a couple, and if the stages go up, so will its power.

In reality, Mo Xie had saved a huge amount of money for Chu Mu. If Mo Xie was always a moonlight fox, the amount of money needed to raise the servant rank moonlight fox to monarch rank was also calculated in the hundreds of millions of gold.

Stages can be increased by battling.

Talent needed soul items to change.

Yet mutating was the most special way to increase talent.

Mo Xie's greatest advantage was in her ability to mutate. When she mutated to a more advanced soul pet, other than appearance, species, and techniques, the most important change was talent, and it was a huge increase too.

Of all of Chu Mu's soul pets, the least strengthened was Mo Xie, because her mutating bloodline could self strengthen……

While mutating increased all abilities by a great amount, Mo Xie's stage won't change, which created an issue – Mo Xie can't grow through soul items.

This way, Mo Xie's growth speed was completely dependent on

fighting, and so falling behind other soul pets was normal. After all, her talent was too high.

……

“Ding~~~ Ding~~~~~~~”

The Bell Noise Concubine’s voice was like a wind chime. Seeing Chu Mu walk over, it was already very frantic and scared.

To combat soul pets with no fighting intent, capturing them was very easy. Chu Mu cast the soul capture incantation and used his spirit master remembrance to forcefully make it submit.

The first time, the Bell Noise Concubine blocked it off with its strong willpower, yet when Chu Mu chanted another incantation, its mental strength finally couldn’t stop Chu Mu’s powerful remembrance, and it was captured into Chu Mu’s soul capture ring.

After putting some soul cores into the soul capture ring, Chu Mu put his attention onto the Ancient Azure Devil Tree’s corpse.

The outer skin of it was already torched black. After Mo Xie ripped it open with her claws, it fell into pieces. Finding treasure within corpses was something Mo Xie was very familiar with.

“Wuwuwu~~~Wuwu~~~~”

Just as the Pitiful Appearance Mo Xie dove into the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's body, she let out excited calls and walked out waving her nine little tails around, holding a clear green thing in her mouth.

"Young master, young master, soul crystal!! Soul crystal!!" Old Li's eyes were sharp and immediately identified the object. His short body immediately jumped forward and ran towards Mo Xie as his eyes flickered gold, wanting to take the crystal.

One of Mo Xie's silver tails seemed to have been ready. Just as Old Li was about to take it, Mo Xie did a beautiful sweep with her tail and swept him away.

Chu Mu was also pleasantly surprised, catching the soul crystal, still covered in black wooden shrap, that Mo Xie had.

"Eighth rank wood type soul crystal!" Chu Mu opened his mouth to smile. Just now, he was worrying over how to earn enough money for his Devil Tree Battle Soldier. He hadn't thought that lady lucky would favor him this quickly, giving such a big gift to him!

The eighth rank wood type soul crystal, and coming from a top tier commander like Ancient Azure Devil Tree too. Such a soul crystal was definitely in the 20 millions. Being able to capture a Bell Noise Concubine worth 5 million was already something worth being happy for. With this 20 million gold, it repaid Chu Mu for his efforts darting around in the forest for over half a month.

Chu Mu put the soul crystal back into his spatial ring and continued to look for valuable things in the Ancient Azure Devil Tree. Very quickly, Mo Xie pulled out another item, one that looked like a heart. This heart had a heavy case outside of it. The fire before didn't harm it much, and it still had some of the sap from inside the Ancient Azure Devil Tree.

"Eighth phase Ancient Azure Devil Tree fruit……such an item isn't cheap either." Old Li said in a small sound.

No matter how valuable it was though, this fruit was for Ye Wansheng's cure. After all, Ancient Azure Devil Trees were very rare. Even some Kingdom Cities couldn't find the fruit.

"The brother and sister shouldn't have arrived at Li City so quickly yet. There's still another month, so let's train in this area of Yuan Forest." Chu Mu petted little Mo Xie and said.

"Young master, if you have to train, walk north a bit more and you'll reach a more primitive part of the forest. There are soul pets everywhere there. Fight for a month and your soul pets should increase in stage considerably. Once you reach Li City, you can firmly kick the crafty kid's ass." Old Li held a massive map that covered his head as he said.

Resting in place for a bit, Chu Mu retracted his Ice Air Fairy and summoned the Zhan Ye that needed more training, before taking big strides towards the denser forests……

Chapter 233: Whereabout of the Split Off Dragon Egg

Li Region, Li City, Elemental Sect

Yu He's face was red as he stood in the courtyard, his chest heaved as he clearly was forcibly suppressing his emotions.

"Pai~~~~"

Sweeping his arm, Yu He abruptly knocked the tea cups off the adjacent table all off. Immediately, the expensive teaware and water fell onto the ground, shattering.

"To destroy a bridge after crossing a river. Hmph, don't believe that I don't know what you're thinking!" Yu He's eyes turned malicious.

Presently, Yu He was the only one in the courtyard. He didn't dare expose such emotions before.

"If something happens to me this time, you bastards won't be able to hide away from me!" Yu He grit his teeth.

As Yu He vented his anger, a young man wearing a long striped robe slowly walked into the courtyard.

The young man swept his eyes over the broken teacups and a

smile rose on his face: “What’s the need to be so angry, eh? You should have realized what kind of people they were when you dealt with them.”

“Hmph, if it wasn’t for the benefit they promised me…” Yu He sat back down on the stone chair. He faintly suppressed the anger in his heart and glanced at the young man, saying: “Your Soul Alliance people rarely ever go outside to Zhanli Kingdom. Yet, why do I feel you guys have frequently come here in the past few years?”

“Haha, why are you asking a question you already know the answer to?” the young man said as he sat next to Yu He.

Yu He’s emotions quickly calmed and he asked in an interested tone: “Has that soul pet that shook the entire soul pet world truly fled already?”

“If it fled, then it fled. In truth, it’s not something inconceivable. That Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon is something our lord can’t even control…” laughed the young man.

“No one can control it. You guys further didn’t rely on it to do things for you for a long period of time. In my opinion, perhaps you no longer had anything that could limit it. You guys further didn’t have the face to say you couldn’t control that soul pet so you let it flee before arbitrarily telling people to chase it, putting on a show…” said Yu He.

The young man ignored Yu He’s cutting remarks and fiddled

with the beautiful ring on his hand.

"Lu Ying, the two of us are very familiar with each other. What is it you can't say? Is that Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's split off egg truly in Eternal Ocean? If it's really there, why aren't so many people able to find it?" asked Yu He.

"We've already found the traces of the Innards of a God. It was on an island called Prison Island which is administered by Nightmare Palace. The Hidden Dragon egg should have been split off nearby..." said the young man named Lu Ying.

"Prison Island? I seem to have heard it before. Then again, why did it take so long for you guys to discover the traces of the Innards of a God? It took you about a year, eh?" asked Yu He.

"Do you think that Eternal Ocean is some benevolent place? The area that the Nightmare Palace administers in Eternal Ocean isn't even ten percent of the entire ocean. Could it be you've never heard of Eternal Ocean's legend?" Lu Ying's tone turned rather serious.

"Eternal Ocean's legend? I've heard a bit about it. There seems to have inhabited an extremely powerful mysterious soul pet in Eternal Ocean. That soul pet's true identity has never been seen by anyone to this day. I only know that practically no one in the entire soul pet world dares provoke it..." Yu He's eyes turned as he quickly linked the Eternal Ocean legend with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's matters.

“You mean that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s split off egg could have fallen into that mysterious soul pet’s hands?” Yu He gave this inference.

Lu Ying nodded his head, but then shook his head. He seemed to be hesitating whether or not to speak about certain information.

Yu He realized that Lu Ying had some important news and decisively took off his ring before slowly pushing it to Lu Ying: “We’ve been brothers for so long, what harm is there in telling me? I’m also very curious. There isn’t much in this ring, but it shouldn’t be a problem to strengthen your soul pets…”

Lu Ying laughed and calmly took the ring. Using soul remembrance, he said to Yu He: “Due to that soul pet in Eternal Ocean and Nightmare Palace’s obstruction, we spent a long time in Eternal Ocean before finally finding the remnants of the Innards of a God.

After listening to the analysis of seniors, there are three possibilities of that split off Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s egg.

The first is that it was seized by that soul pet in Eternal Ocean.

The second is that it could have been hidden in some place by the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon and we still haven’t found it.

The third reason is…” when he got here, Lu Ying intentionally hesitated a while.

Yu He clearly wanted to know and he stared fixedly at Lu Ying.

The split off Hidden Dragon Egg of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon was something that countless soul pet trainers yearned for even in their dreams. The reason why Soul Alliance was able to ascertain their position in the soul pet world was precisely predicated on obtaining this special dragon egg and firmly controlling a few extremely rare and strong soul pets in their hands.

It was said that the insect egg of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon was a monarch rank Cyan Hidden Dragon. Its fighting strength was practically unparalleled amongst the monarch rank and was even more terrifying than Nightmare Palace's White Nightmare. Very long ago, there was a young soul pet trainer who had obtained an insect egg that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had accidentally left in the wild. Using this Cyan Hidden Dragon, this soul pet trainer instantly became one of the best young generation experts in the soul pet world. Even after leaving the scope of the young generation, his name spread far and wide in the entire soul pet realm.

One soul pet could change a soul pet trainer's life. Yu He could be regarded to have a bit of status in Elemental Sect; however, in the incomparably vast soul pet realm, such strength was nothing to be arrogant about. If he could obtain the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's splitt off Hidden Dragon Egg, then his status would definitely leap up. He would even have enough confidence in the Battle of the Realms where experts congregated.

“What is this third possibility? Quickly speak…” Yu Jia had clearly grown anxious.

Seeing Yu He’s impatience, Lu Ying laughed and whispered: “The Innards of a God were on Nightmare Palace’s Prison Island. At that time, there were three thousand prisoners on Prison Island. All three thousand of these prisoners died save one. This person happens to be Nightmare Palace’s Prison Island King…”

“I understand!!” Yu He was a smart person and Lu Ying’s words immediately allowed him to guess of a possibility. The shock on his face was extreme!

“Haha…”

“Do you know who that person is?” probed Yu He.

A Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s split off dragon egg!!!

Such immense attraction, and Yu He was already silently gritting his teeth. Even if there was only a one in three possibility, he absolutely had to find this Prison Island King. The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s split off egg could be in his hands.

“It’s very unfortunate. If we had known about it half a year ago, we could have immediately captured him as this Prison Island King was shaking up the Western Kingdom then. However, half a year later, news of this Prison Island King are no more. No one knows where he is.” said Lu Ying.

Yu He's eyes turned as he asked in an extremely small voice: "How many people know of this?"

"Not many. My father, Senior Tian Ting, one person in Nightmare Palace, myself and you. I also spent enormous energy to learn it from my father. You should be clear of how significant this is. I only told you because I thought of us two growing up together. Just say you learned of it out of curiosity and it'll be fine. You absolutely cannot tell anyone else anything..." said Lu Ying.

"Of course. You don't even trust me with this?" laughed Yu He.

"That said, I had better leave. My father doesn't want me to stay here at your place too long." said Yu He.

"I'll send you off. Oh, I almost forgot to ask you. What brings your Soul Alliance people here to my Li City?" asked Yu He with a laugh.

"It has to do with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's matters. You'll know in the future. Haha, I think that you shouldn't overthink it. Deal with your situation first; I heard you have big trouble." after speaking, Lu Ying turned and left.

"Has to do with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's matters?" Yu He revealed a confused expression as he began to guess...

.....

……

The end of Yuan Forest was like an enormous palm print. It stretched through two regions, and extended into the most western side of Li Region.

The most western side of the Li region was a rather sparse forest and this forest had many soul pets that roamed about. However, it was practically impossible to find warrior rank and above soul pets here.

The sun shone brightly and a cool wind brushed by; the figures of trees painted a mottley picture…

Under a tree, an old soul pet trainer was slowly walking around with three thirteen or fourteen year old youngsters.

“Soul pets have spirit and when you capture them, you have to attempt to connect with them. If you discover that you can understand the frame of mind of a soul pet, a large part of your soul pact will have been success. Today is the first time you face true soul pets. It’s best if you don’t rashly bother with fifth phase and above soul pets. With your weak soul power, you won’t be able to capture them.” the senior soul pet trainer had the three youngsters follow closely behind him.

The three youngsters listened very closely to the senior soul pet trainer’s words and closely followed behind. They curiously and nervously surveyed their surroundings. Although they were

somewhat afraid, it wasn't enough to conceal the excitement of being on the verge of obtaining their first soul pet.

"Hou Hou~~~~~~~~"

Suddenly, a chilly wind carrying a scent of blood flew into them head on. The three youngsters couldn't help but shiver.

The senior soul pet trainer's face faintly changed. He didn't think that a fourth phase Bloodsucking Beast would appear here!

Bloodsucking Beasts were notorious soul pets. They were incomparably savage and this senior soul pet trainer was only the lowest level soul pet trainer. There was a chance he couldn't deal with it.

"Retreat, retreat..." the senior soul pet trainer hastily chanted an incantation and had the youngsters who were trembling in fear retreat.

His expression grave, the senior closely watched at the Bloodsucking Beast. His heart kept jumping with a 'pudong pudong' sound as he racked his brains to search for a way to deal with it.

However, just as he planned on letting the children flee first while he dealt with the fourth phase Bloodsucking Beast, the Bloodsucking Beast let out a panicked shout and fled in another direction.

The Bloodsucking Beast fled?

The senior soul pet trainer was shocked. He searched with his gaze and astonishedly discovered an abnormally demonic man slowly walk out of the depths of the forest. He hadn't summoned any soul pet, but mysterious yet abnormally demonic aura caused one to tremble in fear...

Chapter 234: The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's Level

"Teacher..." the few youngsters were trembling all over in fear. Their clear black eyes stared at the man man covered in shadows and their hearts beat rapidly.

This was the first time they had sensed such a terrifying aura from a person. It was even much stronger than the fourth phase Bloodsucking Beast!

The senior soul pet trainer stood up. His entire being was like a statue, and even though he wanted to speak, he didn't know what to say. An incorporeal pressure shrouded this area...

"You guys should go back, there are many Bloodsucking Beasts in the vicinity." the man walked up face to face with the senior soul pet trainer and spoke in a calm voice.

Hearing Chu Mu talk, the senior soul pet trainer let out a faint sigh. However, when he heard the details of his words, he hastily swept his eyes over the surroundings.

Indeed!

Pairs of red eyes would disappear and appear in the thicket. With each interval the wind blew towards him, he could smell the terrifying blood stench!

“Follow me; don’t stay too far away from me.” said the powerful aura man.

The senior soul pet trainer was shocked. Then, he finally understood and immediately turned around and gave orders to the three youngsters. He had them closely follow behind this man.

“Hu hu hu hu~~~~”

Waves of blood-smelling wind blew over and the surrounding eyes seemed to be growing more. Furthermore, even a few high phase/stage Bloodsucking Beasts directly jumped out of the thicket and followed behind the few of them at a certain distance. They could launch an attack at any moment.

The senior soul pet trainer apprehensively watched the surroundings. Right now, he understood why this man would emit such a terrifying aura. He was using his own majesty to subdue those restless Bloodsucking Beasts.

Using his aura, he was able to instill fear into the normally savage Bloodsucking Beasts. The senior soul pet trainer was shocked, and wanted to know exactly what level soul pet trainer this young man was.

The three youngsters found that these Bloodsucking Beast’s didn’t dare get close and gradually relaxed. They looked inquisitively at this stern older brother...

“Ok, it’s safe here. If you want to capture a soul pet, you can do so nearby here. Just now you were close to Yuan Forest.” said the young man.

“I… I’m extremely thankful… this was my mistake and I nearly brought the kids with me…” the senior soul pet trainer’s face was full of emotions and he continuously gave his thanks.

“That’s the direction to the town, right?” asked the young man as he pointed ahead.

“Yes, if you follow these birch trees straight along, you’ll be able to see it.” said the senior soul pet trainer.

The young man nodded his head. He didn’t say anything more, and he walked in the direction the birch trees extended along.

The few children saw that this stern older brother had left and after he left their field of view, they immediately encircled the senior soul pet trainer, asking him excitedly: “Isn’t that older brother really awesome? Otherwise why wouldn’t those Bloodsucking Beasts dare not approach…”

“Yes, extremely strong. Without summoning a soul pet and purely relying on aura to subdue a group of soul pets; the strongest soul pet trainers in our town can’t even do it.” the senior soul pet trainer let out a sigh.

He knew that there were many powerful soul pet trainers in this

world, but such a young person possessing powerful strength was definitely unheard of by him.

The eyes of the few youngsters immediately lit up, and they looked in the direction the man had left with gazes of adoration.

To them, these young soul pet trainers who hadn't actually controlled a soul pet before, being able to see such a powerful person in the wild and the factor of unknown strength coupled with their desires made it become a wonderful thought. It would leave a memory that was hard to erase in their young hearts and minds.

Perhaps on their future paths, they would use this expert as a goal to strive for.

……

The person who had passed by and helped these people alleviate a crisis naturally was Chu Mu. He had already trained in the Yuan Forest for a month. His wild-beast aura hadn't fully faded so when he walked out, he gave these weak fellows a huge pressure.

Chu Mu's hearing was very good, and even though he was very far away from them, he could still hear them talk. He unconsciously recalled his past self.

Seven or eight years ago he was exactly like them. He yearned for soul pets like them and adored experts like them.

In truth, the past Chu Mu had never believed he would have walked to the height he had now. At the very beginning, his only goal had been to strive for his family, hoping to become the strongest in his family.

Yet, right now, his strength had already surpassed Chu Ming, who was the Chu Family's strongest. He was walking further and further away from his family that had migrated elsewhere.

……

Immersing himself in the sunlight, Chu Mu raised his head and looked through the dense cluster of leaves on the birch trees. He stared at the small town and suddenly had a reminiscing and perplexed felling.

Those young people that had inadvertently walked into Chu Mu had made him their goal. Chu Mu identically had also made those experts he had met a target to surpass.

A long time ago, Chu Mu had made his father his target, even if he could only summon one soul pet. After his cruel life in Nightmare Palace, he had completely shifted the powerful resentment in his heart onto Xia Guanghan.

Back then, Chu Mu had sworn that within ten years, he would definitely surpass Xia Guanghan.

However, looking at things right now, surpassing Xia Guanghan wouldn't take too long. Chu Mu had already shortened the time to one or two years; at best, when he reached City Under the Heavens, he would be able to fight against Xia Guanghan!

Xia Guanghan had already been seriously wounded by Chu Mu. Within these two years, it would definitely be very hard for his strength to increase, while it would be the most optimal time for Chu Mu to quickly grow.

……

"Old Li, the Eternal Ocean has a mysterious powerful creature. Have you heard of it?" upon recalling things of the past, Chu Mu naturally thought of that powerful mysterious creature.

"Oh, you're speaking of it. That fellow stays secluded all the time, and it lives like a deity in Eternal Ocean. The peak experts of Nightmare Palace once tried to fight against it, but were all forced back." said Old Li.

"What soul pet is it? What rank?" asked Chu Mu.

"What rank? That's not too easy to answer. Perhaps it's a soul pet that's surpassed the tenth phase or perhaps it's a soul pet that's surpassed our demarcated categories…" said Old Li.

Chu Mu glanced at Old Li and his eyes were rather strange.

With Chu Mu's understanding of Old Li, when it came to soul pets, Old Li would jabber on non-stop about facts and his own fabrications. He would say everything about a soul pet, yet when it came to Eternal Ocean's mysterious soul pet, he merely spoke a few sentences. This really wasn't according to his nature.

Old Li seemed to have felt Chu Mu's gaze and his leopard-cat face became slightly unnatural. He hastily said: "I only know this much. Could it be that you think this soul pet is something that anyone will know about?"

"Fine, then speak about the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon? What do you understand about this soul pet?' asked Chu Mu.

In the past, Chu Mu didn't trust Old Li's character. Towards the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's matters, Chu Mu felt that he couldn't casually mention it to others. It wasn't until now when he reminisced when he asked out of curiosity.

"That Cyan Hidden Dragon eh? There are a lot of stories I can talk about; the earliest dates to twenty years ago when Soul Alliance's head entered a place called 'Dragon Region'. He took advantage advantage of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon transforming into a god and stole an extremely important object form it and returned to Soul Alliance." said Old Li.

"Something? What something?" asked Chu Mu, confused.

"I don't know either. Regardless, it was extremely important to the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. It could have been its main

dragon egg, its dragon heart, its son, its daughter, anything…" said Old Li.

Chu Mu didn't say anything. He looked down and began to ponder.

"After the Soul Alliance seized this object, they forcibly made the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon yield. From then on, that young Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon became the Soul Alliance's trump card. For one, they would steal the dragon egg the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon would split off every time it transformed into a god. Additionally, whenever they encountered a powerful enemy they couldn't defeat, they would have this Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon make a move…" said Old Li.

"Nobody signed a soul pact with it?" asked Chu Mu.

"Impossible. The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's rank isn't something humans can sign a soul pact with. Its dragon species puts its status above humans, and further gives it the acclaimed title of the god of soul pets. Even with that extremely important object that controlled the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, the Soul Alliance people still accordingly treated it like a god." said Old Li.

"How strong is the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon?" asked Chu Mu.

Back when he first saw the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon and that mysterious soul pet's fight, the only thing Chu Mu could see in that level of fighting was destruction; he was simply incapable of

understanding their true strength.

“The Soul Palace has Seven Diagram Saint Beasts. These Seven Diagram Saint Beasts when all combined can subdue the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. Of course, a few of them will certainly die. The Nightmare Palace has a Nightmare Ancestor. This Nightmare Ancestor’s strength is perhaps slightly stronger than the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, but if it were to fight the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, the one which would die would definitely be the Nightmare Ancestor.” said Old Li.

“Why?”

“This is a bit complicated and I can’t explain it clearly. In brief, that Nightmare Ancestor hasn’t appeared for a long time.”said Old Li.

“The Elemental Sect doesn’t have any soul pet that can contend with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, but the Soul Pet Palace has one. However, it’s very mysterious and the Soul Pet Palace has always been the most low-key. Who knows whether they’re hiding some great creature. Ten years ago, a bit of information was leaked, but I don’t know if that rumor is true... strange, why did young master suddenly ask this?” Old Li’s words suddenly came to a halt.

“No reason; I just want to understand.” Chu Mu shook his head and didn’t speak the truth.

Chapter 235: Kingdom Capital, Li City

The things Old Li said before was presumably the strongest soul pets of those great factions. Only, Chu Mu knew that he wouldn't be able to truly understand the power of them, so he only shook his head and rubbed Mo Xie's smooth fur lightly.

"Wuwu~~~" Mo Xie laid very satisfied in Chu Mu's arms, not caring about any of what Old Li said before, comfortably shutting her eyes, waving her nine little tails lightly……

Thinking back to the verbal communication between the Empyrean Hidden Cyan Dragon and Mo Xie before it left, Chu Mu sighed with sorrow. He didn't know if Mo Xie was the "very important thing" that the Empyrean Hidden Cyan Dragon was talking about. If she was……

"How's the relationship between Soul Palace and Soul Alliance?" Chu Mu asked.

"Normal, they aren't allies but they don't fight either. I suggest young master to get closer to Soul Palace. The old fellows in Soul Palace are all stubborn and sly, but they're also all very protective of their people……" Old Li said.

Chu Mu nodded and didn't say much. With the relationship of Liu Binglan, if Chu Mu were to get close to any power, he would try to get close to Soul Palace. However, Chu Mu felt that when his power wasn't strong enough, he shouldn't get deep into any power. Even Soul Palace could have ruthless and conscience-

lacking people……

……

Entering a small city, Chu Mu found a place to stay. He comfortably took a hot water shower and washed away all the blood smell and viciousness that he had built up in the month of killing.

In the past month, Chu Mu had almost finished all the soul cores that he had prepared. Chu Mu didn't want to stay in this small city for long, deciding to head six to seven miles towards Li City first thing in the morning tomorrow.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast was at the seventh phase third stage. Its stamina and speed had already increased a lot, or else they would need at least a month to travel from the edges of the Li Region to Li City.

Mo Xie had mostly napped in the soul pet space for the past month, but she also increased a stage, reaching the sixth phase ninth stage. The Demon Fire Evil Flames were still at the advanced stage, while the blood flames were still at the initial stage.

The Ice Air Fairy hadn't stayed still either, going from the seventh phase first stage to the seventh phase second stage.

After a month of battling, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, though still at the sixth phase ninth stage, was nearing seventh phase.

Zhan Ye was a main improvement target, and it had also reached the sixth phase third stage, evolving its claws from the seventh phase initial stage to seventh phase middle stage. With a sixth rank full form offensive soul claw, its claw strength was barely equal to Mo Xie's.

不过，莫邪的技能要比战也的强上不少，攻击力上战也还是楚暮魂宠中最强的。

However, Mo Xie's techniques were much stronger than Zhan Ye, despite Zhan Ye's attack being the highest of Chu Mu's soul pets.

The White Nightmare had stayed at seventh phase for a long time. Only after the night when Chu Mu entered the little city and fed half of his soul power to the White Nightmare did it finally grow a stage and reach the seventh phase second stage.

The White Nightmare's growing process was very strange. If Chu Mu didn't give it enough soul power, it would act in a fit and not grow……

The Ghost King had gone through a month of battling and went from the fifth phase eighth stage to fifth phase ninth stage. If they reached Li City and bought a sixth level soul crystal, Chu Mu would be able to grow Ghost King to sixth phase.

The sixth level soul crystal's price would only be a few hundred thousand. However, Chu Mu couldn't possibly buy any normal sixth level soul crystal. Normal sixth level soul crystals would be like food for the Ghost King.

With the Ghost King's current types, only condensed soul crystals would have obvious effects. What is known as condensed soul crystals is refining same level soul crystals for their essence and making it into a sixth level energy crystal with a very large energy pool. The price is determined by the amount of sixth level soul crystals used in the refining process.

The condensed sixth level soul crystal and Chu Mu wanted to feed Ghost King was at least sixth phase, so it was at least a few million, or maybe even more……

……

In six or seven days of running, Chu Mu slowly neared the center of Li Region: Li City.

Li City's grandeur was way past what Chu Mu imagined. Chu Mu had seen three tenth level cities, the first of which was White Nightmare Palace.

At that time, when he was riding the Ice Winged Tiger and looked down upon it, the majestic and dignified manner caused a tide to go off in Chu Mu's heart.

The second tenth level city was Jia City. In reality, Jia City wasn't really a tenth level city, because it seemed wretched even in comparison to the ninth level Colored Sky City.

The third tenth level city was the Great Chu Family's Wo Gu City. Wo Gu City was full of an ancient strictness, a city full of history.

Yet the Li City in front of him was even vaster than the White Nightmare City of the Western Kingdom. When Chu Mu rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast near, he felt as if he was a speck of dust.

The flourishing city, endless streams of people... entering such a city would make one completely confused, losing one's sense of direction and maybe even lose sight on one's faith and goals.

"The western Kingdom's Kingdom Capital was controlled by the Luo Region Sect, so its manner was much weaker than Li City's. Li City was Zhan Li Kingdom's Kingdom Capital, so it wasn't on the same level as the Region Capitals in Western Kingdom and other ninth level cities. In reality, Kingdom Capitals should be eleventh level cities." Old Li's voice floated out.

Chu Mu nodded. This was the first time he's entered a Kingdom City, so he was also full of emotions.

Almost in every city's main road, if one were to walk down the main path, one would find the soul pet palace, auction house,

elemental sect, and the soul palace, etc. that soul pet trainers often lingered around.

Chu Mu this time also followed the main path. The main road was very broad, and Chu Mu could often see soul pet trainers that rode their soul pets along the streets, some of which demon types that were very good at dodging. Their speeds were even faster than Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast at full speed, yet they could rely on their exquisite dodging skills to flow through the crowds despite similarly speeding soul pet trainers. Moving clouds and flowing water, this city painted an intense scene.

Before, Chu Mu also saw running soul pet trainers in the cities before, but those city experts clearly weren't as crazy as this city's experts. Seeing those soul pets run through the streets, Chu Mu was afraid if they would accidentally slam into the weaker soul pets around.

"Young master, look under you, you've entered the free zone." Old Li said.

"Free zone?" Chu Mu looked down questioningly before noticing that there was a color difference on the wide main path.

"A free zone means a zone where one can summon soul pets and run at will. Think, most cities are anti-fly zones. If a soul pet trainer had to leave city and walk normally because of pedestrians, they might need a few hours before they could get from inner city to outer in such a big Kingdom Capital. This free zone is sort of a highway, where soul pet trainers don't have to restrict their riding."

Chu Mu nodded. Speaking of which, this was the first time Chu Mu had heard of such. Kingdom Capitals truly are different.

“Wei, is the Dream Beast meant to be used like a mule to walk?” A female voice suddenly came.

The voice was soft and tender, yet had a provocative yet witty tone. Chu Mu turned around and saw a woman dressed in crimson long robes that looked at Chu Mu with recklessness and arrogance.

The long robe covered the woman’s body, but one could see she was the slender yet firm kind. WIth a tapered face, white skin, red lips, shining eyes, and hair to her shoulders, she looked clean cut and relaxed.

This woman gave Chu Mu a feeling of unruliness and finickiness that usually comes with a noble. Another quality was the wildness that emanated from her personality.

What are you looking at, if you can win me, I’ll let you see whatever you want!” The woman truly was wild. Hands on her hips, she pushed her chest forward and glared angrily……

“What win you?” Chu Mu didn’t understand the woman.

“Of course in riding!” The woman stared at Chu Mu, who was being slow.

“Haha, compare riding skills, Miss Sha, how can you compare your riding skills with a man? Who’s riding who? Hahaha!” At this time, an unrestrained sound came through.

“Hahahaha, with Miss Sha’s attitude, definitely she’s riding, hahahaha……”

After saying this, the soul pet trainers nearby that seem like the disciples of higher ups all followed along and started laughing.

This was when Chu Mu realized there were a group of young masters that seemed to be making fun of the woman under broad daylight.

The woman named Miss Sha realized what the group of lewd men were saying and turned red, giving a glare to the good-for-nothing guys.

Seeing Miss Sha angry, the young masters all quickly held their laughter in, but their openly wanton glances revealed their lascivious desires.

“Compare speed, from here to center road!” Miss Sha said to Chu Mu.

“No interest.” Chu Mu shook his head, not really wanting to have anything to do with this group of people.

“……” Miss Sha glared, seething.

“Young master, don’t underestimate such competition. Though its the free zone, many soul pet trainers run here. Competing here not only compares speed, but also the soul pet’s reaction and dodging skills.” Old Li said.

“Haha, get turned down. Miss Sha, this friend seems to be the calm sort. Your appearances don’t even enter his eyes……” Very quickly, the lewd guys before started making fun again.

The young man mocking Miss Sha was very handsome, looking positive and cheerful, marred by a sense of lascivious.

“500,000 bet, if you win, this money is yours.” Miss Sha directly took a hefty gold bag out of her spatial ring.

Chapter 236: Speed and Dodging, Li City Chase

“What if I lose?” Chu Mu glanced at the soul pet under Miss Sha.

The soul pet Miss Sha rode was a Light Rhinoceros. Full of flowing silver hair, it wasn’t tainted by a single speck. Noble and holy, it created a perfect contrast with Chu Mu’s evil and handsome Night Thunder Dream Beast.

“If you lose, you lose. Don’t want anything from you, I just want to compete against your Night Thunder Dream Beast.” Miss Sha said.

This Miss Sha should be an expert of the young generation. Her Light Rhinoceros was a strengthened seventh phase commander. For people able to have such a soul pet, 500,000 was just a small number.

“Forget about the 500,000, just help me find someone.” Chu Mu just remembered, in such a large city, even if he had made a meeting with Ye Qingzi, he still didn’t know how to find the two. Seeing as these young masters and lady should be well known within Li City, he could ask them to help out.

“No problem, there isn’t anyone in Li City I can’t find.” Miss Sha let out a confident smile.

“Commence trading, commence trading! I’ll be banker, put your

bets in now!” Seeing that there will be something to watch, he started yelling like a marketplace trader.

With the young man’s shout, this group of idle young masters all started pulling out money and started the bet.

Chu Mu glanced at the money on the bets. Doing some basic calculations, he found that on this bet was three million gold, of which one was on Chu Mu while the other two million was on Miss Sha.

2:1 bet, even so, Miss Sha stared evilly at the guys that bet on Chu Mu. Those young masters all laughed without shame, while they secretly gave Chu Mu a glare to tell him he must win.

“Alright alright, can’t take your money back now. Let’s go into the air. Once you see me set a fire, you can start. Let me say the rules quickly: Whoever gets to the center street first wins. You can’t use any attacking method, neither can you switch soul pets. You can’t use any soul technique or let your soul pet take any supplementary medicine. Adding on another rule, you can’t hurt any person or soul pet.” That young man said.

Both Chu Mu and Miss Sha nodded, not adding any more.

Just as Chu Mu thought, these young men all held a high status within the city. In such a Kingdom Capital, they didn’t even need to get the sky guards’ permissions to summon their wing type soul pets and fly into the air.

Very quickly, those that put bets down either rode their own wing type soul pets or huddled with those who had wing type soul pets and went into the air. They looked down from above at this straight, yet bustling road.

Chu Mu and Miss Sha all rode their soul pets to the same line. Miss Sha's eyes weren't on the wing type soul pet of the man in the sky, but was instead looking up and down of Chu Mu as she asked with interest, "What's your name?"

"Chu Chen." Chu Mu replied concisely.

"Oh." Miss Sha nodded.

Hundred meters in the sky, a ball of fire suddenly burned. The red glow fell down and lit up the road.

Miss Sha's eyes didn't even watch the skies, but she already knew the flame was lit. Her lithe body tilted forward slightly and immediately, the Light Rhinoceros under her shined with a golden glow, as its silver body became a stream of light, instantly dashing nearly a hundred meters away!

Miss Sha's reactions were so sensitive, that she must have often competed against passing soul pet trainers.

Chu Mu's reactions were half a second slower. When he started running at full speed, Miss Sha was already a hundred meters ahead.

“Young master, this road is very long, so you must handle the usage of techniques well.” Old Li reminded Chu Mu.

Chu Mu naturally understood this. He rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast forward towards the Light Rhinoceros.

“Huhuhu~~~~~~~~”

The wind whistled nearby his ear as the Night Thunder Dream Beast ran, slowly creating a black whirl around him……

“Sousou!!!!!”

Two sounds flew past Chu Mu’s side. The Night Thunder Dream Beast easily overtook two seventh phase Horn Armor Beasts. The turbulent air flow caused by Chu Mu led to both of the people cursing out loud angrily.

Yet, the two could only look at Chu Mu’s back image and curse at empty air. It was their fault that their soul pet just wasn’t as fast as others.

A hundred meters ahead, the Light Rhinoceros’s running route had a lightning-like bend, dodging a wave of soul pets running against the flow.

When dodging, its speed naturally would decrease and the soul

pet must regain speed, so dodging abilities was very important in this match.

After an exquisite dodge, Miss Sha specially turned around to check on Chu Mu, yet she discovered that Chu Mu and Night Thunder Dream Beast also made a very graceful dodge. Not only did they not slow down, but they even got a few dozen meters closer, making the distance between them sub-100 meters.

“He indeed has a some tricks up his sleeves. But, there aren’t too many people here yet. Wait until we’re there, then you’ll see!” Miss Sha smiled.

The nearby structures and slowly walking people were swiftly thrown behind. Those with confidence in their riding skills often ran this quickly through the free zone. Some were easily overtaken by Chu Mu, yet some more powerful ones also easily overtook Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast, and it wasn’t a rare event either, so one could see that Li City also had a huge amount of experts.

As the amount of soul pets in traffic increased, Chu Mu’s distance from Miss Sha slowly grew……

“I’m already two hundred meters behind?” Chu Mu’s eyes wandered into the crowd, suddenly noticing that Miss Sha had already disappeared from his sights.

Chu Mu decisively let Night Thunder Dream Beast cast a technique to chase a little back and started observing Miss Sha.

Very quickly, Chu Mu noticed that Miss Sha's Light Rhinoceros seemed to know the routes of all other soul pets, able to dodge without lowering its speed at all. In fact, every movement was to follow an optimal path, ensuring nothing affects the Light Rhinoceros's speed.

Just by one's eyes, it was very hard to predict the chaotic and pattern-less routes of the soul pets and people on the streets. Chu Mu was slightly confused. How could Miss Sha react so quickly? After all, all of his Night Thunder Dream Beast's dodges felt hurried.

"Is it that she's using her soul remembrance?" Chu Mu immediately thought of the possibility.

Using soul remembrance to detect the movement of soul pets within a few hundred meters, one could dodge preemptively and even find the quickest movement route in the crowd. Not only will one dodge the other running soul pets, but one could also reduce the speed lost due to dodging.

Chu Mu smiled. Though the rules said he couldn't use soul techniques, a soul pet trainer could use one's own soul remembrance to find a route for his soul pet.

No wonder Old Li said this match wasn't only a test of speed. Presumably, in many big cities, such competition was already a tournament that puts agility-based soul pets to test.

“Night, Extreme Speed!” Chu Mu used his soul remembrance to communicate with Night Thunder Dream Beast and tell it the most optimal dodging path.

Night Thunder Dream Beast cast Extreme Speed and its speed suddenly increased, tracing out an exquisite dodging path inside the ceaseless soul pets, perfectly dodging the six massive flying horned beasts that flew towards him.

“Yo, an expert, learning the essence of city chases this quickly.”

In the sky, the young man who hosted the bet watched the long road. He could see that the Night Thunder Dream Beast was no longer dodging at the last second or slowing down for soul pets that suddenly barge out. It could already find an optimal path through the countless soul pets.

Because they were in the sky, they could see the situation very clearly. When those who bet on Chu Mu saw that Chu Mu caught up in understanding and started navigating through the obstacle heavy paths more and more fluidly, they all smiled broadly……

“When facing multiple foes, using one’s soul remembrance to lock onto enemies and using one’s judgement to predict the opponent’s next move to take the initiative is amazing. Though one could be slower than the opponent, as long as one’s battle awareness is superior, one can still defeat the opponent.

Chu Mu before indeed didn’t think of this issue. After this city chase, Chu Mu had learned a new battle tactic.

Because of long periods of staying in battle, Chu Mu's awareness was very keen. Adding the fact that he had a soul master remembrance, after learning this dodging method, his range of perception was naturally more powerful.

Slowly, Chu Mu was about to catch up to Miss Sha.

Riding the Light Rhinoceros, Miss Sha saw that Chu Mu was already right beside her. Her face turned red and immediately, disregarding the massive large-sized beast soul pet gathering ahead, she told her Light Rhinoceros to cast its speed technique!

Light Ray Shadow!

The Light Rhinoceros's four hooves suddenly shone with gold as its speed more than doubled. When it was previously head to head with Chu Mu, it instantly darted a few hundred meters forwards and passed very closely through the beast gathering.

Miss Sha's movements immediately caused the group of young masters in the air to exhale and gasp, secretly surprised at the girl's courage. At those speeds, if she didn't dodge in time and hit one of those large legged beasts, she would definitely fall and hurt herself badly.

Chu Mu naturally couldn't fall behind. Just as he was about to speed up and pass through the beast gathering as well, the beast team seemed to have realized that some people meant trouble. They actually switched their formation to prevent any later soul

pet trainers from passing through.

This formation change would last quite a few seconds. Once they finished changing their formation, the Light Rhinoceros would definitely have disappeared a few hundred meters into the distance. It would be even harder for Chu Mu to catch back up.

Glancing at the noisy markets outside of the free zone, Chu Mu made a decision and rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast right out of the free zone.

“Night, the patch of shadow on the left!” Chu Mu commanded.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast leaped forwards. Its flowing body passed straight through the sun and flew past dozens of people’s heads on the busy streets!

“Heavens, what is that kid doing!!” Seeing this, the crowd in the skies exclaimed.

Chapter 237: Li City's Savage Creature

The left side of the street was a row of many shops. As the sunset continued on its way down, a visible shadow appeared on the left side of the street.

What Chu Mu needed was a shadow!

"Wa!!!!"

"Courting Death!!!!"

An angry roar rang out, and the people on the street saw the Extreme Speed Night Thunder Dream Beast flit over their heads; out of fear, they had a cold sweat.

Chu Mu ignored the curses behind him, and had it lightly touch down in a place without people. Its strong body leapt back into the air and it flew overtop a woman's head, knocking off her tall hat...

They were already close, and that area could allow the Night Thunder Dream Beast to use its shadow speed to its heart's content!

"Quickly dodge, quickly dodge!!"

The people walking in the shadow area saw a soul pet flying directly at them. They all let out panicked expressions and hastily

dodged to one side.

However, when that soul pet melded into the shadow area, its body didn't touch the ground. Instead, it lightly stepped on the shadows, promptly stepping on the air of the shadow area.

"That brat is too awesome!"

"Great, that's great; he's caught up to young lady Sha!"

When the group of young masters in the air who bet on Chu Mu saw this scene, they all opened their eyes wide and began to loudly yell.

"Dadada~~~dadadada~~~~~"

The Night Thunder Dream Beast ran directly over the people's heads, causing a wave of panic to arise while simultaneously giving way to the envy of several people. Especially those young soul pet trainers. It was very rare for them to see such a flashy dark type Dream Beast. Its grace and agility while running was fluid and easy; it was like something gorgeous that was pleasing to the eye....

"Why can't I see the figure of that person?" Young lady Sha turned around, but didn't see Chu Mu. A smile rose on her face and she silently through that the fellow called Chu Chen had definitely been blocked by that wild beast group.

Only, before she could be delighted with her victory, young lady

Sha astonishingly discovered that diagonally from her in the shadows of a street was an elegant and evil demonic pet that stepped in the air past her, flitting by with a whistle!

"How is that possible?!" young lady Sha opened her two beautiful eyes wide. She saw Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast unceasingly increase its speed in the shadow area, ultimately increasing to a speed that was double that of her Light Unicorn's!"

The center of the street was already in front of him, but Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast was still raising its speed; it proceeded to increase the lead to three hundred meters!

A black body and white tail. The streams of air on the Night Thunder Dream Beast's quick moving body manifested into a violent wind as it swept through this bustling street towards the center of the street!

Its body landed on the plaza of the street in an exceptionally free and easy manner. The Night Thunder Dream Beast's eyes were arrogant as it stared at the Light Unicorn behind it.

"You lost." Chu Mu smoothed his hair that was blown into a mess. He gazed at young lady Sha whose face was somewhat unsightly.

"Hmph, you're a cheater." young lady Sha seemed to be unconvinced as she glared at Chu Mu.

Upon speaking here, the young masters who were riding on wing type soul pets landed on the plaza. Those who had bet on the young lady were hanging their heads down in dejection while those who had won by betting on Chu Mu wore a large smile on their faces because they had won a small sum of money.

“Dong Qing, you be the judge. Just now when he ran through the free region, did he cheat?” said the young lady Sha somewhat angrily.

“Dong Qing? Dong Qing? Get out here!” yelled young lady Sha a few times. Yet, when she found that the young man called Dong Qing was counting money there, she stomped her feet in anger.

“Oh, you’re calling me? Eh, cheat? He didn’t. Young lady Sha, there was never a rule that one had to be in the free area.” said the young man called Dong Qing as he laughed.

“But… but it was stepping on the air. That’s the same as flying!” young lady Sha pointed at Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast while speaking.

“Stepping on the air is allowed. Who made it so that your Light Unicorn couldn’t step on the air? Young lady Sha, you’re trying to twist the words to make logic. Your Light Unicorn inherently is of the light attribute, and just now it was the afternoon; with sunlight, your Light Unicorn takes advantage of others. Someone else managed with great difficulty to wait until shadows appeared. How is stepping in the air considered breaking the rules?” mischievously smiled Dong Qing as he spoke.

“You… hmph, I won’t play with you hoodlums anymore; this young lady is going back.” young lady Sha’s face was gloomy as she jumped onto her Light Unicorn and left by herself.

Dong Qing had a face of helplessness as he watched the bossy young lady Sha leave. After he saw her leave, he wore a smile as he said to Chu Mu: “Haha, friend, you just helped me win a large amount. You want to find someone, right? I’ll help you find the friend. There shouldn’t be anyone who I can’t find in Li City, eh?”

Chu Mu nodded his head. He ignored young lady Sha who had left in a fit of anger and roughly described Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng once.

In the past, Chu Mu had convened with Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng near Soul Palace. Thus, he only had Dong Qing help him search for that pair of brother and sister in the residences of the nearby Soul Palace.

“Your Night Thunder Dream Beast is truly a god horse. Especially when it reached the shadows from the crowds. Those with high skills have great courage… friend, I see that it’s evening already. How about we eat dinner together. You helped me win quite a bit; I’ll treat, I’ll treat.” Dong Qing was outspokenly magnanimous.

Chu Mu knew that there probably still was a bit of time before he found the Ye Family brother and sister. Since Dong Qing was a Li City person and Chu Mu happened to need to ask a few things, he didn’t decline. He went with Dong Qing and a group of young

masters that looked like hoodlums towards the fine liquor and fine cuisine avenue.

“I forgot to introduce myself. I’m called Dong Qing and am the vice captain of Li City’s Aerial Guard. These are all my friends. I won’t go into details about where we’re from since we’re all scoundrels from the Li City. We often like playing this. That said, you should have come from somewhere else, right?” said Dong Qing.

“Mhm, I’m Chu Chen and am a vagabond that gains experience everywhere.” Chu Mu considered himself to be a vagabond soul pet trainer.

Dong Qing’s introduction just now truly was rather modest. Chu Mu could see that this group of people weren’t that bad; at least those wing type soul pets that they summoned before didn’t have weak fighting strength. Especially the young man called Dong Qing; he had just been riding on a Horizon Feather Bird.

The Horizon Feather Bird was a commander rank wing type soul pet and its fighting strength was among the best of wing types. Chu Mu saw that this Horizon Feather Bird had already reached the seventh phase and was strengthened so that it wasn’t weaker than a peak commander...

“Haha, a visitor from far away. Take a seat.” said Dong Qing.

The other young masters were all casual and each on found a seat to sit in. They seemed to be familiar with the shop owners and

female servants as they casually called out to them. Furthermore, when those cute female servants brought the tasty food, these fellows flirted with them so much that their faces were flushed red.

"Amongst the younger generation, there aren't many who can beat young lady Sha. Brother Chu Chen certainly is a character." praised Dong Qing.

"That's right. Young lady Sha is a powerful female horse that not everyone can ride. It was rare that you were able to subdue her. Hahaha!" the young fellows who were all as bad as Dong Qing began to laugh loudly.

"Dong Qing, aren't you still supposed to be on patrol tonight? Why are you still drinking such strong alcohol?" said a young master whose hands were full of rings as he laughed.

"Oh, I almost forgot. Crap, those old fellows truly are something. In the most recent days, they've intensified the patrols. It's already been a few nights since I've spent one with my woman..." Dong Qing had just poured the wine, but helplessly shook his head.

"It's alright. I've already been helping you feeding your woman. Hahaha." laughed another young man.

"Scram." Dong Qing kicked out and knocked down the other fellow. That young master fell into a very unsightly state, but was still continuously laughing.

“Then again, most recently Li Cheng’s security has become a bit stricter. It seems that many important people have come. What happened?”

“Yu Jia, that brat, got into big trouble. It’s said that he’s to be tried by Soul Palace.” said Dong Qing.

“That’s enough. Who doesn’t know about this. Shouldn’t us brothers be properly celebrating this event? One Yu Jia shouldn’t be enough to cause such commotion in our Li City.”

When he heard about Yu Jia, Chu Mu grew interested. He didn’t like to speak and had only been eating while listening to the talking between these young master brothers.

“How would I know? My father didn’t say anything. I only know that there’s something in the city; also, I advise you guys not to go out in the middle of the night for a stroll in this next period of time…” Dong Qing casually bit into a piece of lamb meat.

After speaking, Dong Qing intentionally glanced at Chu Mu. No one else discussed the matter he had just mentioned and he opened his out, asking: “Why did Brother Chu Chen come to Li City?”

“I’m pretty much passing by, but will stay here for a bit of time. I’ll be visiting the market or the Soul Pet Palace for a stroll.” responded Chu Mu.

In truth, Chu Mu was somewhat curious as to what Dong Qing

had just mentioned. Only, Dong Qing's words were obscure and didn't provide any clear information.

While speaking, a middle-aged man that looked like a henchman walked in and said to Dong Qing: "Young master, the people have been found."

Dong Qing nodded his head.

"They're in a spirit medicine shop on Western Street in the heart of the city... also, the aerial guards there had me bring you a message: There seems to have been something slightly abnormal to have appeared near the Western Street in the heart of the city. They need to you to head there." said the henchman.

"What happened?"

The henchman hesitated a while before saying: "A few soul pet trainers and soul pets were violently killed. According to residents, there seems to frequently have been some strange thing moving about in the middle of the night these past few days. When we asked them, they said that when it reached late at night, they would tightly shut their doors and weren't able to see what it was..."

Dong Qing creased his eyebrows and said: "Eating dinner doesn't even put your mind at rest. Whatever, you guys continue to eat. This young master is on duty."

After speaking, Dong Qing stood up.

“Go go, tie the tent down.” these young masters all waved their hands.

“How about I go with you since my friends are there too...” said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu also wanted to go towards Western Street in the center of the city. Thus, he left the table and headed there with Dong Qing.

Chapter 238: Li City's Savage Creature (2)

It was night in Li City.

A faint yellow street lamp shone, making the city seem like it was draped in a layer of elegant and noble muslin, accentuating the magnificence and various natures of the entire body...

The center of the city's western street belonged to the residential district of the heart of the city. Although it was only one street, it was extremely long, and the residences lined on either side like a forest.

When night fell, this street area seemed rather cold and dreary; it was as if one had walked into a town surrounded by mountains. Even when flying in the air, one could even feel a faint trace of the night fog.

"When an abnormal situation occurs, there is bound to be a demon. Sigh, don't let me catch you..." Dong Qing sneered and urged the Horizon Feather Bird slowly downwards.

Chu Mu and Dong Qing rode together on the Horizon Feather Bird; although the Night Thunder Dream beast could step in the air at night, it wasn't able to freely glide through the air like wing type soul pets.

"Captain has arrived..."

“Captain!”

“Captain!”

……

In the alley, a few soul pet trainers riding on mounts formed a circle and encircled this residential alley, preventing anyone else from approaching.

Chu Mu and Dong Qing directly jumped off the back of the Horizon Feather Bird’s back and steadily landed in front of the five city guards.

Dong Qing strode to the location that was dyed in blood. He stared at theses corpses that had been bitten into a gruesome state. His expression turned rather serious.

Chu Mu swept his gaze over these corpses and his eyes faintly changed.

Laying in front of Chu Mu were two human corpses and three soul pet corpses. Since the soul pet corpses had been bitten so that not even a few bones remained, it was very hard to determine what soul pets they were merely based on these remnants.

The two humans had simply been killed, though. One of them had their stomach split open and the half of the other’s head had been cut. There was no other indication of blood on other parts of

their bodies and the killer clearly wasn't interested in human flesh.

"Captain, this is the sixth such instance. We've blocked off the news, but it's hard to control the mouths of the surrounding residents. There have already been a few rumors spreading in certain areas, causing others to feel alarmed." said a young guard.

"Do you guys think it was done by a human, or was it some wild soul pet with strange arts that snuck into the city perpetrating crimes?" asked Dong Qing.

All four sides of the city had very high walls, and there wasn't a very high chance that a wild beast could sneak into the city; however, there were a few exceptions.

For instance, some intelligent stealth-type soul pet could have snuck past the city's guards into the city; it would then ordinarily live in places with few people and come out at night to attack soul pet trainers and soul pets.

Another possibility was a soul pet raised by a family or faction that fled due to carelessness. This probability was slightly higher, and the soul pet that escaped, since it couldn't exit the city, hid in some place. At night, it would attack humans and eat soul pets...

"Their spatial rings are still there. If it was committed by a human, normally the person would take the spatial ring. There's another possibility that this person simply looked down on the riches of these soul pet trainers and had a goal of using their soul pets to raise their own soul pet." analyzed a guard.

“Are there other clues?”

“No, the killer is very cunning.”

“Then tonight everyone shall stay up late and patrol. We must resolve this issue as soon as possible.”

“Yes!”

……

“Brother Chu Chen, it seems that it isn’t too safe in this neighborhood. If your two friends have no ability to defend themselves, I suggest that they shouldn’t stay here long. Damn, you’ve come from far away to Li City, yet I’ve let you see a bad aspect of Li City. This truly is…” Dong Qing could still be regarded to treat Chu Mu politely.

“The strength of my two friends are not inferior to mine. Defending themselves isn’t a problem. I’ll be here in the near future and if I find any clues, I’ll notify you.” said Chu Mu.

“That would be the best. If you have any trails, directly find a city guard and just have them notify me. I’ll immediately come over.” said Dong Qing.

Chu Mu nodded his head and didn’t stay here any longer. He

began walking in the direction Dong Qing pointed at, and headed towards the spirit medicine shop that the Ye Family brother and sister were at.

The medicine shop Ye Qingzi had rented wasn't in the most bustling location, causing Chu Mu to wonder why she intentionally picked this area. After all, this place was considered a residential district, and the business wouldn't be very good...

The murder case wasn't too far from the spirit medicine shop that Ye Qingzi had rented. Chu Mu didn't waste his soul power by summoning the Night Thunder Dream Beast and instead walked along this rather cold and cheerless street.

Chu Mu took a shortcut instead of Western Street's main street. Perhaps because the most recent news of the terrifying incidents had already spread, but these relatively diagonal alleys and small streets all had shut their doors tightly. There simply was no one to be seen.

"Sou sou~~~~~~~"

Two abnormal sounds of the wind rapidly flitted behind Chu Mu across this alley. Chu Mu's perception ability's were exceptionally sharp and practically the moment the wind rose, he turned his head.

A black colored figure flew past and Chu Mu released his soul remembrance. He locked onto the two rapidly moving black figures.

Just as Chu Mu's soul remembrance completely found the two creature's movements, they suddenly jumped out of his soul remembrance detection range, fleeing into the distance.

Chu Mu's heart sank. These two creatures had evidently wanted to approach him just now, but after they felt his soul remembrance lock on, they immediately jumped out of his detection range. This wasn't a coincidence, and could only mean that these two creatures had extremely strong perception abilities as they were able to detect the locking on of others.

Realizing that these were two creatures with bad intentions, Chu Mu slowly chanted an incantation and summoned the night time pet, the Night Thunder Dream Beast, in front of him.

"Hui~~~~"

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's nighttime detection abilities were even stronger than Chu Mu's. Its demon detection was released and its two black eyes penetrated the darkness, locking onto a hidden alley next to Chu Mu.

"Hui~~~~"

The Night Thunder Dream Beast didn't wait for Chu Mu to give an order and instantly let out a long neigh. A black colored death ray began fermenting in its mouth before it promptly spat it towards the long alley!

The black energy flew straight down the alley and abruptly exploded in the air halfway down!!

“Hong~~~~”

The death ray exploded and instantly, on the house walls on either side appeared signs of demolition. A powerful stream of air swept out of the alley!

Chu Mu hadn’t sensed the abnormality of the alley just now, and when the energy had erupted just now, he suddenly discovered a creature knocked flying in the covert of the shadows.

“Night attack creatures. They can hide their aura and become invisible at night.Young master must be careful.” said Old Li.

Chu Mu’s heart tensed; he never expected to encounter such a terrifying creature in the city!

Night invisibility was one of the most strange abilities of soul pets. Most soul pets that possessed this ability were exceptionally frightening as they could silently kill any defenseless person or soul pet.

“Si si~~~”

A muffled shout rang out of the alley from that invisible creature.

It seemed to have realized it had been found and after it crawled up, it stuck to the alley's wall. As if it melded into the wall, it directly disappeared from Chu Mu's field of vision.

No long after, a soft sound came from the alley. When Chu Mu looked in, he discovered that the residents near the alley had detected the abnormality. While trembling with fear, they began making reckless movements.

"Why... why are you making so much noise... you're not even resting at night... could it be... could it be..." just at this moment, a middle aged man staggered out of the end of the alley.

This middle aged man's face was completely drunken red and he was further clutching onto a sack of wine. He hurled curses while pouring the wine down his throat.

With every step, he would stagger three times. This drunkard was already fully drunk and ultimately rested against the wall, immediately falling into a sleep.

"Quickly leave this place!" shouted Chu Mu as he reminded this drunkard without any perception of danger.

However, the moment Chu Mu's voice faded, the figure of a claw gradually appeared inside the alley's wall. With exceptional languor, it swiped across the drunkard's head.

"Shua!!!!"

Pieces of brain and blood flew out and nauseatingly stuck onto the wall!

The drunkard had his head cut off while still stuck in drunken stupor. His body twitched a few times before completely losing life force.

Chu Mu's heart sank. Just now, the speed of the claw had clearly been very slow. However, Chu Mu wasn't able to see where that soul pet was at all. If he hadn't focused his soul remembrance on that place, he wouldn't have even been able to see how that drunkard died.

"Old Li, what kind of thing is that." Chu Mu's face turned rather serious. For some reason, Chu Mu felt that the small alley that was accessible from all sides had many strange auras. There were also many eyes that would make one tremble staring at him.

"I don't know either. I suggest that young master quickly leave this place. Those things could be gathered in this area." said Old Li.

Chu Mu nodded his head and jumped onto the Night Thunder Dream Beast's back. He had it promptly use Extreme Speed and rushed towards another small street.

The direction in which they headed towards Ye Qingzi's spirit medicine shop had an extremely dense aura. Chu Mu realized that they could not pass through there, and he could only pick another route. Although he was pretty much running in the opposite

direction, it was best to first break free of those savage creatures...

“Hui~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast suddenly increased its speed and ran in a direction where it thought there was no danger.

Turning around a bend, what emerged in front of Chu Mu’s eyes really was a spacious night street. The pale white moonlight spilled onto the limestone path, making it seem peaceful and empty...

Only, that black figure that would move from time to time added a rather terrifying and sinister feeling to this district!

“Si si~~~~~~’

Sounds that resembled vipers hissing came from both sides. As Chu Mu passed through this small path, he suddenly discovered the moving black figures were growing increasingly many on the surrounding houses, walls and shops. These things were like shadows that followed behind the Night Thunder Dream Beast. Their sharp and terrifying claws twinkled with a cold light under the shining moonlight!

“We’re being watched!”

Chu Mu’s heart sank. He never would have thought that he would become the target of Li City’s savage creatures!

Chapter 239: Night City Scare

The center city's west city had already continuously had people move out of there and temporarily live in different places. After all, after the serial killing incident, each one cruel and dangerous, the citizens without fighting strength naturally didn't dare to live there.

In the recent days, the Li City's aerial guards had also increased surveillance on the middle city west street. These soul pet trainers that fly in the air to maintain order could occasionally see some strange shadows dash from one alley to another, disappearing like a black cat.

Yet, they had no idea what they were, and were only able to assume that they were little animals that were lost that people owned.

It hadn't even entered deep night when the western street had already become very cold and empty. There were about three teams encircling the skies of the western street. They didn't fly too high. After all, if they flew high, they wouldn't be able to detect any abnormalities.

"Leader, there's a soul pet trainer riding a black soul pet running like crazy, something's strange there!" A aerial guard that just surveilled that region came over and said.

"Gutong Alley? Isn't that where Chu Chen had to pass through? Can it be……" Dong Qing suddenly realized something and said,

“Quick, follow me to go check it out!”

Dong Qing’s Horizon Feather Bird’s flying speed was fastest. When it flapped its wings, it flew fifty meters forwards and towards the Gu Tong Alley area.

The Horizon Feather Bird flew at about 100 meters altitude. At this height, he could see the criss crossing little pathways through west street. Though he couldn’t see anything appearing in this residential area, he could still feel some abnormality.

After about five minutes, the Dong Qing that rode his Horizon Feather Bird finally neared the Gu Tong area.

Dong Qing didn’t see Chu Mu, but found quite a few corpses in the dark alleyways. It was the residents who lived near the area!

“Check for survivors!” Dong Qing’s face revealed anger and roared towards the air guards behind him.

The air guards saw the corpses of the citizens who died on the streets and the all grew somber, quickly landing from the skies to see if there was anyone alive.

Dong Qing continued to fly and passed through the complicated Gu Tong Alley area. When he reached the more off-centered City Center Forest Area, he went all cold in the realization that he found thirty more dead bodies there!

In a night, thirty bodies, and all defenseless civilians. As the vice captain of the aerial guards, Dong Qing was already unbelievably angry.

Casting an incantation, Dong Qing opened up a soul pact symbol and summoned another wing type soul ept.

“Go, tell the situation here to brother!” Dong Qing said to his soul pet.

“Yi~~~~~” That soul pet let out a long call and flapped its wings to fly towards the busy center city main street.

……

“In front!” Flying past a cluster of short street lamps, Dong Qing finally found Chu Mu.

Yet, what scared Dong Qing was, in the messy little alleyways, there were ten things that looked like black cat demons that chased Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast!

Looking down from the skies, the Night Thunder Dream Beast dashed speedily through the residential area, sometimes passing through straight alleyways, sometimes changing its route lightning fast, sometimes jumping up and running past walls and roofs……

And in this constant changing of movement, the dozen of black

cat like creatures constantly attacked the Night Thunder Dream Beast from all directions.

“So fast!!” Watching the Night Thunder Dream Beast move in the night light nimbly, Dong Qing couldn’t help but let out a sigh.

At this time, the Night Thunder Dream Beast was twice the speed of when it was competing against Miss Sha. If before, the Night Thunder Dream Beast had such speeds, Miss Sha could’ve been thrown over thousands of meters behind!

“This Chu Chen still hid some strength. His Night Thunder Dream Beast has clearly reached advanced Exquisite Dodging too!” Dong Qing said quietly.

Dong Qing knew it wasn’t time to be surprised. He rode his Horizon Feather Bird downwards and stuck near the roofs as he neared Chu Mu and his Night Thunder Dream Beast.

“Chu Chen brother, quickly leap on air upwards!” Dong Qing realized the ten evil creatures were very hard to deal with, so he quickly yelled towards Chu Mu.

“Wind Dragon Bind!” Chu Mu casted an incantation!

A Wind Dragon Bind curled around Chu Mu and his Night Thunder Dream Beast. Three evil beasts that leaped forward to attack was thrown away by Chu Mu’s soul technique. Taking this opportunity, Chu Mu quickly let Night Thunder Dream Beast jump

into the air.

Night Thunder Dream Beast's Night Dance couldn't last for long. Chu Mu had already used it before, yet these things were like shadows, always chasing, unyielding. When Night Thunder Dream Beast's Night Dance disappeared, they started their crazed attacks.

Chu Mu had been chased from Gu Tong street all the way to here. With the Night Thunder Dream Beast's speed, it shouldn't have been an issue to shake off these wild soul pets. Especially with Chasing Wind Pursuing Moon, it could reach three times max speed.

Yet, what caused Chu Mu to be confused was that these things had some unknown technique that allowed them to, after being thrown off, appear again from somewhere, never falling behind!

It was fortunate that Chu Mu had recently learned to combine soul technique with dodging. If not for the night Thunder Dream Beast having advanced level dodging now, they would've been dragged into a bloody mess already.

"Hui~~~~~~"

The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out a long hiss as its forward limbs retracted slightly and its back limbs pushed forward forcefully. It leaped right into the night sky, flying thirty meters upwards as the wind dragion bind protected them.

Dong Qing's aerial control was also significant. When the Night Thunder Dream Beast reached its peak, the Horizon Feather Bird just happened to fly under Ye, letting Night Thunder Dream Beast land sturdily on its body.

"Sisi!!! Sisisisi!!!!!!!!!!!

Seven or eight black cat-like creatures used the rooftop as a jumping pad and dashed into the skies with claws extended.From all directions they assaulted the Horizon Feather Bird that had flown low!

"Light Screen!" The incantation was instantly finished. As Dong Qing lifted both hands high up, a light screen obstacle shrouded the Horizon Feather Bird.

When the claws of the evil beings all attacked the screen, a few strong ones still pierced through and ripped into Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast and Dong Qing's Horizon Feather bird, sending crimson blood everywhere!

"Lift up!"

The wounds only caused the Horizon Feather Bird to wobble slightly, unable to affect its flight. With a flap of both wings, it created a gust of wind that sent it quickly into the air!

As the Horizon Feather Bird lifted off, the evil creatures on the ground all let out angry hisses.

Chu Mu eyed the congregation of the things from above. When he saw that they strangely disappeared into the dark alleyways as they dispersed, his face grew solemn.

“Are you wounded?” Dong Qing said seriously, a complete change from the hedonistic manner before.

“My dream beast is hurt. These things’ claws are poisonous. Your Horizon Feather Bird should also be infected. Fly towards my friend, she’s a soul teacher that can heal.” Chu Mu said.

Dong Qing just looked at his soul pet’s wound, and indeed found the wound to be colored an unusual green.

“Is the poison deadly?” Dong Qing asked.

“No clue as of now, let’s cure it first.” Chu Mu said.

Dong Qing watched uneasily at the empty city area shrouded with a layer of gloom, seemingly fazed by the cruel soul pet from before. Yet, when he remembered that he probably couldn’t finish his surveillance without curing his Horizon Feather Bird, he couldn’t do anything else but fly towards the soul medicine store on west street.

Chu Mu ran the other way, so flying back took around ten minutes. Luckily, there were no longer strange things appearing near the medicine store.

Dong Qing rode his Horizon Feather Bird and landed right in the courtyard of the store. Just as it landed, a pair of dark eyes appeared in a corner of the courtyard, watching Dong Qing and his Horizon Feather Bird coldly.

Dong Qing realized the danger and was just about to chant an incantation when Chu Mu stopped him, “It’s my friend’s soul pet……”

In the shadows of the courtyard, the War Court Black Beast covered in black fur slowly walked out from the shadows, looking arrogant and apathetic.

Ye Qingzi’s War Court Black Beast recognized Chu Mu. It stepped around the Horizon Feather Bird in a circle before slowly returning back to its previous spot, merging back into the shadows.

Dong Qing specially glanced at the well hidden War Court Black Beast and was secretly surprised. This friend of Chu Chen’s was truly special, having such a formidable soul pet.

……

The door of the room opened lightly as Ye Qingzi stood silently at the doorway in a silk robe.

Ye Qingzi should’ve been sleeping before. Her hair was pulled up, falling down to her full chest. Her delicate face had remnants of

drowsiness……

Ye Qingzi wasn't the lazy type of girl, so she made some adjustments and woke up. Her beautiful eyes shot through the darkness to stare at Chu Mu and Dong Qin.

"You're here……" Ye Qingzi smiled lightly.

From the momnet Ye Qingzi walked out, Dong Qing's eyes were deadly locked onto the beauty, and he couldnt help but reveal infatuation in his eyes.

"Our soul pets are poisoned. Qingzi, can you heal them?" Chu Mu told Ye Qingzi using remembrance of his "Chu Chen" identity and quickly went over what happened before.

Ye Qingzi seemed to have already concocted the antidote beforehand. When she walked into the hall, it only took her a minute to take out two green colored flasks of antidote.

"Rub it onto your soul pets' wounds, the poison will quickly fade." Ye Qingzi said.

Chu Mu took the bottle over and rubbed it onto Ye's wounded portions.

Dong Qing also quickly rubbed the medicine in, yet his eyes glanced at Ye Qingzi multiple times in the process……

“I felt it yesterday, but I didn’t expect this many to jump out today.” Ye Qingzi lead Chu Mu and Dong Qin into the hall to sit.

“Do you know what they are?” Dong Qin immediately asked.

“I understand them somewhat, but I’m not too sure either.” Ye Qingzi said delicately.

Chapter 240: Strange Demon Claw

Ye Qingzi stood up and slowly walked to the medicinal room. After a short moment, she picked out a large and transparent medicinal jar.

Inside the medicinal jar was some liquid. Within it, there was a beast claw. The beast claw's outer skin was a strange color, and it was full of keratin, kind of looking like scales.....

"This is the claw of a savage creature that I hurt a few days ago. This organism is very special; no matter if it dies or loses body parts, as long as any part of its body leaves the main body, it would quickly become a black powder. The real reason we can't find evidence on what type of soul pet it is is because of this. Only under the submergence of liquid can we really keep its corpse....." Ye Qingzi said.

With Ye Qingzi's words, Dong Qing finally understood. That was the reason why they clearly found traces of soul pet trainers in battle, yet they couldn't find even a scrap of evidence. It was no wonder his aerial guards couldn't find any clues. These strange soul pets had self destruct abilities built into every one of their body parts.

"There's a lot of citizens nearby, but they very rarely attack them. From this, we can see that the thing doesn't purely want to eat meat, or that they don't like human meat. From my guesses, these savage creatures want to absorb energy....." Ye Qingzi put the medicine jar on the table beside and slowly twisted open the cap.

She pulled a soul core out of the spatial ring and crushed the soul core using soul remembrance, injecting the energy into the bottle……

The soul core was like fluorescent powder, slowly dissolving in the medicine bottle, causing the liquid to let out some light……

Chu Mu and Dong Qing both looked at the bottle with confusion, not knowing why Ye Qingzi injected the energy within the soul core into the bottle.

“Gegegege~~~~~~~~~”

Suddenly, the liquid in the jar started churning, and the presumed dead demon claw started to move. It started frantically ramming the jar sides, wanting to escape.

With a few swipes, it quickly absorbed all the soul core’s energy, which caused the claws to vibrate faster and faster, already leaving some clear-cut marks within the inner surface!

The soul core’s glow was already weak. The claw had seemed to have morphed into a crazy creature. Realizing that it could escape from above, it suddenly sank to the bottom and curled its claws, like a spider reading to leap!

“Pa~~~~~”

Just as the claw was about to jump out of the jar, Ye Qingzi unhurriedly and accurately slammed the cap on, slapping the claw back into the bottle.

“This……” Chu Mu and Dong QIng’s face was full of surprise. Having fought in soul pet world for this long, this was the first time he had seen such strange creature. Even a claw that had left its owner could move individually!

“They’re like zombies. They need energy to activate their bodies, and the more energy they have the stronger they are. This is also why they rarely attack civilians. Normal civilians wouldn’t give them much energy……”

Dong Qing already opened his mouth. He would never have thought that the issue he and his team had lost brain cells over for several days had found an answer at this beauty’s lips……

“But, today, they attacked civilians and killed about thirty people.” Dong Qing said.

Chu Mu nodded. When he was running through the city, he found quite a few corpses, and as long as anyone walked around in dark places, the savage creatures would attack without hesitation.

“Have the corpses been bitten or gnawed on?” Ye Qingzi said.

“Don’t think so, should be pure killing.” Chu Mu said.

“These days, other than making medicine, I’ve spent the rest of my time understanding these creatures. My guess and judgement shouldn’t be mistaken. These civilians don’t have energy within their body, so attacking them can’t make them full or increase their strength. If tonight many people died, then it is against common sense. Unless, there’s another organism within this area.” Ye Qingzi lowered her head to think.

“By Miss’s words, this event isn’t that simple. Seems like I have to report to the city governance and get more people.” Dong Qing said strictly.

“These things are very dangerous. Let your subordinates all be more careful. Its best if you get a soul teacher over, so even if they’re poisoned, someone could provide a cure.” Ye Qingzi could tell that Dong Qing was the aerial guard around and gave a word of precaution.

“En, thank you for your assistance, miss!” Dong Qing cupped his fists.

“Brother Chu Mu, I must go back to surveillance. If you live here, you be careful too. Oh, also, I put out a reward before. Since your friend is so knowledgeable of this organism and is also top tier within the young generation, if time allows, help us resolve this issue. I’ll give the reward to you.” Dong Qing said.

“En, I will consider that.” Chu Mu nodded.

Ye Qingzi gifted Dong Qing some low effect antidotal medicine

and, after Dong Qing thanked her once more, he didn't stay any longer. He rode his Horizon Feather Bird back into the air and continued the patrol for that night.

After Dong Qing left, there was only Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi in the hall left. Chu Mu was still thinking of the previous incident. Ye Qingzi just sat aside, eyes watching Chu Mu……

"What's wrong?" Feeling Ye Qingzi's gaze, Chu Mu lifted an eyebrow.

Ye Qingzi laughed lightly, her beautiful face like a blossoming lotus, "I'm just weirded out that you actually know how to deal with other people."

"……" Chu Mu laughed bitterly and explained, "It's not that I'm self-enclosed. It's just that, before, everyone I faced was a prisoner. My first instinct was to view them as an enemy. Now that I've lived normally for this long, how would I still be like that? And hearing you say that, why does it feel like you know me so well?"

A pink blush appeared on Ye Qingzi's face and she quickly changed the topic, "Have you found the Ancient Azure Devil Tree's fruit?"

"En, I found it. Have you collected the rest?" Chu Mu asked.

"I am still missing one thing. I planned on buying it at Li City, but there wasn't any the past few days, so I plan on checking again

tomorrow.” Ye Qingzi said.

“Perfect, I also have things I want to get rid of. Let’s travel to the exchange market tomorrow.” Chu Mu said.

A strengthening soul item for Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Ghost King were all must-buys, or else Chu Mu would have a tough chance in his battle against Yu He.

“En.” Ye Qingzi nodded.

“How is your brother doing?” Chu Mu asked.

“A lot better. I’ll bring you to your room. You’ve just entered Li City today, didn’t you?” Ye Qingzi said.

Ye Qingzi brought Chu Mu to his room and talked simply with Chu Mu for a little while before returning to her own room.

For safety, Chu Mu specially summoned Mo Xie and told her to sleep at the bedside. This way, if there was any special situation, they could immediately respond.

Mo Xie laid down on the soft bed and curled her nine little tails around her delicate body. With a yawn, she drowsily dozed off.

……

The second day, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi went to the center plaza location.

The center plaza was very broad, able to hold over ten thousand people.

Smooth white granite floor, highly standing pillar carvings, formidable statues, dignified honor Heaven Platform……

Around the stadium were the large factions' palaces. Kingdom Capital was after all the Kingdom Capital, so all of the palaces of the factions were majestic and stretched hundreds of meters of golden land. If one stood in the center of the plaza and looked around, one would feel like they entered the most lavish inner quarters of an emperor.

Chu Mu first needed to deal with everything he had gotten. Only then would he have enough money to buy the expensive soul items.

Ye Qingzi first entered the exchange market and looked through the dazzling lists to find the soul item and medicinal ingredient she needed.

Chu Mu still had around 3 million gold left, but after going to Soul Pat Palace, he found that the soul cores he had weren't enough anymore. He bought a month's worth of food and used up the last 3 million, causing Chu Mu to become penniless yet again.

“Bell Noise Concubine, 5 million gold, maybe the eighth rank soul crystal could reach 20 million gold……”

Chu Mu estimated it himself. The Bell Noise Concubine and eighth rank soul crystal could net him around 25 million gold. Afterwards, the soul items, soul crystals, soul cores, and captured soul pets within Yuan Forest could get him around 10 million.

“Hopefully I can sell them all for 35 million.” Chu Mu estimated and handed it to a highly respected seller of Soul Pet Palace to sell the items.

A Seller was a rather special job in Soul Pet Palace. They were responsible for selling the valuables of wandering soul pet trainers and taking commission from the sales.

These Sellers often had reputations. Those with good status and high reputation often always tried their hardest to sell a good price for things that soul pet trainers handed them. Since, the higher the price, the more money they would gain as well.

For people like Chu Mu, who weren’t good at selling things, hiring a Seller was rather convenient, and could also guarantee his items to reach their peak prices.

After hiring a seller, Chu Mu headed towards the exchange center. Very quickly, he found Ye Qingzi, who was looking through medicinal ingredients in the main hall.

“What did you sell?” Ye Qingzi asked curiously.

“A low phase Bell Noise Concubine and an eighth rank soul crystal, among other scattered items.” Chu Mu replied.

“Eighth rank soul crystal, you sure are lucky……wait, did you say Bell Noise Concubine?” Ye Qingzi asked questioningly.

“En, what’s up?” Chu Mu asked, not understanding.

Ye Qingzi feigned anger cutely, “Don’t you know what type of soul pet trainer I am? Give me a price and I’ll buy it from you……”

Chu Mu slapped himself in the forehead. He had just remembered that a soul pet like Bell Noise Concubine would be very suitable for Ye Qingzi. Ye Qingzi was going the supporting route, and was also a soul teacher, so she needed such an intelligent plant world soul pet……

“I’ll go grab it back now, hopefully it hadn’t been sold already……” Chu Mu laughed embarrassingly.

“Then go quickly. Oh, right, I found a soul item that suits your Devil Tree Battle Soldier very well. It’s a Natural Wood Blood Crystal, costing about 30 million. If you have enough……” Ye Qingzi said.

Chapter 241: Terrifying Plot

When Chu Mu reached the Soul Pet Palace, the polite seller had already put the Bell Noise Concubine on the market. Ultimately, Chu Mu tragically had to buy back his Bell Noise Concubine before giving his remaining few hundred thousand gold coins to the seller.

This seller's efficiency was very high, and he quickly connected Chu Mu to a buyer. Chu Mu only had to wait there for about an hour and those items were sold. What made Chu Mu a little bit disappointed was that these items were only sold for 28 million gold coins. It was slightly less than Chu Mu had anticipated

"I'm still missing 2 million gold coins. The Natural Wood Blood Crystal..." Chu Mu was somewhat helpless.

All of his remaining money still wasn't enough to strengthen the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, let alone the Ghost King's concentrated crystals.

After putting away the 28 million gold coins,Chu Mu returned to the market. At this time, Ye Qingzi had already bought all her necessary spirit items and medicinal ingredients from the auction hall.

"I've already bought the Natural Wood Blood Crystal you need. It was 29 million gold coins." Ye Qingzi said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu was still afraid he wouldn't be able to pick up the

Natural Wood Blood Crystal and this was considered a nice surprise. He gave his 28 million gold coins to Ye Qingzi as well as the Bell Noise Concubine.

After Ye Qingzi received Chu Mu's 28 million gold coins, she paid Chu Mu 4 million, saying it was the price to buy the Bell Noise Concubine. Chu Mu presently was extremely lacking in money and didn't decline.

"Do you still have to buy the sixth level concentrated ghost and rock crystal? I can't help you with that. I only have a few million gold coins; aside from the medicine ingredients I bought over the past few days, I bought a few spirit items for my brother to strengthen his soul pets." said Ye Qingzi.

Chu Mu bitterly laughed. Right now, a few ten million gold coins was already hard to meet his requirements. There was no need to mention buying soul equipment for his soul pets.

"Why don't you take that mission. The gold shouldn't be low and I'll help you." said Ye Qingzi.

"Sure, that's the only way." Chu Mu helplessly shook his head before ultimately taking the mission.

Since Ye Qingzi was still waiting for a bunch of spirit items, Chu Mu accompanied her until the second auction session finished. After buying all the detoxifying ingredients, they left the market.

When they left the market, it was already late at night. Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi rode on their respective Dream beasts towards the heart of the city's Western Street.

"Why didn't you pick a spirit medicine shop closer to the center plaza? Wouldn't it be a bit more convenient to buy spirit medicines as well?" asked Chu Mu, confused.

"But..." Ye Qingzi hesitated a bit as if she couldn't find a reasonable explanation.

Chu Mu wore a confused expression, but when he saw that Ye Qingzi didn't reply, he didn't continue asking.

The center plaza was quite the distance away from Western Street. By the time Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi walked onto Western Street, they could clearly feel that this place had turned quite deserted. Presumably those residents that had originally lived here were temporarily hiding somewhere else.

"Do you feel the the strange atmosphere?" Ye Qingzi asked Chu Mu in a soft voice.

"A little bit. It could be that those things are about to appear. We should be a bit careful." said Chu Mu.

"Let's not wantonly summon our soul pets for now. The more soul pets there are, the higher the chances of inciting their appetite." said Ye Qingzi.

Chu Mu nodded his head and had the Night Thunder Dream Beast hide its aura while simultaneously releasing his soul remembrance to determine the surrounding situation.

The streets were empty and indistinctly there was a slightly strange fog enveloping the area. From time to time a few odd shouts would come from the depths of a courtyard, giving the dark and cold streets a somewhat terrifying atmosphere.

“That’s strange. Didn’t that aerial deputy captain say that he would increase the men today? Why have I yet to see even one city guard or aerial guard after walking for so long?” asked Ye Qingzi.

Chu Mu had felt that things had been weird until now. However, he couldn’t say where he thought things were off. Ye Qingzi’s words made him finally and abruptly realize that he couldn’t even see the silhouettes of guards on Western Street.

A series of murder cases had occurred on this street and the city guards had to treat this with significance. However, after walking for so long, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi hadn’t even seen one city guard. This really was too odd.

“Qingzi, how long have those things been in the vicinity for?” asked Chu Mu.

“Almost a week now. In truth, I feel that they’ve been in the city for a long time already, but were in hibernation before and have only just recently come out.” responded Ye Qingzi.

“Then how sure are you that it won’t attack ordinary people?” Chu Mu continued to ask.

“At least 90 percent sure. Those things need soul cores and soul crystals to preserve their life force. Moreover, only the flesh of powerful soul pets can satisfy their hunger. There’s no benefit for them to massacre ordinary civilians; instead, it could end up exposing their tracks. Thus, I concluded that they weren’t savages that were like wild beasts. Rather, they are predators that are specialized at targeting soul pets.” said Ye Qingzi.

Ye Qingzi’s words caused Chu Mu to creased his eyebrows and his heart began to uneasily pulse.

“Ah~~~~~~”

A shout suddenly rang out and frighteningly reverberated in this terrifying atmosphere street!

Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi were both stunned

“That way. We’d better quickly go over!” Chu Mu took the lead as he urged his Night Thunder Dream Beast towards the sound of the voice.

Ye Qingzi quickly caught up to Chu Mu. Through attentive observance, she found that Chu Mu was extremely anxious. This caused Ye Qingzi to feel exceptionally puzzled. Even if an innocent

person was being killed, with Chu Mu's character, he shouldn't be so disturbed and restless.

Chu Mu found it very hard to maintain his cool now. Upon linking the current situation, he guessed that an extremely terrifying possibility had occurred.

"What is it?" Ye Qingzi watched Chu Mu's expression as she asked a question.

"Let's go over first before we talk." Chu Mu didn't have time to answer Ye Qingzi and had the Night Thunder Dream Beast use Chasing Wind Pursuing Moon causing it to unceasingly increase its speed.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast ran underneath the cold and dismal moonlight. Its speed grew faster and faster before ultimately its figure couldn't even be seen. The only thing that gave evidence of it running past was the chaotic wind it swept up in the street.

It was also the place from yesterday and quickly the Night Thunder Dream Beast reached Old Tong Alleyway.

Ye Qingzi continued to follow Chu Mu and after she turned the corner, she suddenly discovered that he had stopped at a narrow intersection. His entire being was covered by a layer of shadow and he emitted a terrifying killing intent.

Ye Qingzi urged her Purple Robe Dream Beast to stop beside Chu Mu. Just as she was about to question Chu Mu, she abruptly discovered that aside from the street she had run on to get here, the other three streets were unexpectedly flowing with fresh blood!!

The moonlight pierced through the night fog, manifesting in a hazy light. It spilled over the channel blood slowly flowing underground, causing the blood to seem even more striking and terrifying.

Upon surveying with her eyes, there were several soul pet corpses in every direction. These corpses had been bitten so that the only thing that remained were dense white bones and a few limbs that were hard to swallow. From the bloody raw flesh and the seeping body fluids, it hadn't been long since these soul pets had died.

There were a total of fourteen corpses and practically lying beside every corpse was a clothed soul pet trainer. Moreover, these soul pet trainers happened to be Li City city guards!!

Such a savage scene had appeared inside the city. Some uneasiness arose in Ye Qingzi's heart as she looked at the grave Chu Mu with eyes carrying a bit of panic.

Chu Mu didn't speak. He had the Night Thunder Dream Beast continue down the straight street.

After jumping over several corpses, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi

quickly arrived at another block.

“Hu hu hu hu~~~~~~”

A chilly wind blew at them from the depths of the street. A stench full of blood entered their nose and the shadowy shroud of death hung lowly in the air of this district.

The environment was a bit frighteningly silent. The pale white moonlight cast over the corpses of those who had suddenly perished in this alley. It painted a horrendous and ruthless scene that made one sick.

Even more soul pet corpses had appeared in front of Chu Mu. They were all the soul pets of these city guards, and those city guards that were supposed to be patrolling this area. They had already lost their lives at some unknown time in this district...

“Why is it like this...” looking at the corpses on both sides, Ye Qingzi’s face turned a bit paler.

This was a human residential city. Yet, something that made one feel more terrified than those sinister caves, mountains and forests had appeared here. What exactly had transformed this residential district into such a frightening appearance?!!

“Let’s go back, they’ve probably all died...” Chu Mu walk backwards because he knew that if he did so, there was a chance he would end up like those city guards chaotically sprawled over the

street-he would be killed and the flesh of his soul pets would all be eaten.

“What exactly happened?” Ye Qingzi who had always been calm was slightly flustered.

“This is a plot. Those predators deliberately laid a trap.” steadily said Chu Mu.

Originally Chu Mu had only guess this, but upon seeing the dozen or so guard corpses and the remains of several tens of soul pets in this district, it was enough to verify his guess.

“Plot? This was done by humans?” Ye Qingzi still didn’t understand.

Chu Mu shook his head and said: “For now I don’t know if this was done by humans…”

Looking back at the alleyway unceasingly flowing with blood, Chu Mu had the Night Thunder Dream Beast slightly increase its speed while simultaneously having Ye Qingzi follow even closer to him.

“Didn’t you say that there was no reason for those predators to attack civilians?”

“Yes, at least that’s what I thought.”

“They know that the moment they die, a large amount of city guards will appear in that area. Yesterday when they killed over thirty civilians, they had that intention…” said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu’s points made Ye Qingzi abruptly understand. Her expression was extremely shocked. All of this was truly too terrifying!!

This was because these things had intentionally lured the city guards before turning their summoned soul pets into food!!!

“If we had been able to realize this yesterday, they wouldn’t have died…” Chu Mu’s face revealed a rather bitter and pained expression.

Chapter 242: A Case With Boundless Danger

A savage creature with intelligence!

It was so terrifying that it could target city guards. It was able to use the lives of ordinary civilians to set a trap and make the soul pets of the city guards that protected the safety of this city into food.

Such a frightening species existed in this bright and flourishing city, inhabiting the small alleys that people frequently walked to and fro in. While taking a walk at night or even deep in the slumber of dreams, there was a chance that they could pass right by you. Whether they took your life or not was all predicated on their dreadful scheme...

Chu Mu's heart was heavy. It wasn't that he hadn't seen death before, but the intelligence of these creatures made the hairs on Chu Mu's back stand up. It was like the catastrophic-like desolate hibernation from back then had arrived...

Ye Qingzi wanted to say something, but upon thinking about the devastating things that had just happened, an ineffable emotion surged up in her heart, and she could only silently follow beside Chu Mu.

.....

On the second day, the news was buried by the city government.

Last night, a total of 100 city guards and 10 aerial guards, as well as the three hundred civilians that had acted as bait, all lost their lives in the city. This could be said to be Li City's most unprecedented shocking murder case!

However, this terrifying news was resolutely suppressed by Li City's government with its most immediate force. Ultimately, it manifested into a rumor that a group of underground faction soul pet trainers had started a fight in the city center's Western Street, causing several deaths and wounds.

……

"Three days, in three days you'll solve this problem for me. If you haven't found the murderers in three days and moreover cleanly wiped them out, I'll throw you onto the center Western Street for a night!" The city general in charge of Li City's safety angrily smacked the table giving a military order to the city officials.

Center district official Li Gu was terrified as well. Since Center Street's resident area wasn't officially a Li City district, there hadn't been enough focus put on that area. Even if something happened there, the district official would suppress the news before dealing with it privately.

Central district official Li Gu originally thought that it was the evil work of fugitives as well. If he dispatched a few city guards to patrol then it would be fine; yet, he didn't expect for this matter to be so terrifying that it would become a shocking massacre in the

district.

Standing beside central district official Li Gu was aerial guard deputy Dong Qing. He hadn't slept the entire night and looked very miserable.

Last night, Dong Qing had changed shifts with another deputy and returned earlier to rest. Thus, he wasn't among the ten aerial guards. Therefore, while he was fortunate to have escaped the calamity, he also lost a few comrades. This sorrowful haze that arose from after hearing the news last night had shrouded over him. It made him sink into a state where he was on the verge of exploding.

Once the city general left, the district official Li Gu bade him farewell before returning not much later. His face was gloomy as he sat back down at his spot.

This hall was currently full of all the city and aerial guard deputy ranked and above members. These people were all silent, not even saying a sentence.

Li Gu's sigh gradually rang out. It was a while before he said: "Li City is currently in a extremely alert state. This matter is truly exceptionally serious. However, we really can't dispatch too many people; even now, I don't know what it was that committed such a terrible act. Moreover, I don't even know how many of these things there are. Therefore, we have to employ the help of some mercenaries."

“Zhang Shi, go and put up a bounty with a base reward of a few million. Find a few capable mercenaries to help us. The other captains lead your team; every ten people will form a team and will patrol in the city center’s Western Street…” said city district official Li Gu.

“Yes!” all the captain seriously gave a salute.

“Wait.” just at this moment, Chu Mu who had remained silent spoke.

It was Chu Mu who gave the information to Dong Qing, and this was the reason why this matter was restricted before it could spread. Further, during the city official meeting, Chu Mu had listened off to the side.

Li Gu suspiciously looked at Chu Mu and confusedly asked: “Who are you?”

“This person is the soul pet trainer that gave me the information.” explained Dong Qing.

Li Gu glanced at Dong Qing. To Li Gu, the only good thing about this massacre was that Dong Qing hadn’t been among the dead, otherwise this matter would have been even more serious.

“Take back the order you gave just now. Right now we don’t even know the enemy’s numbers and method of hiding; rashly dispatching small teams to search Western Street isn’t very

appropriate.” said Chu Mu solemnly.

“We happen to be the glorious city guards of an entire district; don’t tell me we would still be afraid?” said the district deputy official.

The city general had only given them three days to resolve this matter. Yet right now they didn’t even have a trail. These city officials were carrying immense pressure as well, and if they didn’t use a sweeping method to search, what other solution was there?

“Those things used the lives of ordinary civilians to lure the city guards before making their soul pets into food. This means that their intelligence is extremely high. If we are to dispatch a large group of members to search Western Street, there are three outcomes. The first is that we find a trail and find their next target. Then, we’d engage in a large fight with these soul pets. If this is the outcome, we’d still have to consider exactly how many of these savage creatures live on Western Street. Moreover, we don’t know if your people can eliminate them. If they can, then this matter will be over, if they can’t, then we will just be raising an even more terrifying group of executioners and the situation would worsen.” said Chu Mu.

When Chu Mu gave this explanation, everyone’s eyes fell on him.

“The probability of the first is rather low because, since these soul pets were able to live for so many days, they definitely have some special method of concealment. Moreover, I fought with those things on the street and was chased nearly half a block. With my soul remembrance, I was still unable to understand their

method of concealment. If everyone here has all reached the spirit master level, then we'd be able to use the sweeping method to search."

"You're a spirit master?" everyone was shocked.

"Yes." said Chu Mu as he nodded his head.

A twenty year old spirit master was rare in the soul pet world. Previously, everyone had thought that this young man who wasn't a city guard member and had suddenly run here to spread his words was a bit too strange. However, when Chu Mu indicated his strength, everyone grew serious after being shocked.

"This person is Chu Chen, and he is a wandering soul pet trainer. This is his friend, a soul teacher, Ye Qingzi. They had a bit of a realization towards those savage creatures that attacked our comrades. Everyone listen to their analysis before we plan a strategy." Dong Qing himself was surprised towards Chu Mu's level. However, he quickly and intentionally introduced Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi.

"Yesterday when I encountered them, they were able to turn invisible. I believe that this terrifying technique will make you guys suffer defeat. At the moment, the invisibility ability cannot be seen through even with my spirit master remembrance. I managed to sense them because of my dark type demonic Night Thunder Dream Beast, so I'm not too supportive of you guys going to search..." Chu Mu continued to say.

“Dark thunder dual attribute Dream Beast!”

When Chu Mu said the name of his soul pet, a few small gasps were heard. Everyone present was a deputy and above level soul pet trainer. They knew that the perceptive abilities of a Dream Beast were among the best among demons. If only a Night Thunder Dream Beast was able to see through them, then their sweeping method of searching really wouldn’t be of any use.

“Just now I said there were three scenarios. The second scenario is that they have intelligence, and if you begin a large scale operation and cannot be beaten, they’ll definitely rely on their hiding abilities to hibernate for a while, waiting for you to loosen your guard before launching an attack…”

“The third scenario is that their strength is stronger than yours. Then the outcome is something you guys should understand…”

After Chu Mu finished speaking, everyone felt a wave of cold air, especially when Chu Mu mentioned the third outcome!

“There’s nothing… nothing to be afraid of. We have at least 500 people and over a thousand soul pets….” the deputy city official’s confidence wavered.

Every captain was silent. When they thought of the 100 city guards that were killed without even managing to let out a signal further coupled with Chu Mu saying that these soul pets possessed an invisibility ability, they suddenly felt that the probability of this was actually very large.

“I’m not saying the entire army will be annihilated, but you’ll definitely pay a price more painful than last night. I suggest that you gather an even larger amount, or have Li City’s city lord dispatch an elite team. These things rely on eating the flesh, soul core, and soul crystal of powerful things to raise their strength. If you dispatch too many troops before fundamentally understanding them, there’s a definite chance you’ll be sending food to them. This matter isn’t something manpower can resolve…” said Chu Mu.

“Then what do we do? The city general clearly indicated that he didn’t have enough people to invest here…” city official Li Gu displayed an unsightly face and his gaze specially fell on Dong Qing.

“It’s true we can’t muster members.” Dong Qing gave a definite answer.

Chu Mu looked at Dong Qing and felt that it was strange. Why was it that when such a tragic event occurred, Li City was still stingy with their members. Didn’t Li City’s city lord and that city general attach importance to the lives of over a hundred people?

Dong Qing saw Chu Mu’s confusion and bitterly laughed, saying: “It’s not convenient to divulge this case. In short, we can only rely on the members of this district now to resolve this matter. Brother Chu, since you were able to see through a bit into this matter, what should we do? The city general allocated 50 million gold coins for us to use. We can give a reward of at least 10 million; since you understand these things, I really hope that you can take this

mission because we really don't have even the slightest trail..."

Chu Mu hesitated a while. Before, Chu Mu really would have planned on taking the mission. After all, he still needed a large amount of gold to strengthen his soul pets. However, right now, it seemed that this matter wasn't anything simple. Whether or not he had the ability to take the mission was the big question.

"Then I'll give it a shot. However, if the danger factor is extremely high, I hope that you can have an expert come and resolve it..." Chu Mu ultimately agreed to take the mission.

"Then I'm truly too thankful. I salute you on behalf of all my perished comrades!" Dong Qing gave Chu Mu an extremely serious salute.

Despite being a case with boundless danger, it was still accepted. All the captains held Chu Mu with exceptional respect and when Chu Mu gave a salute, all the captains gave a simple gesture of respect.

Chapter 243: Devil Tree Battle Soldier's Transformation

Once the bounty had only a base reward, it meant that the event's danger factor couldn't be easily estimated. The lowest danger factor's price would be the base reward.

If the danger factor rose, the price would definitely go up. How much it went up would depend on the event's true danger level and the harm caused to those who finished the mission……

Chu Mu indeed needed a large sum of money. Of course, Chu Mu was also certain that the level of this event was definitely higher than 10 million, meaning that it very likely would be beyond his ability.

Of course, after Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi returned to the medicinal store, Ye Qingzi returned to making medicines to first get rid of Ye Wansheng's poison.

Chu Mu also took out 29 million gold to buy the Natural Wood Blood Crystal to strengthen the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Natural Wood Blood Crystal, just like it sounded, was something that could make wood type soul pets learn Natural Wood Crystal with a higher probability. This soul item usually took a long time before one appeared in the trading center. If not for Ye Qingzi reminding him, Chu Mu may very likely have missed this transaction and would need to wait a long time until he could buy it again.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier, because of the mixture of blood amber and Coronary Blood Fat, had already somewhat moved towards Blood Wood type. This Natural Wood Blood Crystal was the perfect strengthening item for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. Chu Mu was very careful in strengthening the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

When strengthening his Devil Tree Battle Soldier, Chu Mu also had to mentally prepare himself, because the success rate of this spirit item wasn't 100%.

It was just like the Ice Snow Fruit where the Ice Air Fairy wasn't able to immediately comprehend towering ice after using it, but instead its comprehension of the crystallisation increased. It wasn't until its strength reached a certain point or due to some impetus that it would truly control it.

Of course, there was a possibility that after absorbing this Natural Wood Blood Crystal that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier would not be able to comprehend it even after evolving.

……

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body was a green color, and after it obtained the life force absorb technique, its body was slowly covered by a blood red color. When Chu Mu slowly guided the Natural Wood Blood Crystal into its body, the colors became even more prominent, turning into a visibly darker red…

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body was wrapped by a middle rank demon wood, that after being nourished by the Natural Wood Blood Crystal, began circulating the abundant energy contained in the crystal like one would in veins and arteries. As the energy circulated, the inside and the outside of the demon wood began to change, slowly becoming tougher, stronger and more in number.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body was originally only wrapped by a few demon woods, but as the energy circulated, the demon woods ultimately ended up wrapping its entire body, forming something similar to a demon wood armor that protected its body.

"Young master, your old tree is comprehending a new technique. It's Demon Wood Armor, and it furthermore is a species technique!" upon seeing the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's transformation, Old Li jumped up and spoke to Chu Mu.

There were two methods of using defensive techniques. One method was adding on, like the Water Curtain Armor of Ye Qingzi's Water Moon that could be used on any soul pet or human's body, including itself.

The other was an individual species technique that was similar to the Ice Air Fairy's Towering Ice Armor.

The Ice Air Fairy's innate defense wasn't very high, and the reason why it ended up being much higher than other soul pets was because the Ice Air Fairy had a special species technique – Ice Armor.

This species ice armor technique was essentially equivalent to attaching an ice armor type technique to the Ice Air Fairy at all times and directly increasing its defense.

Using the same logic, the wood armor technique just learned by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had the same effect as the Ice Air Fairy, in which it increased its basic defense. If Chu Mu could obtain another sum of money and purchase a seventh rank soul armor for the Devil Tree battle Soldier, nothing would be able to knock it down on the battlefield!

“Final seventh stage defense…” seeing the Devil Tree Battle Soldier learn such an important species technique, a smile surfaced on Chu Mu’s face.

“It’s not over… it seems to still be evolving…” said Old Li.

Indeed, just as Old Li’s voice faded, an evident change occured on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body. Its originally two meter tall body grew slightly taller, and its wooden body became thicker and sturdier. Further adding on the tinge of dark red, it looked like a slightly rusted piece of metal that was solid and sturdy!

An evolution was the manifestation of a substantial increase of a soul pet’s various aspects, especially when its was evolving from the sixth phase to the seventh phase!

The most evident thing Chu Mu saw was the increase of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s roots from seventy to eighty. Merely this increase in number meant that the might of its techniques greatly

increased.

Its height didn't hugely change, but its wood body and arms became much more sturdy. Is wood skin that was covered with creases gradually became smoother, thus making it seem more like a cast of metal.

The changes on its skin meant that its defense had increased. Its basic defense had reached the late seventh stage after evolving to the seventh phase, so further adding on the demon wood armor, its defense reached the full seventh stage that was extremely close to an eighth stage defense!

"Full seventh stage defense. If it can comprehend natural wood, its defense will reach the eighth stage!"

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier now had the highest defense amongst Chu Mu's soul pets. In a group fight, it would be able to hold up an entire side of the fight by itself!

The life force of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had also increased. From Old Li's analysis, its life force was now 1.5 times its original amount, meaning that its life force absorb had also increased to 1.5 times its original speed!

This sort of absorbing speed would probably be able to suck a regular sixth phase soul pet of its life force in two seconds.

Every soul pet had different life forces. Some were weak, and

some were strong. For instance, Zhan Ye's life force was in the category of unreasonable. As for Chu Mu's other soul pets, their life forces couldn't be considered weak, but they couldn't be considered strong either. They were average in this regard, but had unique aspects in other areas.

Yet, after the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had been baptised by the Blood Dyed Wood, its wood attribute had reached the peak of the commander rank, attaining the level of a pseudo monarch. It was precisely because its wood attribute had the special characteristic of twice the life force that made its life force double that of normal seventh phase pseudo monarchs. This advantage would be easily seen in a fight, especially with the life force absorb technique that would reflect the advantage of life force the best.

"Seventh phase first stage, high rank demon wood and its defense has reached the late seventh stage. Its demon wood armor effect further puts its defense at the full seventh stage. Its wood roots and wood arm attacks have reached the early seventh stage and the high rank demon wood allows it to attain the mid seventh stage level. Young master, if your old devil tree can comprehend natural wood, its attribute will be extremely powerful." said Old Li.

If it comprehended natural wood, the might of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's techniques would multiply, and its defense would reach the eighth stage. The attacks it used would also be at the eighth stage, and it really would become exceptionally powerful amongst seventh phase soul pets!

"Why don't we use the savage beasts roaming around the city as

test subjects. It will be much easier for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to deal with these things now." a smile surfaced on Chu Mu's face, and he was somewhat impatient to see the Devil Tree Battle Soldier put on a show to its heart's content.

.....

.....

The people in the heart of Western Street District had begun to be moved by the city officials during the day to the horse stables. These people were all under direct supervision and were not allowed to divulge any information about Western Street, otherwise, if rumors were to spread, it would easily cause panic to spread through the entire city.

In reality, however, since a few residence had moved before the officials began moving the others, a few terrifying rumors regarding the heard of Western Street District had spread. There were also a few courageous people who tried to solve the problem, but were stopped by officials.

If the perpetrator only had average soul pets, the city officials would be more than happy to let people of the soul pet world resolve the issue. However, this matter wasn't that simple, and the savage creatures were using the city guards as well as all other soul pet trainers as food.

Rather than having these people unknowingly send themselves to their deaths, the city officials would rather not have them

participate. This would prevent the matter from becoming increasingly complex and increasingly hard to fix.

……

In fact, it was standard for the officials to act like this because in the Li City, savage creatures could use the flesh and inner crystals of powerful soul pets to raise their strength. If an expert came, it would be fine because they could wipe out these savage creatures.

Nonetheless, if the soul pet trainer's strength was only average, their soul pets would only be food for these terrifying things that would make their strength only stronger.

Although Chu Mu was young, Chu Tiancheng had imparted a plethora of soul pet knowledge upon him. His understanding of soul pets was much more profound than many so-called veterans and further adding on the soul teacher Ye Qingzi who was both an expert with medicine and analyzing particulars, the two of them together could be considered professionals…

It was late at night when Chu Mu, Ye Qingzi, and Dong Qing began to search through Western Street's streets.

Their goal tonight wasn't to eradicate these Li City savage creatures, but to understand what soul pets they were and how many of them there were. This way, the city guards would be able to take relevant steps to fix the problem.

……

“Chu Chen, when you’re calm, your body has a very thick hunting and concealing aura. You must have lived in the wilderness, right?” Dong Qing broke the silence in the alley, asking a question.

“Yes, I can anticipate danger sometimes.” nodded Chu Mu.

The so called anticipation of danger wasn’t some special ability of Chu Mu. instead, it was an instinct cultivated through walking past the edge of death countless times. It could be considered a type of death experience, and it was something that Dong Qing understood as well.

Dong Qing was used to seeing many young soul pet trainers who had relied on factions to obtain superior soul pets and surpass other people of the same age. Thus, he especially had respect for young experts like Chu Mu, who had truly grown in between life and death!

Chapter 244: Searching For The Savages In A Rainy Night

“It looks like it’s going to rain soon. I don’t know if those things are going to come out in a rainy night.” softly said Ye Qingzi as she raised her head and looked at the sky.

“It doesn’t matter if it rains or not. Those things seem to have eaten their fill already, and aren’t going to come out and look for food.” Chu Mu surveyed the surroundings.

Compared to last night, the smells in the alleyway tonight were much more faint, and even after having walked for so long, they hadn’t discovered anything.

“They probably realized that the city guards were going to do something about them. Those things really have high intelligence, and if it wasn’t because there were so many of them, I’d believe that someone was controlling them.” said Ye Qingzi.

“It seems that we have to set a bait.” said Chu Mu.

As he spoke, Chu Mu took out a few soul cores from his spatial ring. Chu Mu sprinkled the soul cores along the side of the street in hopes that those things could smell the odor emitted by the energy of the soul cores.

It was past halfway through the night when Chu Mu and the two others were walking in loops when they discovered that the soul

cores on the ground seemed be fewer. Clearly, the bait plan didn't have a direct effect.

"Hong~~~~~~~"

A wave of thunder roared through the air, and a pale white colored bolt of lightning streaked across the sky above Li City, illuminating the streets in a deathly pale white color.

The three people searching through the streets for a trail didn't realize that the dark curtain in the sky ??

Not long later, the drops of rain began to loudly spill down, purging the remaining bloody smell and nasty stench left in the streets and residences with water.

The downpour covered the already pitch-black district in a hazy curtain. Chu Mu and the two others stopped at an unadorned tea restaurant to rest. The three of them blankly stared at the curtain of rain, entranced, and pondered what to do next.

"Let's go, the rain should stop in a little while. There's not much point in staying here." said Chu Mu.

After speaking, Chu Mu rode on his Night Thunder Dream Beast into the downpour of rain, calmly taking on the pattering rain.

Ye Qingzi didn't like getting wet in the rain, and she slowly chanted an incantation to have her soul pet add a Water Curtain

Battle Armor onto her, keeping the water off her.

“I don’t need it.” Dong Qing saw that Ye Qingzi was going to use the same technique on him, but he faintly laughed and shook his head. Then he jumped onto his Light Rhinoceros and proceeded into the rain.

The rain obstructed a bit of their vision, and the icy coldness that struck their bodies was a bit hard to bear. Only about five to six minutes later, Dong Qing was already bitterly laughing and felt that not using a technique that could resist the rain was a mistake.

However, the rain falling on Chu Mu was essentially the same as sunlight shining down on him. Having been used to it for so long, there wasn’t much of a difference and moreover, this was merely a light rain on the continent. When he was on Prisoner Island and it rained, it was the same thing as a catastrophic storm…

“The only thing in front of us is puddles. We shouldn’t have to keep going forth, right?” helplessly said Dong Qing as he looked at the small lake of puddles in front of him.

The water in the puddles had risen to a very high level, and was beginning to rush into the courtyards of the residences. Some of the water even entered the rooms meaning that the rain would probably be a large disturbance to these residents.

“They don’t come out during the day and only come out at night to look for food. I think that they don’t like sunlight; I remember that these past few days the weather has been rather normal and

sunlight was shining. I think that they should be hiding in some dark area…" said Ye Qingzi.

Chu Mu and Dong Qing nodded their heads in agreement. Dong Qing pondered for a moment and said: "The only place that's dark in the city should be the city sewers that drain water. These sewers could very likely have become their nest."

"I feel like we have to search the vicinity. If they are congregated in the sewers, then the puddles that have appeared here very likely could be the result of the substances they secrete that prevent water from flowing down the drains." said Ye Qingzi.

Ye Qingzi's words made Dong Qing and Chu Mu's eyes light up. There was a very high possibility that this conjecture was right since it was only on this block that puddles had appeared!

"Huh, the level of water seems to be dropping?" Ye Qingzi stared at the water slowly flowing away and showed a confused expression.

Chu Mu swept his eyes over and indeed found that the rising puddles had begun to slowly lower at a fast rate.

"It could very well be that those things can't survive in water, and they blocked the water in the sewers from flowing. However, we should still confirm whether they live in the sewers." said Chu Mu.

“The only water type soul pet I have is the Water Moon.” said Ye Qingzi.

“I have a water type Violent Unicorn Water Beast.” as Dong Qing spoke, he was already chanting an incantation. In between his two hands, he formed two long pillars of water that intersected with each other in the air and caused a large splash in the curtain of rain.

When the splash of water faded into the rain, a creature with a scaled body, fins and feet, descended in front of Dong Qing.

Violent Unicorn Water Beast: Demon world – beast type – water species – Violent Unicorn Water Beast subspecies – commander rank

The Violent Unicorn Water Beast’s wide lips had two long whiskers on either side. Its body was similar to a shark’s, but it had four robust limbs. On these four limbs were sharp claws and soft palms that could be used to move water.

The Violent Unicorn Water Beast’s tail was a fish’s tail, and even if it wasn’t using a technique, this common fish tail carried a special water ribbon that circulated on top, displaying its special water control ability.

Seeing that Ye Qingzi and Dong Qing both had water type soul pets, Chu Mu bitterly laughed. He ostensibly hadn’t considered how he would fight if he encountered an enemy on a body of water...

“Let me go. You guys keep watch on the surface. My Violent Unicorn Water Beast is extremely adept at fighting in the water.” Dong Qing saw Chu Mu let out an awkward expression, and he knew that Chu Mu didn’t have any water species or water attribute soul pets.

“I’ll go down with you.” Ye Qingzi was brave, and seeing that Dong Qing was going to go alone into the sewers, she used a water type technique...

“The sewers are dirty and smelly. It’s not too fitting for you to go down. You and Chu Chen stay up here, eh. If something abnormal happens, I’ll immediately come up. Since those things are afraid of water, it’ll be easy for my Violent Unicorn Water Beast to deal with them.” said Dong Qing.

“Ok, you be careful. Those things can turn invisible, so try not to leave places with water.” reminded Chu Mu.

Dong Qing nodded his head and left his Light Rhinoceros on the surface. He jumped onto his Violent Unicorn Water Beast and without any apprehensions, his beautiful clothes were smeared with filthy water as he directly submerged into the sewers where the water level was gradually descending...

“Qingzi, have your water moon contain the surrounding water to here. Try your best not to let the water level drop.” Chu Mu said to Ye Qingzi.

Ye Qingzi nodded her head. She chanted an incantation at the same time as the Water Moon, and it began to manipulate the rain water falling from the sky...

The rain water seemed to be urged by a wind, and when the Water Moon and Ye Qingzi used Water Halo, the rain falling straight down began to gather in this area. The sound of surging water was like a waterfall as the water accumulated in the puddles.

As the rain water gathered, the puddles in the area began to rise and not much air was in the sewers as the only thing going down the drains was rainwater.

Lying on the Violent Unicorn Water Beast's body and using a water breathing technique through the Violent Unicorn Water Beast's underwater breaching, Dong Qing could stay in the water for a very long time.

The majority of the water was muddy and icy cold. Dong Qing's vision was completely blocked, and he could only use his soul remembrance to search the sewers filled with rain water as he looked for those living things.

"Why is there more and more water? Did Chu Chen and Ye Qingzi pour water here?" Dong Qing muttered to himself.

The amount of water increasing meant that Dong Qing would be more safe. Furthermore, he could force those creatures living in the sewers to the limited places without any water.

Dong Qing didn't detachedly search for them. Instead, he specially sought out those sewers that had been mysteriously blocked, because since those creatures weren't adept in the water, they definitely would have thought of some way to have the water flow to another area.

As he swam along the calm water, Dong Qing slowly discovered an abnormal area. When released his soul remembrance there, he indeed discovered signs of life that wasn't just limited to one or two life forms!!

"They were really hiding here!" Dong Qing's heart began to beat faster. From Chu Mu, he learned that the perceptive abilities of these creatures were extremely strong. If he didn't control his aura well, it was highly likely he would be discovered by those things.

This place was probably very close to the nest of those things, because this part of the sewers had been blocked by some substance, forming a space that water couldn't enter into.

Dong Qing silently remained in the water and didn't immediately take any steps. What he felt surprised about was that those things seemed to be climbing towards the outside...

"Si~~~Si~~~~~~~~"

"Si~~~~~~~SI~~~~~~~~"

Dong Qing raised his head from under the water and shockingly

discovered four malevolent figures climb over his head.

The claws of these creatures were exceptionally sharp and could firmly grip onto the ceiling. They crawled upside down to advance and didn't need to come into contact with the water!

Subsequently, another few crawled upside down overtop of him. Dong Qing creased his brows. These things seemed to want to head to the surface...

"Could it be that they sensed that Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi are controlling the rain water to have it pour into this location?" Dong Qing's heart tensed and he abruptly guessed of this possibility.

Dong Qing gave his Violent Unicorn Water Beast an order to immediately return to the surface to warn Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi.

"Hmph, so scared by this tiny bit of water. I've raised a group of trash." suddenly, an ice cold voice rang out!

Dong Qing, underwater, was about to leave when his soul remembrance captured the voice, causing him to instantly stop.

"There indeed is someone controlling them!" great emotions rose in Dong Qing's heart. He really wanted to float out of the water right now and see which heinous fellow was utilizing these savage creatures in Li City to cause disturbance and slaughter so many innocent lives!

Chapter 245: Nightmare Tree, Fighting One Versus Ten

The lightning scuttled through the vast curtain of rain like snakes illuminating the city in a plain white.

The huge downpour of rain drowned the streets full of water. There were a few things hovering in the courtyards of the residence courtyards that could be seen in this hundred meter perimeter district. As the water flowed, they unarrayedly gathered at the dead end of the street.

Ye Qingzi's Water Moon was rather proficient at controlling water. In a short period of ten meters, the water had already risen up to the Night Thunder Dream Beast's knee level. Most of the places with sewers were probably full of rushing water.

"Hui~~~~~ Hui~~~~"

Suddenly, the Night Thunder Dream Beast let out a neigh. Its two eyes rigidly fixated on another water pathway as if it had sensed something.

"Qingiz, be careful. There's something coming out." Chu Mu warned Ye Qingzi.

Ye Qingzi nodded her head and slowly chanted an incantation. She summoned her strongest fighting strength soul pet, the War Court Black Beast in front of her, while also having the Purple

Robe Dream Beast set up a black night dreamland around her.

Chu Mu simultaneously chanted an incantation, summoning the Ice Air Fairy and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier in front of him.

When the Ice Air Fairy appeared, the cold ice on its body began to rapidly proliferate. The liquid around its body was all frozen into ice crystals. If it wasn't because Chu Mu stopped it from letting its invisible emitting towering ice air from continuing to proliferate...

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier wasn't very hindered by the water. Its two legs stood in the water, but its roots were still able to dig into the ground and, through the tremors in the ground, it was able to detect those creatures approaching.

"Pu pu!!! Pu pu pu!!!!!!!!"

It appeared!

The several surrounding waterways all erupted, splashing over ten meters high. They formed numerous water pillars around Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi, knocking the falling rain somewhat diagonally!

The raindrops fell even more wantonly and Chu Mu wiped the water on his face. Using his soul remembrance, he locked onto the four creatures travelling underground.

"Hui~~~~"

The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out another noise, warning Chu Mu that something was moving behind him.

Chu Mu turned around and discovered six abnormal ripples appearring on the collecting water. It was as if something was rapidly approaching!

“There are about ten coming at me. Qingzi, how many are over by you?” Chu Mu quickly deduced the number of savage creatures coming to attack him.

“There seem to be fifteen.” Ye Qingzi had a Purple Robe Dream Beast. Its phase and stage had already reached the seventh phase fifth stage, and its perception abilities weren’t much less than Night’s.

“The strength of those things is approximately equivalent to a seventh phase demon commander. Its attack properties are relatively powerful, and they aren’t easy to deal with. Let my Ice Air Fairy help you.”

“Ok, you be careful yourself.”

……

Chanting an incantation, the Ice Air Fairy with the fastest reaction locked onto the other seven hidden bodies of the Li City savage creatures travelling through the water. These Li City savage

creatures were charging towards Ye Qingzi's soul pets while the Ice Air Fairy's techniques happened to be used on the area beside Ye Qingzi.

Towering Ice Ice Seal!

Cold air permeated the area, and the towering ice crystals on the Ice Air Fairy's body poured into the water. The water that was originally flowing, after being invaded by the cold air, gradually became still. Starting from the top of the water, it began to freeze inwards!

"Gezhi~~~ Gezhi~~~~~~"

The Ice Seal formed a circular shape, and it spread out from Ye Qingzi's location towards the seven hidden Li City savage creatures. Those seven Li City savage creatures clearly felt the powerful force of the towering ice, and abruptly jumped out of the puddles of water!

These Li City savage creatures possessed an invisibility ability. Even while fighting, they didn't easily expose their bodies. Using the water to hide, the only thing that could be seen in the curtain of rain was the silhouette of these creatures.

A sharp and pointy head, a long but skinny body, a rather muscular but short set of hind limbs, and a long and slender set front limbs. The second lighting streaked through the air, Chu Mu could see that there was no fur on these things; they only had an outer layer of glossy skin without any wrinkles. However, their

skin happened to secrete a liquid that seemed like it was forming a special keratin layer. This allowed them to hide their bodies in the dark.

“Protect her well.” Chu Mu saw that the majority of these Li City savage creatures were charging at Ye Qingzi. He decisively had the Ice Air Fairy float over to Ye Qingzi to protect her.

“Devil Tree, I’ll leave these to you.” Chu Mu swept his eyes over the ten Li City savage creatures nearing him as he spoke to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier had just finished its strengthening, and it happened to be time to display its godliness. Its eighty high level demon wood roots had already dug underground. The ground full of puddles didn’t pose any obstruction to its fighting. Just as those six Li City savage creatures attacking from under the water approached, the high level demon wood roots astonishingly launched an attack!!

“Chi chi chi chi!!!!!!!”

Eighty high level demon wood roots pierced forth concentratedly. They forced the six Li City savage creatures to jump out of the stealth of the water.

“Hong~~~~~~~~”

A shocking bolt of lightning ripped down in the curtain of rain. A

pale white light illuminated these terrifying killers, accentuating their long arms and incomparably sharp poisonous claws.

“Demon Wood Drill!”

The Devil Wood Battle Tree’s arms waved about. Suddenly, six sharp spear-like demon wood drills appeared in front of it. Under its control, they shot through the air towards the six Li City savage beasts.

“Shua Shua Shua Shua!!!!!!”

The Li City savage beasts’ claws were abnormally sharp. They promptly swiped down, cutting the demon wood drills into two pieces!

Upon landing on the ground, these things quickly shot past the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s side!!

“Shua!!!!!!!” Six distinct claw marks instantly appeared on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body. They were quick,violent, and simply unavoidable!!

Chu Mu was shocked. He ceaselessly used his soul remembrance to lock down these exceptionally fast creatures and commanded the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s attacks.

Fortunately the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s defense had reached the full seventh stage. The six attacks from these savage creatures

hadn’t reached the eighth stage yet, and wouldn’t deal any real damage to it. Receiving a few attacks wouldn’t affect its fighting strength too much.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier changed from its piercing state to its binding state. The high level demon wood transformed into long azure snakes that caused splashes in the puddles of water as they chased after the rapidly moving Li City savage creatures!

“Focus the front three!!” ordered Chu Mu.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier had eighty demon wood roots, and thus had eighty azure ground snakes. If it completely focused three of them, even if their speed was any faster, they still wouldn’t be able to evade the numerous binds.

The downpour fortunately gave Chu Mu the most advantageous condition for this fight. The curtain of rain was very effective at capturing the movements of these Li City savage creatures. When the eighty roots unceasingly burrowed underground, the three Li City savage creatures in front had already fled far away from the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. However, they weren’t able to dodge the binds, and their bodies were practically completely twisted around by the high level demon wood.

“Si si si si~~~~”

These Li City savage creatures seemed to understand how to support in a fight. The other three flew over to their comrades that had been bound by the demon wood roots. Their claws violently

shredded away at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's high level demon wood roots, attempting to save them.

The other four stepped in the puddles and charged at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, using their intensely toxic Heavenly Splitting Claw!

"Shua shua shua shua!!!!!!!!"

The four toxic claws ripped apart the curtain of rain while simultaneously tearing the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body into pieces. Upon landing on the ground, the four Li City savage creatures turned around and looked at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier that had turned into a pile of chopped wood.

"Si si si si~~" a merciless smile was heard. As if they were obtaining pleasure after killing, the four Li City savage creatures revealed their bloodthirsty malevolent expressions. They fixed their eyes on Chu Mu's next soul pet, planning to continue killing...

Feeling the stare of these savage creatures, Chu Mu unexpectedly sneered.

In the eyes of these four savage creatures, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had already died. However, in Chu Mu's eyes, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was unscathed, because the four savage creatures had fallen into the dreamland trap laid by the night soul pet, the Night Thunder Dream Beast!

“Piercing Branch!”

“Sousou~~~~”

Two long arms flew forth and with extreme precision, struck two of the Li City savage creatures stuck in the dream!!

“Pu pu!!!!!!!!”

Fresh blood spilled out of these two Li City Savage Creatures’ stomachs, mixing in with the rain. The two Li City Savage Creatures simultaneously let out a painful scream, as they wildly used their claws to slice apart the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s two branches that had entered their bodies.

Life Force Absorb!!

An evident squirm appeared in the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s branches. The large amount of life force energy began to pour into its body!

Simultaneously absorbing two Li City savage creatures, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier recovered twenty percent of its life force every second. The wounds that were previously ripped open were instantaneously healed!

By contrast, those two Li City Savage Creatures were unable to break off the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s branches with their claws in a short period of time. Their life force was quickly exhausted,

and their originally skinny bodies became as skinny as firewood!

“Night, Dark Lightning!”

Under Chu Mu’s order, a lightning bolt flashed in between the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s unique dream horns!

The only thing in this night was a lightning storm, and the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s lightning attribute obtained an increase of thirty to forty percent. Its lightning type techniques identically increased by this amount!

“Hui~~~~~~~”

A long cry was heard as the Night Thunder Dream Beast controlled the lightning clouds. It forcibly made a bolt of lightning change its directions as it descended, striking towards the two Li City savage creatures being drained of life force!

Nearly half of the life force of these two Li City savage creatures had been lost, and when the terrifying lightning descended, it was hard for them to dodge. Under the direct bombardment, they burst into burnt mincemeat in the curtain of lightning and rain!!

“Si si si si~~~~~~~”

When the two Li City savage creatures saw that their comrades had been killed, they became incomparably angry!

They had previously used the time that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was absorbing life force and jumped in front of it. Right now, they had turned their indignant claws into two razor-sharp blades that were violently cutting at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body.

Cold light interweaved, and each time the high frequency attacks landed on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's demon wood armor, a distinct cut would be left in the demon wood armor.

However, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier didn't dodge. Instead, it withstood the violent claw attacks of these soul pets and promptly sent out its high level demon wood, firmly binding the two Li City savage creatures!

Chapter 246: Devil Tree, Fighting One Versus Ten

“Devil tree, the three bound ones have already broken free, take note of them!” warned Chu Mu.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a roar, and its mighty two arms grabbed onto the two bound Li City savage creatures. Like sandbags, it promptly tossed them into the air, knocking them into the two savage creatures attempting to attack it from above!

Very soon, three savage creatures neared the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. The Devil Tree Battle Soldier that could simultaneously release multiple technique rapidly transformed its demon wood into several durable whips!

“Pai!! Pai!! Pai!!!!”

The three Li City savage creatures couldn’t even get away, and were fiercely smacked flying by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

Facing so many opponents, the present superiority of the wood attribute was clearly displayed. No matter which direction the attack was coming from, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was always able to respond and use the relevant technique.

After a few continuous attacks, the remaining eight Li City savage creatures realized how difficult the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was to deal with; yet, they let out a wave of hissing shouts!

Rain water washed over, beating down on these eight hairless long armed creatures. Strange auras began to envelop their bodies!

Oddly, when this toxic-like thing coiled around their bodies, they then slowly merged into their bodies. The bones and muscles of these things unexpectedly showed a terrifying growth!

The growth of these creatures didn't seem like the transformation of a mutation. Instead, their dense white bones suddenly protruded out of their thin and weak skin, as if they were going to rip their skin apart!

The skin was slowly split open and blood began to spill from their wound, washing away with the rain water onto the ground.

The transformation happened on all eight of these Li City savage creatures, and they changed from their originally skinny and savage look to a presently malevolent and wild look. In particular, the blood that flowed from their flesh and bones made them completely become a bloodsoaked monster!

The stench of blood and a nauseating aura permeated this street. Even with the downpour of rain, it was incapable of being dispersed. Waves of cold and imposing stench-filled wind beat against their bodies, giving them an intangible sense of fear, seeping into their souls...

"Chu Mu, is your situation over there still ok?" Ye Qingzi's voice rang out from not far away, as she ostensibly discovered the

abnormality where he was.

“I can deal with it.” Chu Mu’s face turned serious, as he stared at the eight creatures that could strengthen themselves.

“Young master, I’m afraid the strength of those things has increased nearly forty percent, and they’re equivalent to the seventh phase third stage. It will be extremely hard to deal with them.” warned Old Li.

Chu Mu also knew that these eight Li City savage creatures were exceptionally hard to deal with. Immediately, he had the Devil Tree Battle Soldier use a technique.

“Demon Wood Pierce!”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a roar. Its demon wood arms abruptly came down and suddenly, incomparably sharp demon woods shot out of the thin puddles of water, respectively piercing towards the stomach of three Li City savage creatures.

The three savage creatures evidently felt the onslaught of the attack and crouched their hindlegs. Seemingly the moment the demon wood would pierce their stomachs, they jumped up and flew high into the rain filled air!

“Hua~~~~~~”

Raising their heads, an azure colored bubble of poison appeared

in their mouths as they spat it out towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier amidst the rain water!

“Zi zi zi zi zi~~~~~~”

The poison was rather terrifying. When it mixed with the rain, the rain water was completely vaporized, transforming into concentrated azure colored fogs!

Such a large area of effect spray, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s speed simply made it incapable of dodging.

The poison sprayed all over the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body. Although there was demon wood armor on its body, the outer layer of demon wood on its wood skin suffered extremely serious corrosion.

Very quickly, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s species technique, the demon wood armor, completely disappeared. Upon seeing this, Chu Mu was extremely shocked. If the Devil Tree Battle Soldier hadn’t comprehended this defensive technique last night and the poison sprayed onto its body, it would have given it a serious wound!

“Sou sou sou sou!!!!!!!”

Splashes of water occurred as the other five stepped on puddles. Several splashes of water were raised as they ferociously launched themselves at the Devil Tre battle Soldier. Their terrifying front

limbs were carrying azure green colored poison; as long as the poison entered a body, the poison would definitely corrode everything cleanly!

“Sila~~~~~~~”

“Sila~~~~~~~~”

Two Li City savage creatures that bursted with speed neared the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and ripped apart its outer layer of skin. Without the demon wood armor, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s defense was easily broken by the attack. Green colored blood began to flow from its two wounds.

After suffering damage, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s movements were visibly affected. It wasn’t able to react in time, and the three Li City savage creatures that had sprayed poison in the air suddenly launched themselves towards it, their bodies transforming into glistening cold lights of claws as they rapidly swept past its body.

“Shua!!!!!!!!”

Another three severe wounds appeared on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body. Its blood sprayed into the air, and its body began to visibly stagger.

When they saw that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had been wounded, the other Li City savage creatures seized the advantage

to pursue and attack it. Their long front limbs also happened to be their sharp weapons that could split open stomachs!

Very quickly, the wounds on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body increased. If it wasn't for having twice the life force, it probably would have been taken down by this wave of attacks and died.

Chu Mu's heart sank. The fighting strength of these Li City savage creatures was truly exceptionally terrifying. Even if Mo Xie were to fight with them, they would still be very hard to deal with.

"Night, confine the three creatures nearest you." Chu Mu originally did not want Night interfering in the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's fight, but right now, it seemed that he had to have Night use it s powerful demonic control to change the tides of battle.

"Ao!!!!!!!!!!!!"

Just as the Night Thunder Dream Beast was about to silently extend its nightmare hand towards the three completely unaware Li City creatures, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out an indignant roar!!!

Its face became rather berserk, and a streak of blood red appeared in the depths of its pupils. In this moment, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier berserkly released a blood-thirsty aura!

Relying on its tenacious body, the Devil Tree withstood eight of the Li City savage creatures' attacks. Its body abruptly squatted

down, and it enormous palms resolutely smashed into the ground!!

“Hua la la~~”

This palm attack of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier was exceptionally heavy, and there was a great big splash.

Its wood fingers penetrating underground, the Devil tree Battle Soldier used the Wood Finger Prison technique!!

“Hua hua hua~~~~~”

Ten wooden fingers broke apart the puddles and, like ten tiny snakes rising into the air, they quickly binded together above the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s head!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s Wood Finger Prisoner was used on itself!

Soon, the Wood Finger Prison enveloped an area of ten meters with the Devil Tree Battle Soldier in the middle. The eight Li City creatures were all within this ten meter area!

“Ao!!!!!!!!”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a irritated roar, and suddenly began pulling above him, tightening the Wood Finger Prison!!

The eight Li City creatures were in the process of ruthlessly breaking down the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body, and completely ignored this technique of it. In the opinion of these merciless creatures, they only needed a few seconds before this Devil Tree Battle Soldier rich in energy would become their food!

However, no matter how much its body was ripped apart and how much blood it spilled, or even the fact that the terrifying poisonous fluid had infiltrated its body, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier paid no attention. It madly used all of its brute strength to fiercely pull at the Wood Finger Prison, causing it to become frightening shackles that reined in towards its body!

Finally, the Wood Finger Prison was completely tightened!

The wood fingers covering the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's head simultaneously brought in all eight of the Li City savage creatures to its body. It was as if the eight creatures were bound by tenacious rattans to a tree!

"Demon Wood Spike!"

"Ao!!!!!!"

A roar rang out and at the same time, two bolts of lightning hurtled across the night sky, ripping apart the pitch black curtain of rain. They illuminated the mad Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body full of blood!!

“Chi!!!!!”

The first demon wood spike abruptly shot out of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body, and ruthlessly entered a Li City savage creature’s body that was permeating poisonous fluids. From the back of this savage creature, it pierced all the way to its stomach; a green colored sticky blood was stuck to the tip of the demon wood spike and it slowly dripped off!

“Chi!!!!!”

The second demon wood spike appeared, and the Li City savage creatures rigidly tightened to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier wanted to break free, but the wood spikes directly pierced through their necks!

“Chi!!!!!!!!!!!”

The third demon wood directly pierced through two Li City savage creatures on top of each other…

“Chi!!!!!!”

The fourth one….

……

Several tens of demon wood spikes shot out of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body!!

The length of each spike was nearly three meters, and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier astonishingly transformed into a savage tree full of terrifying demon wood spikes!

What was even more shocking was that within a range of three meters in all directions, the wooden spikes had pierced through the corpses, dripping with blood!!

The downpour continued to fall, hitting these corpses. Each of these corpses had pretty much been pierced through by four or five demon wood spikes. Even if their life force was even more tenacious, it was impossible for them to survive.

All eight of the Li City savage creatures had been pierced through. Blood flowed down the dense demon wood spikes and even Chu Mu, after witnessing this frightening scene, couldn't help but change his expression – This was what a true wood type group kill looked like!

……

Dead creatures didn't have any life force, so the Devil Tree Battle Soldier that knew this began to absorb their life force as they struggled.

Thus, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier that had lost most of its life

force, through absorbing eight Li City savage creatures, quickly recovered to seventy to eighty percent. The serious wounds on its body also began to slowly heal.

"Hu~~~" the Devil Tree Battle Soldier spat out a mouth of impure air. When it gradually walked to Chu Mu, the demon wood armor on its body that had been eaten away by corrosion had pretty much already been healed.

Those incomparably sharp demon wood spikes returned one at a time back into the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body. Those dripping corpses also dropped one at a time, as the Devil Tree Battle Soldier took each step; the corpses were so shrivelled that the only thing that remained was a wreckage...

Chapter 247: Devil Tree Battle Soldier's Poison Effect

"Hu hu hu hu~~~~~~~~~"

A powerful stream of air gradually converged around Chu Mu. He turned around, and saw that the water halo on Ye Qingzi's Water Moon was controlling the violent rainstorm!

The rainwater began to flow irregularly, and even the puddles of water were slowly swept up. As the Water Moon let out a long cry, a strong air current swept up a ten meter high wave that swallowed the three savage creatures like an enormous deep sea creature!!

The three savage creatures ran in stricken panic into a resident's courtyard. However, the shocking mouth of the wave engulfed the courtyard, sweeping them up!

Water type attacks were considered weak amongst the many attributes, but if used well, could also cause extremely terrifying destructive powers.

Ye Qingzi's Water Moon was presently basking in the endless rain, and its fighting strength had become abnormally strong. Flood, Wave, and Flying Waterfall were all water type techniques that could be endlessly used to exhaust these savage creatures, greatly lowering their fighting strength.

Water type techniques could heal, detoxify, and purify to a certain extent, and thus were more supportive. However, when used in a fight, it was the best method for exhausting a soul pet's physical strength. Once that would pet was hit or submerged under water, they would suffer from water's unique resistance, and their physical strength would easily deplete, causing their fighting strength to weaken.

There was the supportive type Water Moon, the control type Dream Beast, and also the War Court Black Beast who strength was no less than Mo Xie's. It was therefore easy for Ye Qingzi to deal with these Li City savage creatures. Very soon, she had gotten rid of the ten Li City savage creatures, while the last five were dealt with by the Ice Air Fairy and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

In reality, the speed at which the Ice Air Fairy dealt with these creatures wasn't lacking; however, the majority of the techniques it used would be dodged by these strange creatures. Fortunately, the water aided it in allowing it to shorten its ice type technique chants by 50%, thus allowing it to effectively strike these things.

It could be said that the rain provided Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi with exceptionally advantageous circumstances. Otherwise, it wouldn't be so easy to deal with these savage creatures that possessed an invisibility ability.

After the fight ended, the downpour was still falling. Upon being submerged under liquid, the corpses of these creatures didn't immediately disappear. It took approximately a few minutes before their bodies showed signs of decomposing.

Ye Qingzi walked in front of Chu Mu, and she looked at his three soul pets. Her gaze finally landed on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and she asked: “That’s strange. What’s up with your Devil Tree Battle Soldier? I remember it just suffered from a serious wound just now.”

Ye Qingzi had planned on healing the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, but when she walked over, aside from it being physically exhausted, its fighting strength was at a full state and there were no signs of wounds on its body.

“It can now absorb life force, which is pretty much the same as having a healing ability.” laughed Chu Mu as he explained.

“Life Force Absorb?” Ye Qingzi ostensibly hadn’t heard of this technique before.

Chu Mu gave a rough explanation of the Life Force Absorb Technique’s uniqueness and as Ye Qingzi listened, she gradually opened her delicate small mouth in shock...

“Then as long as its physical strength is enough, your Devil Tree Battle Soldier will be able to continuously fight!” after Chu Mu finished his explanation, Ye Qingzi was exceptionally stunned. The uniqueness of this technique on the battlefield was rather evident.

“It really is like that...” Chu Mu nodded his head.

“None of your soul pets are normal.” Ye Qingzi didn’t know how

Chu Mu's luck was always so good; all of his soul pets were able to comprehend a technique capable of making people envious.

"Haha, you were the one that told me the method of acquired comprehension." laughed Chu Mu.

A soul pet trainer controlled which techniques a soul pet comprehended. If Chu Mu didn't put emphasis on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wood attribute and buy the corresponding spirit items for it to use, it probably would have learned another technique instead.

For instance, if Life Force Absorb had appeared on Ye Qingzi's Wood Tray Spirit, it wouldn't be fitting, because it was a support type wood attribute soul pets. Support type soul pets normally were protected and rarely attacked. Thus, the value of Life Force Absorb wouldn't be as effective as on the likes of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, which would often fight in the front lines.

"I feel like my existence as a support soul pet trainer is unnecessary in front of you." Ye Qingzi put on a rare flirtatious expression, and spoke using a pouting tone young delicate girl.

"Hehe." dryly laughed Chu Mu.

Ye Qingzi had the Water Moon heal all the wounded soul pets. Once the fighting strength of the soul pets returned to their peak condition, she suddenly thought of something and reminded Chu Mu: "Those things all have a poison attribute in their bodies. If your Devil Tree Battle Soldier turned their life force into its own, if

it doesn't have an ability to self-purify, it will very likely be infected by the poison."

Ye Qingzi's words made Chu Mu suddenly realize this, and he immediately asked whether the Devil Tree Battle Soldier felt anything strange in its body.

"Ao~~~~Ao~~~~~~"

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier blankly extended its arms and looked at its palms. It suddenly discovered that the originally dark red was slowly showing a green color!

"Do you feel uncomfortable at all?" Chu Mu began to question the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier shook its head, indicating that its body condition was relatively normal.

"It's very easy to be infected by poison through turning life force into one's own. If the poison stays a long time in the soul pet's body, then it may spread to other parts of the body, for example, its inner crystal. This will then corrode the soul pet's inner crystal; however, in some special circumstances, the poison infection will be slowed by the body and be turned into the soul pet's own poison attribute." said Ye Qingzi.

"You mean that my Devil Tree Battle Soldier could potentially possess a poison attribute?" asked Chu Mu.

“Yes, but the probability isn’t large. From the present circumstances, it seems to be in a concealed poisoned state and won’t immediately flare up; nonetheless, it will definitely damage the body’s composition greatly.”

“Young master, you actually can add on a poison effect to your Devil Tree Battle Soldier. I remember that some special items can maintain a plant world soul pet’s body condition, but at the same time allow its attacks to carry poison. As longs the attacks break the skin, even if it’s a tiny bit, the poison will deal extreme damage to sol pets with weak poison defenses.” said Old Li.

Poisonous effects mainly came from flower, bug or vine types. Old Li’s words were like enlightenment to Chu Mu as he indeed could add a poison effect to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s attacks. This way, not only would it have the ability to resist poison, but its attacks would be even more imposing.

“Qingzi, do you think that my Devil Tree Battle Soldier can carry the poison attribute?” asked Chu Mu.

Since Ye Qingzi was a soul teacher, she had definitely done a definite amount of research towards the poison attribute and it was thus appropriate to ask her this question.

“If this was before, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s body definitely wouldn’t be able to take the poison because it would ruin its body. However, right now, since it can transform another soul pet’s life force into its own, through the help of some spirit items, it should

be able to develop the poison type.” said Ye Qingzi.

“Then I should make sure the Devil Tree Battle Soldier has the poison attribute when it comprehends natural wood.” after obtaining a certain answer, a smile rose on Chu Mu’s face. He never expected that a new path to strengthening the Devil Tree Battle Soldier would arise out of dealing with these things.

“That said, Dong Qing has been underwater for a very long time. Nothing should have happened to him, right?” worriedly asked Ye Qingzi.

“It really has been a while. The water should be flowing outwards already. I’ll go down and look.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu had just entered the sewers and released his soul remembrance, when he clearly felt some object quickly quickly moving through the sewers back out.

Chu Mu immediately had his soul pets prepare to fight; however, when he found that it was Dong Qing riding his water beast as it jumped out of the water, he relaxed a bit.

“You guys are still ok, right?” asked Dong Qing when he saw Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi’s worried expressions.

“It’s nothing. We disposed of a group of savage creatures. Right now we’ve got a bit of an idea of the way these soul pets look. Tomorrow we’ll go to the library to research. We should be able to

find the classification for this soul pet. What was your situation like? Their nest should have been underground, right?" asked Chu Mu.

"You're right about their nest, however within all of this I'm afraid is probably a huge plot. Let's not talk about this now. Let's leave here so that that person won't detect us." said Dong Qing.

"That person?" Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi revealed curious expressions.

Dong Qing solemnly nodded his head. Promptly, he gave a general account of the nest of those savage creatures and the soul pet trainer he discovered.

"There really is someone plotting this. This person is truly malevolent..." Ye Qingzi creased her eyebrows.

"Do you know that person's identity?" Chu Mu had already somewhat expected this, after all, no matter how high a soul pet's intelligence was, it shouldn't be able to understand the composition of the city.

Dong Qing shook his head and said: "That person should have extremely strong strength. I didn't dare near him. I only know that right now, he's in another city district raising another batch of monsters. I'm really curious as to how he can control so many soul pets."

“This will have to wait until we find the classification for this soul pet, and we should have the answer then.” said Ye Qingzi.

“Yes, then we’ll leave today up till here. Tomorrow, we’ll have everyone come again and eliminate those things. Of course, it’ll be best to catch the culprit too.” said Dong Qing.

Chapter 248: Attached Pet, Hundred Mother

Rain was still in the air of Li City, causing the entire sky to be dark and gloomy, suppressing all those below.

In the morning, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi specially went to the library, which collected detailed information on many soul pets to find information on the Li City

The Li City savage creatures had poison, and from their body type and attacking measures, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi approximately locked them down, as Beast World demon type or bug type.

Li City's library was north of the Li City Plaza. It took up over three hundred meters horizontally, and it could be said to be one of the most majestic structures within Li City. It counted as a specialty structure that symbolized soul pet culture.

In front of the library were many pillars. These pillars were all carved with complicated words and symbols, some of which were thousand year old totems.

This was the first time Chu Mu had seen such a majestic library, and his heart was deeply moved. When he passed by the door, he unintentionally glanced at the exquisite totems……

The totem carvings were life-like, even having some special magic that led Chu Mu's thinking to slowly blend into the ancient

meanings of these totems.

“What is it?” Ye Qingzi saw that Chu Mu stopped for no reason and asked.

“I thought I saw something, maybe it was just the hallucinations from the totems.” Chu Mu shook his head and didn’t stay longer.

Just now, the hallucination that Chu Mu saw was strange. What should’ve been foreign seemed familiar, as if he had imprinted this totem into his dreams in the past……

The feeling was only an instant. When Chu Mu specially thought back, he couldn’t remember anything, so Chu Mu didn’t think much of it.

The library only had one level, with extremely high bookshelves that stood like rows upon rows of skyscraping trees. Walking into this magnificent yet solemnly silent library, Chu Mu felt as if he was watched by an arrogant giant made of books, unknowingly feeling more ignorant and inferior.

There were millions of soul pets, each with different appearance and ability. Similar soul pets also had different specialties. Walking into such a library, Chu Mu could feel just how big the soul pet world was, and how little people could truly keep all the knowledge in their minds.

The amount of books was unfathomable. Chu Mu knew that this

was the result of thousands of years of predecessors' knowledge. Without their guidance, the quest for humans to conquer soul pets would be even harder, and it would be impossible to have such a glittering soul pet civilization.

With such a culturally infused library, it was worth having a soul pet trainer with belief, like Chu Mu, to feel deep veneration for it.

……

The sea of books was boundless. Without an appearance reference, technique description, etc., it was very difficult to find a non-mainstream soul pet.

Ye Qingzi and Chu Mu both relied on their memory and started to look through the "Bug Type Encyclopedia" and "Demon Type Encyclopedia" for the species of the Li City savage creature.

It had to be said that Li City's library had a very detailed collection on soul pets. Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi found many similar soul pets based off the Li City savage creatures' appearances. All these soul pets were probably absent from even some tenth level city libraries, yet here, they could find drawings of them as well as descriptions written by researchers.

"There are similar ones, but it seems that they all didn't fit the Li City savage creatures description. For example, this bug type Food Stinger Species already fitted the Li City savage creature's outer appearance, but the book didn't mention their ability to become invisible, and their lower limbs don't seem to be as developed

either.” Ye Qingzi said with her head down. As she finished, she turned around to hand her book to Chu Mu to

When Ye Qingzi was speaking, Chu Mu also had his head down, and he didn’t notice that Ye Qingzi was near him already. When Chu Mu turned around to get the book, he hit the book and it fell onto the ground.

Chu Mu paused and then laughed apologetically, bending down to pick the book back up.

Ye Qingzi also crouched down to pick up her own book, so when she lifted her head up, their faces were intimately close.

Chu Mu paused again. Ye Qingzi’s delicate face was just ten centimeters away. He could even feel the air coming out of her sexy lips.

Ye Qingzi reacted very quickly. Feeling Chu Mu’s intrusive gaze, she quickly stood up and hid her blush under her fallen hair……

Chu Mu also quickly stood up. Seeing that Ye Qingzi suddenly wasn’t speaking, he momentarily felt awkward, not knowing what to say. After all, in the situation just now, he had clearly lost his soul to her.

It had been quite some time that they had been dealing with each other. In the beginning, Chu Mu was only interested in Ye Qingzi’s appearance and personality, especially her rationality and

intelligence, things Chu Mu especially appreciated.

Just as Ye Wansheng asked, “Do you really have no interest in my sister?” Chu Mu’s answer was certain; he had quite the interest in Ye Qingzi, and it was revealed through the small interaction just now, though every man would show such expression in the face of such a beautiful woman……

“Um, what were you saying before?…” Finally, as a man, Chu Mu braved his face and broke the awkward tension.

Ye Qingzi looked as if she broke from a trance, quickly flipping through the book in her hand to find the soul pet she previously found……

After flipping for a while, Ye Qingzi still couldn’t find it and finally let out a sigh, closed the book up, and said herself, “I saw a very similar soul pet before, but I don’t think it was the Li City savage creatures. Didn’t you find some leads too?”

“En, let me show it to you.” Because the books fell, Chu Mu lost his page too. and had to flip through.

Ye Qingzi saw that Chu Mu was flipping quickly and as he flipped, Chu Mu found strangely that no matter how much he looked, he couldn’t find the soul pet he had locked onto before. His face was slowly showing an embarrassed expression.

Suddenly, Ye Qingzi laughed out loud.

She extended her hand and took the book away from Chu Mu, putting the book in her hands into Chu Mu's hands instead.

Chu Mu was at first dazed but suddenly understood, opening his mouth into a silly smile.

……

After comparing, the two found that their soul pets were both very similar to the Li City savage creatures, but weren't exactly right.

In the end, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi specially took the two types of soul pets to ask the soul pet researchers within the library.

The researcher they found was an old man with a goatee. He looked at the soul pets that Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi found in detail and creased his brows for a long while. He sometimes walked to an older rack and looked through some books at the very top.

"I think this thing doesn't count as a soul pet." Finally, the old researcher made this conclusion.

"Not a soul pet?" Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi were both surprised.

"In reality, it technically counts as a soul pet, but they're a special group within soul pets, known as an Attached Pet."

Ye Qingzi and Chu Mu looked each other in the eyes. Clearly, both of them have not heard of such phrase.

“An Attached Pet could be defined as the soul pet of a soul pet……”

“These Attached Pets are mostly from bug type soul pets. For example, a queen of an ant colony has a very strong breeding ability, able to constantly produce ant soldiers to create a massive ant army. In reality, these abnormally reproduced slave organisms are very hard to sign contracts with, because they’ve already signed a “soul pact” with their ‘Mother’ soul pet.”

With this explanation, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi both understood somewhat.

“In reality, Attached Pets can’t be soul pets, because they’re really just techniques of special soul pets. Their own fighting strength may not be strong, so they rely on their Attached Pets to fight and gather food……”

The goatee researcher’s words resolved many questions within Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi’s hearts.

Dong Qing mentioned that this assault on city guards was a man-made event, seemingly one person, too. This made Chu Mu question who it could be that could control this many soul pets.

If these Li City savage creatures were all slave pets, then as long as the soul pet trainer could control the “mother” well, they could control all of the Li City savage creatures.

“Such an ability is very scary. If they can reproduce a lot, it’s like controlling a soul pet clan. The thing you just mentioned is the beasts that appeared on west street, right?” The old researcher asked.

“En.” Chu Mu nodded.

“The Attached Pet is basically a seventh phase commander, and some have the ability to self strengthen……The amount is very likely in the hundreds, or even more…….” The old researcher looked to somewhere else, as if estimating the soul pets’ strength.

After a moment, the researcher seemed to have reached a conclusion and said, “You don’t have to worry about this anymore.”

“Why?” Ye Qingzi asked questioningly.

“That ‘Mother’ isn’t something you can deal with.” The old researcher said.

“Just how strong is it?” Chu Mu asked curiously.

Speaking of the concept of Attached Soul Pet, if over hundreds of Li City savage creatures are attached to this ‘Mother’, then just

how scary is it? Because it already had a vast soul pet army in its disposal!”

“The fighting strength and amount of Attached Pets is decided by the Mother’s strength. Using phases and stages to describe may be fuzzy……”

“Species determined a Mother’s ability to reproduce. Ten Mother – warrior rank, Hundred Mother – commander rank, Thousand Mother – monarch rank…… unless it undergoes mutation, the amount of Attached Pets won’t increase with the improvement of the ‘Mother’.”

“For example, a warrior rank Ten mother, after strengthening, even if it reaches monarch rank, it would only be able to summon ten Attached Pets. Of course, the ten would be very powerful and not losing to an unstrengthened Hundred Mother.

“The one you have encountered is a Hundred Mother. A Hundred Mother meant commander rank and hundreds of Attached Pets……”

Chapter 249: Cyan Hidden Dragon

“A commander rank Hundred Mother will spawn creatures that are a level lower in rank and phase and stage. In other words, this Hundred Mother could very well be a ninth phase commander. Furthermore, the strength of the creatures spawned aren’t all equal. Similar to what you said before; some of them can strengthen themselves, and others cannot.” said the old scholar.

If it was a ninth phase commander, then the city central city officials would be able to find a few experts to deal with it, and Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi felt that these people would be able to eliminate these monsters.

“Of course, this is merely the most conservative estimate... the attached pets of the Hundred Mother can also subdivide. For instance, what you encountered probably were foraging attached pets and their fighting strength isn’t too strong; within a Hundred Mother’s nest, there are also fighting attached pets, and the strength of these attached pets is comparatively powerful; they definitely aren’t on the same level as foraging attached pets. Although I expect this to only be a ninth phase Hundred Mother, without any mishaps, its strength could potentially be even stronger.” the old scholar continued to say.

Hearing the old scholar mention this, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi let out awkward expressions.

Chu Mu enjoyed to fight at his limit and challenge stronger soul pets. However, if the opponent’s strength was too terrifying, Chu Mu wouldn’t stupidly go and attempt the impossible.

……

After bidding farewell to the old scholar, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi quickly returned to the city government, and the two of them gave a realistic account to the city official Li Gu…

Upon hearing the news, Li Gu's face turned even more worried, and he contemplated for a long while in a stressed state.

Li Gu himself was a spirit master, and had a few eighth and ninth phase commander ranks. His strength could barely reach what the old scholar described as the lowest level of the Hundred Mother. However, despite this, he potentially was not this monster's opponent.

"No one has any solution?" Li Gu's voice was heavy as he stared at all the captains present.

All of the captains lowered their heads. Faced with such a situation, they could only request assistance from above to resolve it. Unfortunately, right now was extremely untimely…

"Dong Qing, what exactly happened that such a large Li city cannot dispatch experts to deal with this matter." asked Chu Mu.

Li City should be an extremely strong city, and the experts in it should have been like clouds and hard to count. What made Chu Mu feel rather strange was that with such a serious matter, Li CIty

unexpectedly couldn't find experts to deal with it. Instead, they had these young city officials resolve it. This truly was a bit outrageous.

Dong Qing revealed a bit of hesitancy and for a while, didn't seem like he was intent on saying why.

Ye QIngzi was also curious like Chu Mu. Perhaps, aside from city official Li Gu, the other city guards were extremely curious about this matter. Why would Li City not place importance on this incomparably brutal thing?

Dong Qing didn't immediately speak and instead retreated out of the room.

Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi followed. Just now, Dong Qing had used soul remembrance to tell Chu Mu this matter wasn't something that could be rashly spread.

"This thing occurred two months ago..." Dong Qing eventually opened his mouth.

"Two months ago, our Li City discovered the tracks of a powerful soul pet. This soul pet should have been the hegemon of some place, and because of some reason, entered our Li City. At that time, a few of our city's experts had a great fight with it and it retreated, wounded, underground, hiding underneath Li City.

This matter disturbed all of Li City's experts. It can be regarded

that right now, practically every expert's attention has been placed on this soul pet underneath Li City, waiting for it to appear."

Chu Mu's gaze displayed an expression that he was at a bit of a loss. He felt that this matter seemed to be a bit too strange. Why would a powerful wild soul pet come into a human city?

The stronger a soul pet was, the higher its intelligence was. Bewildering World powerful soul pets would rarely enter human residences; after all, humans had many experts and them taking a risk to enter a society of humans would lead them to suffer from a group attack. Ultimately, they would definitely be cruelly killed.

"What creature is it that with so strong strength can shake the entire Li City?" immediately asked Ye Qingzi.

"This... ai... whatever. In truth, right now there are already many people that know." Dong Qing's expression turned more serious and he said, "If I'm not wrong, it should be an extremely strong mature Hidden Cyan Dragon."

"Cyan Hidden Dragon!" Hearing this name, Chu Mu's heart instantly began to violently beat!

Cyan Hidden Dragon. Could it be the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon? It appeared in Li City!

"Chu Chen?" Dong Qing and Ye Qingzi's eyes fell on Chu Mu because his reaction had been exceptionally large, causing others

to feel it was a bit strange.

Chu Mu naturally knew he had to keep the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's matters an absolute secret so he promptly fixed his expression and explained: "I'm only very astonished. I never expected such a powerful dragon species soul pet would appear in Li City."

"My father didn't think this event would occur. In reality, this Cyan Hidden Dragon had a goal by coming to our Li City." said Dong Qing.

"Goal? What goal?" immediately asked Chu Mu.

"This... I'm not too sure. I only became of it from my father." helplessly said Dong Qing.

"You mean that right now everyone's attention is focused on the Cyan Hidden Dragon hidden underground, and they don't have the effort to pay heed to the Western Street matter?" asked Ye Qingzi.

"That's pretty much it. Although the size of that Cyan Hidden Dragon is enormous, its hiding abilities are extremely strong. We've already been searching for two consecutive months and we still haven't found it. Afterwards, I don't know who leaked the information, but the Soul Alliance's people were informed and recently, a few Soul Alliance experts have entered our Li City." said Dong Qing.

Chu Mu was silent. He presently really wanted to know why the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon that had fled suddenly returned to a human city. Could it be that there was some vital object that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had to obtain?

“You guys think about it. What expert doesn’t want to see a Cyan Hidden Dragon and join in on the liveliness, even if it’s hard to tame? Who would still pay attention to strange occurrences happening on Western Street? Moreover, since the Cyan Hidden Dragon could appear at any time and its fighting strength is extremely powerful, it can easily cause very terrifying destruction. Li City patrol members always have to guard their post while also finding this Cyan Hidden Dragon’s tracks. Therefore, it’s very hard to dispatch people…” said Dong Qing.

“Why are you guys certain this Cyan Hidden Dragon is still in the city and that it hasn’t fled to another place? After all, this was something from two months ago.” asked Ye Qingzi.

“I’m not too clear about this. However, my father is sure it’s still in the city. Further, the moment we lower our guards, it will come out from underground. The situation is like this: the Cyan Hidden Dragon is the important matter among important matters; this Western Street matter can only be resolved by us.” said Dong Qing.

Originally, the Cyan Hidden Dragon matter had to be kept extremely confidential. Dong Qing told Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi because he trusted them. After he finished speaking, his gaze fell on Chu Mu, and he found that Chu Mu seemed to have been quiet for a rather long time.

“Chu Chen, why do I feel you’re acting strange?” asked Dong Qing.

Chu Mu woke up and apologetically laughed: “It’s nothing, I just suddenly thought of something.”

“What thing?”

“You said the Cyan Hidden Dragon is hidden underground. The Hundred Mother we’ve presently encountered is also living in the sewers. Moreover, they number an extremely large amount. Previously you said that a soul pet trainer is controlling these Li City savage creature, so I was thinking if that sinister soul pet trainer was a person attempting to find the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Using his Hundred Mother’s unique ability, he could have the attached pets that enjoy living underground search; in other words, during the day, they try and find the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s tracks, while at night they forage in the city.” said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu’s words made Dong Qing open his eyes wide and he abruptly slapped his thigh. With sudden realization he said: “What you said really could be a possibility!”

“Your thinking truly is sharp.” praised Ye Qingzi.

Chu Mu merely laughed. Just now he had been thinking about the question of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon appearing here. After hearing Dong Qing mention that everyone in the city was looking for it while strange things had occurred on Western Street, he discovered that if he linked the two matters together, it

was rather logical. After all, a few sinister soul pet trainers would do such heartless things for a benefit.

"We're incapable of participating in the Cyan Hidden Dragon matter. However, no matter what, we can't let this fellow run amok on my territory either!" said Dong Qing as he grit his teeth.

"Actually I have a method. However, this method won't necessarily be able to get rid of the Hundred Mother and that soul pet trainer. At most it will be able to eradicate those attached pets, pretty much weakening that Hundred Mother's strength." said Ye Qingzi.

"What method?!" Dong Qing was a bit excited as he looked at Ye Qingzi. He was clearly a hedonistic child of rich parents, yet he was extremely responsible towards his job.

Ye Qingzi lifted her head and pointed at the pattering curtain of rain as she slowly opened her mouth and said: "Although those things can stay underwater, they evidently cannot go without breathing for long. Since a large number of them are gathered in the sewers underneath, we can probably search for a map of the city's underground composition and block up Western City's underground sewers. Afterwards, have all soul pet trainers that control water type soul pets pour water into the sewers under Western Street, completely filling that area up with water. Even if they've dug up a safe secret room, with so many attached pets, after a day, the oxygen left in their secret room won't be enough. This way we'll be able to directly suffocate these things to death..."

Ye Qingzi's words made Dong Qing's eyes suddenly light up!!

“This is a great idea!! How did I not think of it?!!” Dong Qing immediately began to praise.

Unable to directly face them they had to outsmart them. Chu Mu felt that Ye Qingzi’s method was very practical!

Chapter 250: Exterminating Savage Creatures (1)

Although Chu Mu really wanted to find out about the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's condition, he knew that right now all of Li City's experts were focused on it. Even if he knew where it was, he couldn't move at all. He could only watch the changes from the side, so it was best if he dealt with the ruthless soul pet traininer attempting something against the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon first.

On this day, city official Li Gu had, after adopting Ye Qingzi's method, specially bought a few cheap soul pets from Soul Palace and threw them onto Western Street to make sure those things were still inhabiting that area.

Late at night, those soul pets released onto Western Street let out miserable shrieks, and quickly became the food for those hungry things.

On the third day, the city guards silently brought their soul pets underground Western Street district. Those who had a rock type soul pet firmly blocked up the sewers that could discharge liquid.

The large rain had already persisted for a few days. On this third day, the amount of rain had slightly decreased, but it didn't affect the water attack plan of these city guards, because they had already employed multiple soul pet trainers with water type and water species soul pets to come.

The dusky horizon hung a bit low, and the pattering rain washed over this ancient city, as a damp scent pervaded the air…

After a several days of rinsing, the city had become cleaner and the water that flowed into the sewers wasn't as muddy as before. The dirty things that flowed down into the sewers were also washed off the street.

Upon descending into the sewers, there was no light. Due to the city's burgeoning structure, the waterways in the sewers were tangled and complicated. Without those entrances, descending into the sewers was completely like entering a damp and wet underground labyrinth.

Of course, while this incomparably dark underground was the most vile place for humans, this special environment was a paradise for gluttonous insect monsters.

If it never rained, these things would hide in this lair under the city where right above them was food.

Just as Chu Mu understood, these gluttonous insect monsters were attached pets, and their life force was dependent on their mother's energy to subsist. The moment they left their mother for too long, they would turn into a pile of black dust.

They lived together, and when they hunted for food, they would move in groups. It was very rare to see an isolated gluttonous insect monster roaming outside.

Presently, these gluttonous insect monsters had congregated in a horizontal channel and were using their bodily fluids as a comfortable mattress and sheets.

“In my entire life I have never wanted to fight with those things; they’re so nasty that I want to throw up.” in the sewers, a thirty year old or so soul pet trainer spoke with a sick face.

“I don’t want to either. Who knows whether if they get hungry they’ll eat us too.” said a rather fat soul pet trainer next to him.

However, the fat soul pet trainer didn’t show a nauseated expression. Instead, he grabbed a piece of dry meat, and he began nonchalantly eating it while standing in this sewer full of excrement.

“If they want to eat us, they’ll definitely eat you first. Your meat is very fatty.” laughed the man who spoke before.

“Senior truly is very courageous. If those fellows attentions weren’t all on the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, I’m afraid these creatures that senior raised would have already been swept clean by those Li City experts.” said the fat soul pet trainer.

“You don’t understand. Senior does things like this often. Even disregarding Li City, other worldly cities...” when he got to this point, this man suddenly realized he said too much and after pausing, immediately chanted to a question: “senior said we only have to look after this place for two days, right?”

“Yes. Perhaps he already discovered something.” said the fat soul pet trainer.

The fat soul pet trainer found that the more of the nauseating things these gluttonous insect monsters secreted, the more it affected his appetite, so he walked to the side.

“Hua~~ Hua~~~~” the accumulation of water soaked the fat soul pet trainer’s shoe and as he walked, he let out slight splashing noises.

“That’s strange, why did the water level become higher. Did the rain start falling harder again?” the fat soul pet trainer walked to a place without water and began grumbling.

“That should be it. The odor seems to be growing increasingly strange. Whatever, as long as we look after these things for two days, we can do our own things.”

……

……

At noon time, in the city center’s Western Street District, nearly two hundred elemental world water type soul pets and beast world, different type water species soul pets were standing outside the entrances to the sewers. They were waiting for an order, and could set out at any time.

Finally, a captivating flame rose into the air. After reaching a height of a few hundred meters, it suddenly exploded in the curtain of rain, immediately releasing a dazzling fire light. It died all of the rain droplets in a red color...

“Begin!”

The aerial guard captain urged his wing type soul pet, and he yelled loudly at the soul pet trainers below him.

A series of clear incantation chants resonated in the air above Western Street District. Beautiful blue halos slowly covered the water type soul pets in the area...

Water type halos dispersed in the entire district like a ripple, even spreading to other districts in the heart of the city. Two hundred soul pets gradually gathered a majority of the rainwater from the heart of the city to Western Street. It was like a lake hovering in the air statically above Western Street.

In approximately ten minutes, twenty meters above the entirety of Western Street really appeared a huge collection of water. It was like it had been covered by an intangible large container weapon in the air.

Ye Qingzi believed that even if they were going to flood the sewers, they couldn’t have the water level slowly rise. If they did it this way, those monsters would have an opportunity to escape; after all, with those savage creatures’ strength, if they gathered their strength and blew apart the wall of the underground sewer,

they wouldn't have a problem. Only by abruptly pouring water into the sewer could they form a wave that knocked them into a messy disarray, thus not giving them the chance to break through the channel and submerging them in the water. Thereby, they would have a chance of catching them all at once.

"Release!!"

Finally the amount of water was enough, and the strength type soul pets let out wild beast-like roars and their large claws fiercely rippled apart the narrow sewer entrance!

The rain in the sky had completely formed a lake in the air, and when the water type soul pets used their minds to control it, the large lake made of an accumulation of rainwater in the air transformed into a torrential waterfall that violently surged into the torn open underground gap.

"Hong hong hong hong~~~~~~~~"

The sound of water was like thunder. After surging into the sewers, the water transformed into countless savage beasts that fiercely smashed into the four walls of the sewer. It untrammeled and coarsely galloped through the sewer channel.

Water had the weakest attacking force of all the attributes; however, the moment it gathered enough momentum and magnitude, it was an extremely terrifying force. It could engulf and destroy everything!

The enormous amount of water poured in and within a short minute, the exceptionally large sewer space was filled by the surging liquid; a rumbling caused the entire world underneath the city to shake.

……

“Did you hear a noise?” the fat soul pet trainer’s vigilance was relatively high, and he quickly sensed the abnormal occurrence in the sewer.

“It seems to be thunder; it could be some lightning falling above our heads.” the thirty year old or so soul pet trainer didn’t pay too much heed to it.

“Si si si~~~ si si si si~~~~~~”

At this time, the gluttonous insect monsters lying on their secreted fluids, sleeping, slowly opened their eyes one at a time.

The sewer seemed to be covered by a layer of these monsters that were crawling and moreover were extremely packed together. The perception abilities of these things was extremely strong, and despite looking like a pile of corpses as they slept, when they moved, they were completely awake. The green light emitted from their eyes in the darkness surveyed the environment…

“Si si si si~~~~~~~”

At the very center of the passage was a creature that occupied the entire space. It lifted its enormous head and lazily strode forward as if it wanted to head outside.

This creature was evidently the leader of these things, and the smaller gluttonous insect monsters specially left a path for it.

“Long long long long~~~~~~~”

The sounds began to echo more and more, and the underground passage began to evidently shake. Further, dust began to fall from above.

Suddenly, the enormous leader realized something and a terrifying malevolent look appeared on its ugly face.

“Huahuahuahuahua!!!!!”

Finally, the water splashed around the corner and subsequently after, the torrential flood engulfed the sewer. In a short period of a second, it appeared in front of the leader!

This monster’s face immediately revealed an expression of panic. It was unable to care for those gluttonous insect monsters hiding in the nest, and it spread apart its strong four limbs and madly sprinted in the other direction!!

“Water... water...” the fat soul pet trainer’s face was also full of panic. Before he finished speaking, the water had already splashed

against his body. In the next moment, he was entirely blown over by the current, not even having the chance to summon his soul pets.

The other soul pet trainer realized even slower and didn't even chant an incantation before his entire body was swallowed by the current. His body unceasingly tumbled in the rapidly moving torrent.

Very quickly, the boundless current began to pour into the gluttonous insect monsters' nest that numbered over 100. They didn't have enough time to flee, and both ends of the channel were occupied by the powerful current that was like a terrifying blue earth dragon. Moreover, the liquid began to rapidly permeate into their nest.

"Si si si si~~~~~"

The monsters immediately let out incomparably alarmed shouts. Their bodies unceasingly secreted a half-solid state substance that studied the walls on either side, not letting the powerful current enter.

The water seeped in extremely quickly and before a few seconds had passed, half of the room was covered. Yet, at this moment, the incomparably alarmed monsters finally sturdied either side, not letting the water fully submerge this place.

"Long long long long~~~~~~~~~~"

The water unceasingly surged against either side. When they discovered that the water had fully been controlled and no longer seeped into the nest, the hundreds of gluttonous insect monsters let out satisfied hissing sounds, as if they believed they had fortunately escaped this catastrophe.

An attached pet's intelligence was normally much lower than normal soul pets. Therefore, these things didn't realize that even if the water wasn't seeping in, they had been trapped in this extremely narrow passage.

Chapter 251: Exterminating Savage Creatures (2)

The water was filling up further and further. Adding on the fact that the sewage pipes on west street were all blocked, the speed at which the water was entering was far faster than the speed at which water was coming out. Very quickly, the entire underground area in this street area was submerged, leaving no space for air.

As the entire underwater tunnel system was filled with liquid, the water level at the Gluttonous Insect Monster's lair was also two thirds submerged.

The tunnel itself wasn't long, and with hundreds of Gluttonous Insect Monster, when there was only two thirds space, almost all of them hung themselves on the ceiling. Some even used their long arms to grab onto their companions, their body already submerged in the water.

"Putong~~~~~~~~~~"

One Gluttonous Insect Monster didn't hold on tightly and slipped into the water. After letting out a stream of frantic screams, its four limbs constantly slapped at the water, creating splashes.

The Gluttonous Insect Monsters realized that air was slowly decreasing. Discovering that its fellow creatures were falling into the water, they all looked at it splash with apathetic stares. Not a single one went to give it a hand. If even three Gluttonous Insect

Monster lowered their tails slightly, they could help it out of the water.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster weren't completely afraid of water. If their stamina was enough, they could still swim around in it, but they couldn't breathe underwater like water type soul pets could.

The water splashes lasted a while until the fallen Gluttonous Insect Monster slowly lost its energy, and its body sank under……

Not long after sinking into the water, this Gluttonous Insect Monster again floated up, but this time, it floated up with its four limbs facing up, while its body slowly showed signs of turning charcoal black.

"Pu dong~~~~~~~~~"

The oxygen provided for these Gluttonous Insect Monsters were getting less and less. Some weaker ones were already very weak from the lack of oxygen and had fallen into the water.

It was still the same struggle in the water, and still the same apathetic stare. Very quickly, this pack of weak Gluttonous Insect Monster drowned in the water and floated back up.

"Sisisisi~~~~~~"

"Sisisisi~~~~Sisisi~~~~~~~"

Even if their intelligences were low, they could still realize their imminent deaths. These Gluttonous Insect Monster started showing signs of communication, as if preparing to leave.

The water grew higher and higher, until it finally submerged almost the entire tunnel. There were nearly fifty monsters that had drowned in the water. When even the last few Gluttonous Insect Monster were dizzy and inflicted with headaches, they let out panicked screeches.

Finally, these things planned to escape. They knew that if they stayed for any longer, they would die for sure.

“Huahuahua~~~~~~~~~~~~”

All of the remaining Gluttonous Insect Monster jumped into the water. With their understanding of the tunnels from the past few weeks, they chose the nearest sewage exit and planned on using their short diving abilities to swim there.

There were seventy Gluttonous Insect Monster left. These seventy paddled for their lives, as they made their way quickly to the nearest exit.

This distance wasn’t long, but it sure wasn’t short either. Those with powerful life forces could reach there without an issue, but the ones with weaker life force would definitely suffocate in the water.

Of the seventy Gluttonous Insect Monster swimming, at least thirty slowly sank into the water as they swam, leaving their bodies slowly drifting away in the current.

The remaining thirty five that had been strengthened finally reached the nearest exit, but this exit was already covered in a thick layer of ice.

“Beng!!!!”

“Beng!!!!!!”

To live on, the Gluttonous Insect Monster started frenzily charging the thick ice layer. Restricted by the water, these creatures were clearly weakened. The ice layer that they could normally easily shatter held firm, sustaining only cracks.

Every entrance of west street had guards defending it. Very quickly, the three guards there felt that something was charging against the ice layers.

With an incantation, these three guards decisively sent a flare into the air to tell the aerial guards the situation.

“Leader, west street Lenglian Allay has a situation!”

The aerial guard watched the entire street area from above. After

the signal was sent. The aerial guards immediately reported the situation to the leaders at each position. Quickly, the leaders sent a command to their teams, concentrating half of their energy at the entrance of Lenglian Alley.

“Haha, this move indeed worked, they’ve already been forced out. Now, all we have to do is clean up the survivors.” Aerial guard Li Gu started laughing greatly.

Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi both stood on Dong Qing’s Horizon Feather Bird. From their current position, they could see that most aerial guards were riding their soul pets to gather at Lenglian Alley.

“Boss Li, don’t redirect those who are guarding entrances, let them stay at their positions.” Chu Mu saw that Li Gu was about to send almost everyone over and quickly said.

“En, that sounds safer.” Li Gu nodded and sent the command down, letting those guarding the wells to stay at their posts.

Though there was the restriction of water, the Gluttonous Insect Monster all still had seventh phase commander rank. They used each other’s bodies as support as they cast attack techniques in the water, creating an opening in the ten meter thick ice layer.

After finally creating an opening, the water level no longer rose, and these things quickly became even more crazy. The ten meter thick ice layer was little by little destroyed, before they finally jumped out of the underground tunnels.

“Sisisi~~~~~~Sisisi~~~~~~~~~~”

The remaining thirty five Gluttonous Insect Monsters began greedily sucking in air. If they stayed down there for even a minute longer, they would definitely all die of suffocation.

Yet, so what if these things escaped from the underground tunnels? The moment they jumped out of this exit, at least three hundred soul pets were around it, eagerly watching these Gluttonous Insect Monsters that jumped out.

“Kill all these bastards and get revenge for our brothers!” Seeing these Gluttonous Insect Monsters appear, the city guard leader was face full of anger, letting out a loud roar.

Incantations started. These three hundred city guard soul pets had at least two hundred elemental world soul pets. When the incantation started, glows of all kinds started shining with an eye-blinding light!!

Raging gales, blizzards, rock mountains, flames, tsunamis……

All sorts of elemental techniques were cast, causing a rumbling sound to pass through the entire west city area and the nearby structures to shake violently!

From above, Chu Mu could see all sorts of energies exploding. One burst of energy even reached a hundred meters into the sky,

causing the Horizon Feather Bird that was holding the three of them to waver temporarily.

The thirty five Gluttonous Insect Monsters were quickly devoured by the elemental barrage, disappearing within the intersection of energies!

Very quickly, the twenty Gluttonous Insect Monsters that jumped out were destroyed with their corpses strewn everywhere, mixed into the rain water.

The remaining fifteen Gluttonous Insect Monsters no longer dared to jump out, swimming back into the water panicking……

Yet, within a minute, these things still became corpses, slowly sinking down, simply dying a different way.

Only a few minutes after they killed these things, another flare lit up above Gutong Alley.

“Another group, Mister Chu really considered this thoroughly.” Li Gu said with respect as he looked at the flare that arose.

These Gluttonous Insect Monsters had the ability to go invisible, so as long as there wasn’t sunlight, if they could jump out of the tunnel, they could definitely escape with their invisibility. It was this thought that made Chu Mu tell Li Gu to keep his subordinates at each exit.

“Huhu!!!!!!!!!”

Suddenly, two more balls of flame exploded in the air, pointing to the other side of Gutong Alley.

Li Gu’s smile quickly disappeared as he furrowed his brows, “How are there so many?!”

“Boss Li, let your subordinates head there. Leave the creatures at Gutong Area to us three.” Chu Mu said.

“Then you guys be careful, if there are too many, immediately send a signal to me and I will come at my fastest speed.” City official Li Gu nodded.

Chu Mu remembered that the city guard had more than a hundred people, yet they were all killed without any news getting out. The amount of Gluttonous Insect Monsters must not be limited to a simple hundred.

Another fact that Chu Mu remembered was, when he was being chased, he could never shake loose the dozen Gluttonous Insect Monsters that chased him. After knowing more about them, Chu Mu felt that these things couldn’t possibly be faster than Night Thunder Dream Beast in its Reach For the Midnight Moon state.

With multiple flares lighting up in west street, it confirmed the fact that the Gluttonous Insect Monsters had many lairs. Chu Mu naturally couldn’t let any of these threats to the Empyrean Cyan

Hidden Dreagon live on.

“Once we deal with this, I will definitely recommend you to my father, haha!” Dong Qing, who was riding his Horizon Feather Bird, said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu only nodded. After getting along these days, Chu Mu could roughly tell that Dong Qing was the son of some big character of Li City. Through Dong Qing, Chu Mu could also know more about Yu He and prevent himself from being in such a passive state. After all, his identity of Soul Palace Young Master was right, but without proof, he wasn’t sure if the Soul Palace people would recognize it.

Very quickly the Horizon Feather Bird neared the underground entrance in Gutong Alley. Chu Mu jumped straight off the bird and onto a house, quickly chanting an incantation to summon his Ice Air Fairy before him.

“You guys back off a bit, these things aren’t easy to deal with.” Chu Mu reminded the city guards.

The city guards were all seventh phase warrior rank on average, so dealing with these seventh phase commander ranks would be difficult.

Chapter 252: Hidden Dragon's White Cocoon Silk

"Ice Freeze!"

With an incantation, the Ice Air Fairy's Towering Ice ice frost fell on the well, adding a layer of crystals to the already cracking ice layer.

The ice crystals covered over and fortified the ice that blocked the well. However, the Gluttonous Insect Monsters underneath were very powerful. Even the Ice Air Fairy's Towering Ice couldn't completely seal it.

"Beng!!!!!!!"

Finally, the ice exploded open, sending ice shards everywhere. A massively strong bug type aura burst out of the crack, reaching fifty meters in radius, and sending the soul pets of the city guards flying away.

Chu Mu himself was secretly surprised, because with his understanding of the Gluttonous Insect Monster, even if multiple monsters gathered together, they wouldn't create such powerful aura.

Chu Mu watched the shattered ice layer closely. This Gluttonous Insect Monster was very crafty. It was invisible the moment it crashed out of the well. If not for the rain and some almost

invisible white silk, Chu Mu wouldn't be able to see it at all.

"Chu Mu, careful, it's a larger Gluttonous Insect Monster, possibly the Hundred Mother!" Ye Qingzi very quickly realized the size of this one and said in a loud voice.

"Sisisisi~~~~~~~~~~"

Ugly sounds came from this Gluttonous Insect Monster's throat. It was very fast. Chu Mu couldn't even see its movements, and he was only able to feel a gust of crazed wind pass by before all the soul pets of the city guards started spewing blood, defenseless in front of this Gluttonous Insect Monster.

Seeing this, Chu Mu's heart was even more in shock. He hadn't expected this Gluttonous Insect Monster to be this powerful. He quickly told his Ice Air Fairy to cast Ice Air Dance.

Dancing white frost covered the area, and in the white vagueness, Chu Mu could see the thing barrelling towards him at terrifying speeds!

"Towering Ice Sword Formation!

Chu Mu immediately commanded Ice Air Fairy.

This Gluttonous Insect Monster's speed could only be described as terrifying. The Ice Air Fairy had already created twenty four swords, yet none could lock onto the savage beast going at Chu Mu.

“Attack around me!” Chu Mu sent the idea to Ice Air Fairy through remembrance.

Ice Air Fairy quickly understood its owner’s meaning, controlling its twenty four Towering Ice Swords to attack around Chu Mu patternlessly.

“Beng!!! Beng!!!! Beng!!!!!!”

The massive ice swords fell one by one around Chu Mu, becoming countless flying shards.

“Sousousou~~~~~”

Yet, this Gluttonous Insect Monster’s dodging capabilities were also scary. Facing such dense and massive ice sword coverage, it could still dodge everything!

“Overlay!!”

Chu Mu’s heart tightened, as he already felt the savage creature’s disgusting breathe battering his face.

After the techniques were overlaid, the Ice Swords came even more frequently and the wind-like monster finally was affected, unable to truly near Chu Mu.

Yet, Chu Mu didn't realize that the beast could still attack!

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's transparent body passed by Chu Mu from five meters away, and its long claws drew a sinister arc through the rain, like a strike of lightning.

Chu Mu had already cast Towering Ice Armor on himself when he summoned the Ice Air Fairy. Adding on the sixth level soul armor's effect, his defense was at the seventh rank complete stage.

Yet, this scary claw easily ripped through Chu Mu's defense, leaving a wound that reached Chu Mu's bones, almost cutting his entire arm off!

Blood poured out of Chu Mu's arm, and Chu Mu's incantation was interrupted, unable to be completed

"Chu Mu!!"

Seeing Chu Mu wounded, Ye Qingzi was so alarmed she jumped off the Horizon Feather Bird and summoned her Dream Beast to fly towards Chu Mu.

Dong Qing was similarly surprised, quickly telling his Horizon Feather Bird to fly above Chu Mu, trying to drag him into the air.

"Don't come over, this thing is very powerful!" Chu Mu yelled, telling Ye Qingzi and Dong Qing to stay put in the air.

This Gluttonous Insect Monster was far past Chu Mu's imagination, and its ability to go invisible was far stronger than the previous monsters. With a single mistake, he would definitely die. Flying down as recklessly as Ye Qingzi and Dong Qing could very likely make them the next target.

Ye Qingzi's Dream Beast slightly paused in the air. Finally, her rational mind stopped her from landing. She instead cast an incantation, and wrapped a soft blue water band around Chu Mu's wounded arm.

Ye Qingzi's Healing Water Heart was very effective. The blood spewing wound quickly stopped bleeding and started healing at a visible rate……

"Mo Xie!" taking the opportunity that the Ice Sword Formation was still falling, he decisively summoned Mo Xie in front of him.

The crimson Demon Fire Evil Flames and the bright red blood flames started burning amidst the ice shards. Nine royal flames quickly drew patterns and formed a flaming summoning symbol.

The Pitiful Appearance Mo Xie quickly appeared in the summoning symbol. It didn't hide its massive monarch rank demonic aura at all, ready to become the powerful Royal Flame Nine Tailed Inferno Fox in an instant!

Though Ye Qingzi didn't land, she quickly finished her incantation and summoned her powerful War Court Black Beast

beside Chu Mu.

The War Court Black Beast's fighting strength wasn't weaker than Mo Xie's. Its aura was similarly strong as it used its powerful black eyes to glare at the transparent body within the rain.

The invisible Gluttonous Insect Monster's vigilance was very high. Clearly, feeling Mo Xie and the War Court Black Beast's powerful monarch auras, it realized it had no hope in killing Chu Mu and turned around to escape without hesitation!

"Stay in pitiful appearance." Chu Mu didn't let Mo Xie remove her Pitiful Appearance, instead summoning Night Thunder Dream Beast in front of him.

Chu Mu nimbly jumped onto the Night Thunder Dream Beast's back and told it to run its fastest towards the escaping Gluttonous Insect Monster.

"Chu Mu, don't chase it!" Ye Qingzi naturally could tell that the Gluttonous Insect Monster they met was very powerful, powerful enough to kill them if they made the slightest mistake, so chasing like this was very dangerous.

Dong Qing in the air had already cast an incantation to let out a fire signal into the air to tell Li Gu of the situation.

Chu Mu didn't mind Ye Qingzi's warnings and didn't wait for Li Gu's assistance either. After he jumped on, he immediately told

Night, who was powerful at sensing, to speed up towards the Gluttonous Insect Monster.

“You guys stay, I’ll chase.” Chu Mu was already a few hundred meters away before he used his remembrance to send a message.

Ye Qingzi was about to say something, but Chu Mu and his soul pet had already left her vision in a blaze, quickly disappearing into the complex alleyways.

“What is with him, why is he that irrational? I’ll chase him back by air.” Dong Qing wouldn’t let Chu Mu face that terrifying Gluttonous Insect Monster alone, so he quickly flew back into the air.

Ye Qingzi didn’t chase, only watching the direction that Chu Mu left in. After a while, her gaze fell back to where Chu Mu was standing.

Ye Qingzi remembered that as she was healing Chu Mu, Chu Mu didn’t immediately summon Mo Xie, but first looked under his feet.

“What is this?” Ye Qingzi knelt down and picked up a few strands of sticky white silk with question.

This was left by the Gluttonous Insect Monster when it attacked Chu Mu. What Ye Qingzi didn’t understand was, why would Chu Mu change his retreat plans and decide to chase after the

dangerous Gluttonous Insect Monster after seeing this?

……

……

When it wasn't completely night, the Night Thunder Dream Beast's Reach for the Midnight Moon could only double its speed. This double speed was hard pressed to catch up to the Gluttonous Insect Monster. Chu Mu specially cast Wind Riding on Night to barely see a trace of the Gluttonous Insect Monster ahead.

Always chasing in the city, they had gone from a cold western street area to a more habitated center city.

The center city north street was a luxurious entertainment wonderland. It was near midnight and all sorts of flames dotted the scape. Walking in, one could feel the heavy scent of makeup flow through the air. It was a rotten smell that could draw one in and corrupt.

This Gluttonous Insect Monster had intelligence. It seemed to know that there had to be powerful people among those humans, so when it dashed into north street, it didn't start any slaughters. Sometimes it would use the crowds to evade Chu Mu's chase, even dashing into event spaces to make Chu Mu lose it.

When Chu Mu rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast to an abnormally luxurious brothel, the Gluttonous Insect Monster

completely disappeared, causing even its heavy aura to be covered up.

Chu Mu didn't mind those drunken guests or frightened prostitutes as he rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast straight into the courtyard of the brothel.

"You sure it's here?" Chu Mu asked Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Night used its ability to control darkness and started seeping its senses into every facet of the brothel, trying to look for the Gluttonous Insect Monster.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster was very powerful, and Chu Mu needed to go all out to even have a chance. Normally, Chu Mu would definitely not take such a risk and fight against something he very likely couldn't fight.

But, Chu Mu had a reason that made chasing mandatory.

Because, when the Gluttonous Insect Monster attacked him just now, some sticky white silk fell from the creature.

This silk clearly wasn't made by the Gluttonous Insect Monster, and after having stayed with the little cyan insect for so long, Chu Mu was sure that the Gluttonous Insect Monster had accidentally touched some silk that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had produced!

Before on the island, this white silk once covered an entire forest, making it the Innards of a God!

Chapter 253: The Hundred Mother's Master

Chu Mu knew that it was practically impossible for him to find the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, but being able to find a small trail fortunately from the gluttonous insect monsters, how could Chu Mu let it slip away so easily?!

It was nearly night time, and the Night Thunder Dream Beast's perception abilities gradually strengthened as the black night descended. Its perception range also increased from its original 60-70 meter range to 100 meters.

There were five levels in total in the brothel, and each floor was 100 square meters. The descent of the curtain of night meant that this place would become a paradise for the bodies of men and women.

The women on the fifth floor were the brothel's best. Regardless of their looks, skin, or figure, they were comparable to many young women with superior blood lineage of noble families. Some of them even were the girls from fallen families.

Row after row of light red colored rooms were currently occupied with many high officials and nobles walking about. Some of them were holding an extreme beauty in their arms while laughing, and others were spending money to purchase a room, impatient to head towards the beautiful woman in the corresponding room...

In the right most room, the sky wasn't completely dark, yet people could hear the faint gasps from the intercourse of a man

and woman…

However, after a mysterious wind blew past, the exclastatical sounds of intercourse suddenly stopped.

“What’s the matter, senior. Are you not going to continue? This servant isn’t satisfied yet?” softly moaned the woman inside the room. Like a loving mother cat, she intimately wrapped herself around the naked man’s body. Then she began to slowly squat down, wanting to arouse the man’s desire.

“Get out.” the man suddenly emitted a cold air and frostily spoke to the woman.

“That won’t do. There are so many people outside I’ll be embarrassed with so many people looking.” the woman didn’t realize the man’s countenance had already changed, and she continued to push herself on top of his waist.

The man apathetically walked beside the bed and quickly put on his clothing. He casually threw a coat on the woman and forcibly drove her out of the room.

The woman was dumbstruck, but she understood from his body language that this senior’s expression just now was extremely terrifying. Thus, she wore this piece of clothing that didn’t cover her entire body and ran to a neighboring sister’s room.

……

“Ruo Shui, do you see that handsome young master? Quickly go and entertain him.” the female brothel keeper looked down from above and instantly saw a man walking up. A burst of radiance suddenly shot out from her eyes.

The woman called Ruo Shui was clearly a bit unwilling, but after the female brothel keeper glared at her, she lifted her skirt and slowly walked towards Chu Mu who was searching for the gluttonous insect monster.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had already sensed that this gluttonous insect had hidden in this brothel, but strangely, after it had entered this place, it instantaneously disappeared!

If this gluttonous insect beast innately had some aura concealing technique, it would probably have used it already and be able to break free from him, not giving him a chance to chase it here.

Therefore, Chu Mu determined that this gluttonous insect monster had most probably ran to its master’s location. This mean that the incomparably ruthless soul pet trainer was in this brothel.

Chu Mu naturally guessed that this soul pet trainer’s strength was powerful, so when he entered, Chu Mu intentionally had the Night Thunder Dream Beast wait in the courtyard while he changed his appearance with Old Li’s technique. Then, he used white demonic devil flames to cover his aura.

“Young master, this woman is called Ruo Shui...” weakly said

Ruo Shui as she walked in front of him and bowed her body.

Chu Mu glanced at this somewhat delicate woman, but didn't pay heed to her and continued walking to the fifth floor.

Ruo Shui looked at the female brothel keeper who shot her a glance, making her continue following Chu Mu. No matter what, she had to take this customer.

Chu Mu was a spirit master, and what he was wearing naturally wasn't similar to a common person's. The female brothel keeper's eyes were sharp and no matter what, she couldn't let such a huge customer leave. After all, nearby here was all other brothels...

"Is young master looking for someone?" Ruo Shui followed behind Chu Mu, and spoke to him with a very unskilled tone.

Chu Mu didn't respond and walked straight to the fifth level. The Night Thunder Dream Beast informed him that this gluttonous insect monster's aura had disappeared on the fifth level.

"Really, I don't what happened to that senior. He suddenly stopped, and just as I barely was able to feel something, he tossed me out of the room..." a bewitching female voice rang out from a room.

Chu Mu's hearing abilities were good and he quickly caught the information. He turned around and looked Ruo Shui who was following him without speaking and said: "Go and help me ask the

woman inside which room she was just in.”

“Oh, oh.” Ruo Shui hastily nodded her head and knocked as she entered the room.

Very quickly, Ruo Shui, asked about her room, which happened to be the one on at the very edge of the fifth floor.

“Is young master going there to… oh?” Ruo Shui was about to say something when she suddenly discovered that a powerful arm had grasped onto her waist and she fell into someone’s embrace.

“Young master?” Ruo Shui was flustered and for a moment she didn’t know what to do.

“Don’t say anything, just come with me.” Chu Mu’s eyes didn’t change at all, and he merely walked towards the right most room with this prostitute in his arms.

Chu Mu quickly put up a smile as if he was about to taste a beauty. After he walked to that room, he pushed it open before appearing to want to kiss this woman.

After the room door was pushed open, a silent man was sitting on the large bed. This man had already hit middle age, but didn’t seem too different from a thirty or so man. When Chu Mu and Ruo Shui entered the room, the man’s eyes immediately turned ice cold, and he emitted a bit of killing intent!

“Huh? Why is there someone?!” Chu Mu feigned fluster and right after he entered, he hastily stepped out.

Quickly, glancing over the man, Chu Mu hastily closed the door while scolding Ruo Shui: “Didn’t you say this room? You even got this wrong…”

Ruo Shui was completely confused by Chu Mu’s pretense and could only be pulled out by Chu Mu’s strong arm.

After walking out the room, Chu Mu didn’t loosen his arm and instead held onto Ruo Shui. He continued to pretend to be a normal customer of a brothel and slowly walked down the brothel stairs.

As expected, the right most room door wasn’t closed and the silent man’s gaze ventured out, glancing at the carefree Chu Mu. Then, his gaze swept through the aisle before looking down, and seeing if the soul pet trainer was the gluttonous insect monster had mentioned before had pursued him here.

“Young lady, you really can’t come here. We’ll deal with this matter, you relax…” suddenly, clamor rang out from below.

“Hmph, then get your ass up there and get my friend’s younger sister out!” the somewhat arrogant woman’s voice rang out.

In order to not arouse that man’s suspicion, Chu Mu walked down the stair with Ruo Shui in his arms the entire time. Then, he

happened to come face to face with this somewhat rude woman...

When he saw this woman, Chu Mu was stunned because this woman happened to be young lady Sha who had competed speed with him in the free area when he entered the city.

“You... bastard, I’ll kill you!” young lady Sha immediately saw Chu Mu closely holding Ruo Shui and her face was promptly flushed red. She instantly ordered her underlings to summon their soul pets.

Chu Mu was overcome with a wave of surprise and hastily released the woman called Ruo Shui before running to the courtyard.

A wave of cold air came over him and Chu Mu knew that the fellow upstairs had woken up and locked onto him. If he continued to stay here, he would definitely be killed by that fellow!

“You want to run? You guys take her back and I’ll catch that lecher!” young lady Sha ordered her four underlings. As she spoke, young lady Sha rapidly summoned the Light Unicorn; after jumping onto its back and giving it a violent urge, she chased after Chu Mu.

“Don’t run!” young lady Sha didn’t know anything and quickly caught up to the courtyard.

“Night Thunder Dream Beast?” when young lady Sha got to the

courtyard, she saw a familiar Night Thunder Dream Beast jump over the surrounding walls and speed towards the main street.

“Could it be that fellow? Although their figure is very similar, their facial features aren’t too similar?” muttered young lady Sha. However, when she saw that Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast had already ran far away, she smacked her Light Unicorn and chased after him.

Night time was the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s domain, as it could exert three times its full speed at this time. Such a speed was much faster than the speed during the competition with young lady Sha.

Very quickly, young lady Sha’s Light Unicorn was left behind; yet, she had an unstoppable drive and immediately chanted an incantation. She added a seventh rank speed increase soul technique onto her Light Unicorn and was finally barely able to see Chu Mu’s figure.

A wave of cold wind blew out of the brothel. Amidst the curtain of rain, it was able to faintly see the outline of a person riding on his steed.

Suddenly, a pair of eyes appeared on this transparent outline of a person. This incomparably cold gaze was watching the Night Thunder Dream Beast and the Light Unicorn that had already fled very far.

“Young lady sha... hmph, truly a hindring woman...” a deep

voice coldly rang out. The Hundred Mother's master was hesitating whether or not to kill that brat on the street.

If he killed that brat on the street, young lady Sha would definitely see it, yet this Hundred Mother's master didn't dare attack young lady Sha...

Ultimately, this master of the Hundred Mother decided against letting Chu Mu go. He relied on powerful invisibility ability and silently chased in the direction Chu Mu had fled.

.....

Many years of life and death experience told him that he was already extremely close to death. The strength of this Hundred Mother's master had far surpassed Chu Mu's imagination. If he hadn't fled the brothel earlier, that fellow would be able to purely rely on his soul remembrance to suppress him; it would even be hard for Chu Mu to chant an incantation!

"Night, quick, hurry up!!" Chu Mu anxiously had the Night Thunder Dream Beast use its fastest speed!

Chapter 254: Pursued by Death Through the City

“Hui~~~~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast felt the distinct approach of danger, and after it let out a long whinny, it attempted to increase its speed after already being at three times its full running speed!

Running through the rainy night, the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s body seemed to completely meld into the darkness with only the white feathers flowing down from its neck to its tail flying through the air...

Four hundred meters away!

Chu Mu had already sensed the Hundred Mother master’s soul remembrance, and this also allowed him to guess how far away he was!

Only, not much later, the gap had decreased to three hundred meters!!

The Hundred Mother master’s strength was exceptionally shocking. The Night Thunder Dream Beast possessed extreme demonic speed yet he was able to close the gap by a hundred meters in such a short period of time. Moreover, this was done so while Chu Mu deliberately passed through crowds of people and unceasingly changed directions. If it was running in a straight line,

that fellow probably would have closed the gap even quicker.

Chu Mu knew that as long as that fellow came 100 meters near him, his life would be in danger. After all, a soul pet trainer at such a level could probably instantly kill his soul pet!

“Night, faster!! Faster!!!” Chu Mu’s heart was already jumping, and the violent gale and falling rain slapped against his incomparably grave face.

“Hui~~~~~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s ran without restraint with its speed already at the limit, forcing it to breakthrough and surpass its limit.

Two hundred meters!!

When Chu Mu passed through the bustling streets, that fellow was only two hundred meters away from Chu Mu!

The Hundred Mother’s master was like a sharp sword that could instantaneously pierce through Chu Mu’s heart, and he was quickly closing in on Chu Mu!

“Sou sou~~~~~”

“Damn, where did that chaotic wind come from?!” young lady

Sha happened to be two hundred meters away from Chu Mu. When that bloody executioner riding on the gluttonous insect monster ran passed her, young lady Sha's clothes were promptly thrown into a mess by the gale. This caused her body to sway, and she nearly fell off from the Light Unicorn.

The Light Unicron had evidently felt a powerful creature sprint past its body, and it let out a flustered expression. Its pace also slowed down a bit as it didn't dare continue giving chase.

"Chase, what are you afraid of? Chase after him!" young lady Sha's temper was rather stubborn. She clearly knew that a powerful soul pet had just ran past, yet she didn't give up her intention of chasing down Chu Mu.

Of course, suffering from the strong wind's effect, young lady Sha quickly fell behind to three hundred meters away. If her speed was any slower, it would probably be very hard for her to find the Night Thunder Dream Beast in the city.

Chu Mu turned around, and he could see an unusual silhouette running on the roofs a hundred meters away in the dark curtain of rain. Its violent energy seemed to blow the curtain of rain into chaos.

Chu Mu's heart sank, and he sucked in a deep breath of air, attempting to calm himself down as much as possible.

Chanting an incantation, two balls of white demonic devil flame slowly ignited in his palms. Although Chu Mu didn't want to

transform into a half devil in such a crowded city, under such circumstances, Chu Mu could only transform before having a chance to contend against this powerful soul pet trainer.

“Longlonglong!!!!!!”

Suddenly, a purple-red bolt of lightning ripped apart the black horizon and landed not even five meters in front from the Night Thunder Dream Beast, blowing up a brown colored roof!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast continued its attempt to increase its speed yet the lightning power didn’t disappear. Only, Night knew that if it slowed down its speed to dodge, that fellow would definitely close the gap again!

“Hui~~~~~~~”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out another long whiny and jumped into the air, directly knocking against that purple-red colored lightning full of a destruction aura!

Lightning flickered between its dream horns as it attempted to use its own lightning attribute to absorb the purple-red colored lightning force, ensuring that Chu Mu sitting on its body wouldn’t suffer from the lightning waves.

As the lightning appeared, an uproar rang out from the street full of people.

Those people moving to and fro were attracted by the roof that was knocked down by the shocking lightning. However, they happened to see the shocking scene of Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast passing through the lightning!

The purple-red lightning attached to the Night Thunder Dream Beast and unceasingly moved about. As the Night Thunder Dream Beast increased speed, the lightning arcs seemed to lag behind!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast was increasing its speed!

Already three times the speed of its full speed, it was still increasing in speed. The lightning allowed it to break through its speed limit enabling it to run faster than three times. Moreover, the lightning bolts scuttling about on the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body imperceptibly transformed into lightning wind clothing that sparked around its body.

Three different types of light enveloped the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body. Chu Mu didn't have enough time to be shocked as minute changes occured on its body.

Silver white, dark black, and purple red; a tri-colored facula appeared on the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body creating a spirited orbit as it ran. It seemed to have formed some form of defense, and it was like some type of energy had been absorbed into the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body, unceasingly allowing it to break through its speed limit!

Level up!

A moment later, Chu Mu abruptly realized that the Night Thunder Dream beast had leveled up by one stage, and that it had stepped into the seventh phase fourth stage level from the seventh phase third stage level.

Taking advantage of the moment it leveled up, the potential in its body burst forth, and the Night Thunder Dream Beast's speed unexpectedly increased to four times its original amount!!

This quadruple speed was nearing the speed of when Chu Mu used Instant Assault; however, Mo Xie's Instant Assault was temporary while the Night Thunder Dream Beast could maintain this speed running!!

"What a fast soul pet!!"

"Indeed, it's practically like lightning!"

"Is that a monarch rank demon?"

The people in the city couldn't actually clearly see Chu Mu's NIght Thunder Dream Beast and only knew that a powerful soul pet had just flitted past them; each one of them let out gasps of surprise.

One hundred and fifty meters away from Chu Mu, the Hundred Mother's master saw that Chu Mu's soul pet had unexpectedly increased speed again and his face became somewhat unsightly.

The Hundred Mother's master could see that Chu Mu was a young generation member. Somewhat at his sort of level, even if it was against a soul pet trainer of the same age, let alone a young generation member, he definitely would not have to expend much to kill him or her.

However, as he chased him from Northern Street, this young man's soul pet displayed a speed that made this veteran soul pet trainer exceptionally surprised. After all, of the young generation soul pet members, those who could reach such speeds couldn't be more than a dozen. Thus, it could only mean that this young man that had seen through his pretense wasn't some normal person!

If this young man had some sort of huge faction behind him, he, Duan Xinhe, should probably proceed with caution. Although he had committed many evil things and committing a few more sinful deeds was of no issue, he didn't want to be pursued by some faction, especially an organization with power like Soul Palace or Soul Alliance.

With such hesitation, Duan Xinhe's speed slowed down a bit and the gap widened a bit.

However, Duan Xinhe didn't give up pursuing Chu Mu. He continued to chase, and then closed the gap again!

Chu Mu didn't think too much and continued running to the center plaza!

Finally, the enormous center plaza appeared in Chu Mu's field of vision covered by the curtain of rain. Chu Mu couldn't change everything and rode on the Night Thunder Dream Beast directly towards the Soul Palace on the southern side of the center plaza!

Soul Palace's entrance was open and on both sides stood in total twenty guards with majesty. These guards quickly realized someone was riding a soul pet and was attempting to charge into Soul Palace. Immediately, they summoned their soul pets in an attempt to stop Chu Mu.

"Hu hu hu~~~~~~"

An ice cold wind smacked against Chu Mu's face. It was the Hundred Mother's imposing killing intent! That fellow was already very close to him!

The Gluttonous Insect Monster Chu Mu had chased previously was approximately of an eight phase high staged commander. However, the Hundred Mother's master was now definitely controlling a ninth phase commander!

Chu Mu knew that he didn't have the strength to fight back and furthermore didn't dare stop. He released his soul remembrance and locked onto the soul pets of all the guards!

"Night, dodge, charge inside!"Chu Mu didn't have time to show his identity to the guards and had the Night Thunder Dream Beast directly break through!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast knew from Chu Mu's thoughts optimal dodging route. Its black body was like a bolt of lightning that streaked into a strange yet exquisite trajectory through the twenty soul pets, charging into Soul Palace's front hall!

"Imputent, Soul Palace is a significant place. How could someone like you so easily and randomly break inside!

The moment Chu Mu charged into Soul Palace, a middle-aged man's forceful voice immediately pressed down. This man happened to be in front of Chu Mu and stood in front of his Night Thunder Dream Beast running at full speed like a boulder. His powerful aura further made the Night Thunder Dream Beast come to a rapid stop!

"Hu hu hu hu~~~~~"

The Hundred Mother's master's killing intent came in along with the extremely humid windy rain. This fellow wanted to rely on his stealth ability to kill Chu Mu in Soul Palace's front hall in a very short period of time.

Indeed, this fellow charged in and those guards simply couldn't detect the invisibility ability of such a level of soul pet.

"Who!!"

Yet, that Soul Palace expert instantly saw through the invisibility ability of the Hundred Mother's master; he immediately let out a

loud yell!

How would Duan Xinhe expect to encounter this fellow in Soul Palace's front hall; his face slightly changed. Feeling the grandeur of this Soul Palace expert envelop this region, Duan Xinhe identically released his soul remembrance to stand off against this man.

"Hu!!!!!!!!"

A terrifying wave of air abruptly burst forth between these two experts, suddenly engulfing the several hundred meter squared front hall. All the facilities in the front hall were scattered into a mess and the weaker soul pet trainers were knocked flying.

The Soul Palace's expert creased his eyebrows tightly. Clearly, he didn't expect the opposing party's strength to be so strong. Under his carelessness, he had further been pushed back a few steps by Duan Xinhe's soul remembrance.

When Duan Xinhe saw that this Soul Palace expert had retreated a few steps, he ordered the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster to launch itself at Chu Mu, and kill Chu Mu who would probably otherwise leak his secret!

"Displacement Specter!" instantly chanting an incantation, the white colored devil flames on Chu Mu's body were ignited. These devil flames instantaneously burned Chu Mu's body into ashes.

About five meters behind the Soul Palace expert, white demonic devil flames suddenly began burning. Amidst the devil flames, Chu Mu’s body demonically and outlandishly stood there...

Chapter 255: Gluttonous Insect Monster Group

Chu Mu used this last technique to glamorously dodge Duan Xinhe's Gluttonous Insect Monster's lethal attack and cleverly dodged behind the Soul Palace expert.

Duan Xinhe's face changed and he bit down. He knew that killing the kid was near impossible now so he decisively retreated.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster was invisible from beginning to end, so Duan Xinhe didn't reveal his appearance at all. He quickly retreated unharmed from the Soul Palace expert.

Throughout this entire process, the twenty soul palace guards still didn't realize the guy even existed.

The Soul Palace expert stood there. Without summoning any soul pets, he watched the direction that Xinhe escaped in and his face grew solemn. Only until Duan Xinhe's aura completely disappeared did this Soul Palace expert's solemnity slightly loosen.

Chu Mu watched Duan Xinhe and his soul pet leave and also let out a huge breathe. The coldness of those terrifying claws were still lingering on his back. If he didn't decisively cast his soul pact incantation, his back would definitely have been ripped apart by the ninth phase commander.....

"This senior, thank you for saving me." Chu Mu knew his

manners, and cupped his fists for the soul palace expert in front of him.

“Heng, tell me your identity first.” The middle aged man slowly turned around and looked sharply at Chu Mu, his imposing aura not allowing Chu Mu to say any fake.

Chu Mu also knew this man was clearly some powerful individual in soul palace, so he quickly pulled out his Soul Palace Decree.

Yet at this time, Old Li jumped out from Chu Mu’s soul capture ring holding Chu Mu’s Soul Palace Decree and leaped in front of this Soul Palace expert.

“Seven palace master Yu palace master, it’s so great seeing you!” Old Li clearly recognized this middle aged man and started speaking……

“Damned fellow, heng, running into my soul palace. Do you want to die?” Yu palace master stared at Old Li, a look of complete belittlement and distaste.

“Yu Palace Master, calm yourself. Old one is here under command, and I even have a Soul Palace Decree.” Old Li laughed wily and waved his soul palace decree.

Yu Palace Master apathetically grabbed the Soul Palace Decree over. When he found out that it was Soul Palace noble woman’s sub decree, his brows instead creased up and he said coldly, “Why

is the Noble Woman's decree here? Is it that you've gone and done some smuggling again?!"

"Yu Palace master, don't get excited and let me finish talking." Old Li specially cleared his throat before explaining how he met Noble Woman Liu Binglan, how he was commanded to follow young master to train, not forgetting to exaggerate everything while explaining.

Yu Palace master didn't believe it at first, but once it was mentioned that Chu Mu was the son of Liu Binglan, Yu Palace Master revealed a complicated expression. He specially looked Chu Mu over with an unsure, but grudgingly accepting expression.

"The Noble Woman is your mother?" Yu Palace master stared at Chu Mu while saying sternly.

Chu Mu nodded, not saying much else.

"Yu Palace Master, Noble Woman's strength is something you understand. No matter how powerful I am, I couldn't steal the soul palace decree from her. Even if I did, I wouldn't dare run around in soul palace lying to people." Old Li continued.

The reason Old Li was hiding in Western Kingdom was mostly because he had upset many people, and was sort of a wanted criminal of Soul Palace.

Yet now that he followed Chu Mu, it was like the Noble Woman

gave him a chance to become good again. With the identity of young master's follower, he would no longer have to fear the people he once upset, and he could now walk in and out of any place as he pleased.

The Yu Palace Master hesitated before finally acknowledging Chu Mu's young master identity. After all, the Soul Palace Decree wasn't fake at all, and the Yu Palace Master more or less knew about the fact that Liu Binglan had a hidden son somewhere else.

Yu Palace master's position was quite high as well. Though Chu Mu was a young master, he didn't salute and simply asked, "How did Chu young master trouble that Duan Xinhe?

"Yu Palace master knows who that is?" Chu Mu immediately asked.

"Heng, how would I not. That person is a wanted criminal of soul palace that is evil through and through. His Hundred Mother's first litter offspring Ninth Phase Gluttonous Insect Monster is something I would recognize, even if it was invisible." Yu Palace Master said.

"Hundred Mother's offspring? Was that not the Hundred Mother?" Chu Mu paused, not expecting that such a terrifying soul pet wasn't even the main body Hundred Mother.

"Of course not. The Hundred Mother is much stronger than that. I remember a few years back, this person had a total of ten initial litter Gluttonous Insect Monsters. They all reached the ninth

phase. Three years ago, one of our palace experts killed eight, so the guy brought the remaining two and his Hundred Mother and escaped. Its been some time since he appeared in any main city, but I hadn't thought that this guy would come to Li City. Presumably, more people will suffer now." Yu Palace master expressed his disgust and anger towards Duan Xinhe.

Ten ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters!

Chu Mu didn't think that this Duan Xinhe was this terrifying. Thinking about the fact that Duan Xinhe's Hundred Mother didn't even appear, Chu Mu was drenched with lingering fear.

"You still haven't told me how you troubled him." Yu Palace Master asked again.

When Chu Mu came back to his senses, he explained to Yu palace master how he entered Li City, met Dong Qing, used water attack to kill the Gluttonous Insect Monsters, then basically explained how he saw Duan Xinhe as he chased.

"Truly horseplay. This event is hard to deal with even for a general, let alone some city guard. Isn't that kid Dong Qing the second son of the city master? How come hasn't he told the city master yet." Yu palace master didn't give much respect to Chu Mu's identity as young master, critiquing as normal!

"Yu Palace master, don't say more. How would anyone in Li City care about this? Everyone's risking their lives to find the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Additionally, how would young master know that

there was a Duan Xinhe level character in the western street area. The fact that he could kill hundreds of Gluttonous Insect Monsters should already make Duan Xinhe explode with anger." Old Li said.

"You truly have guts. But, Chu young master shouldn't interfere any longer. Soul Palace will send people to capture him. Li City also has experts that can manage him. Also, Duan Xinhe is a hundred percent a vile character. He probably has his eyes on you already, so you should stay within Soul Palace for the next while. Even if you exit, let the subpalace master send someone with you. I still have things to deal with, so I can't accompany you any longer." Yu Palace Master said.

Finishing that, Yu Palace Master called forth the subpalace master and, after telling him Chu Mu's identity, he walked straight out of the soul palace.

"Old Li, is this Yu Palace master Yu Lang's father?" Chu Mu immediately asked.

"En, or else, with this fellow's arrogance, he wouldn't randomly leave the main soul palace to run to Li City. But, he doesn't seem to know that young master is the witness to the judgement." Old Li said.

"Speaking of which, the time for the judgement is near, but if all of them have their attention on the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, this judgement would probably be postponed, correct?" Chu Mu said.

“Without any surprises, it will be. A little Yu He’s death is nothing compared to the Cyan Hidden Dragon.” Old Li said.

……

……

Western Street Area

The water attack plan was very successful. With the cooperative effort of the city guards and aerial guards, the soul pet trainers killed at least 150 Gluttonous Insect Monsters.

These 150 Gluttonous Insect Monsters were all forced onto land by the water underground and killed by the city guards that laid in ambush. The leaders and Li Gu even killed a few eighth phase initial stage Gluttonous Insect Monsters.

With such a delighted killing, all the city guards yelled in delight, finally able to get revenge for their teammates.

Making sure that there were no longer any Gluttonous Insect Monsters alive, Li Gu started to open up all the entrances to eject the water.

West street pipes all lead towards the city river west of the center. To make sure of the amount of Gluttonous Insect Monsters, Li Gu specially let a group of people down to the city river to net in all the corpses of the Gluttonous Insect Monsters.

This process of ejecting water took nearly an entire night, yet this entire night, all the city guards were full of lingering fear and cold hearts!

Because, throughout the entire night, they pulled out over five hundred Gluttonous Insect Monster corpses!

Five hundred corpses, plus the over hundred that the city guards killed meant nearly seven hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters!

These Gluttonous Insect Monsters were all averaging seventh phase commander rank, so how scary was it to have seven hundred of these savage creatures hiding under western street!

Once all the city guards knew of this, none of them were still joyous because they killed so many Gluttonous Insect Monsters, and were instead shrouded with fear of what could've happened, especially the city official Li Gu, who wanted to start a carpet search.

"I almost became the sinner of Li City. If Chu Chen didn't stop me, all of my men could have been sent in to die for nothing, becoming food for these monsters." Li Gu's face was white with fear as he looked at the hundreds of dead corpses.

Seeing all these corpses, Ye Qingzi also remained silent, because even she didn't imagine that the amount of Gluttonous Insect Monsters was this scary. This water attack completely accidentally destroyed an entire group. Presumably, once the Hundred Mother

owner knew of this, he may even have the notion to commit suicide.

“All these corpses have soul cores, soul crystals, don’t let them leave the liquid, or else these things will disappear……” Ye Qingzi reminded the city guards.

Chapter 256: Underground Palace, Fake Masked Man

A total of seven hundred Gluttonous Insect Beasts! This explosive news quickly got to the city general. Even the general himself was surprised by this news, not imagining that the tragedies in the western city area was caused by seven hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters.

Realizing the severity of events, the general immediately went to the city master halls and told the city master of this event.

“Li old City Master, your son Dong Qin truly did a great deed this time!” City General Bing Nan smiled largely the moment he saw the city master and said to him.

Li City master was middle-aged, but on the old side, and the city general Bing Nan was slightly younger. Both knew each other from younger ages in Li City, so they were quite casual in conversation.

“Oh, I heard. The guy named Duan is getting wild in my Li City again. Once I finish the things on hand, I’ll show him what’s cooking……” City master smiled emotionlessly. His eyes then fell on , and his face revealed a more gratified smile.

“Dong Qin did well this time. Killing seven hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters of that Duan guy is destroying many years of his sweat and tears.”

Li City Master had already heard of the news of Duan Xinhe appearing in his city. Li City master was also very plentiful in experience, so he naturally knew of the evil executioner Duan Xinhe.

“Father, this event I really just participated. The real solver were these two men and women who are roaming the lands in training. They were the first to figure out the species of this beast and stop us from starting a large magnitude search. They basically saved our lives. And the final water attack was also what they thought of.” Dong Qing wasn’t vain, since the greatest contribution comes from Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi.

“Oh? There’s such a fascinating person? Then if there’s the chance, you have to recommend them to me.” Li city master lifted an eyebrow, pretty interested in the teen.

“That was your child’s wish.” Dong Qing said.

Duan Xinhe was a famous evildoer in the soul pet world. He rarely had opponents even in his own generation. He was also a repeated offender of some big cities, killing an immeasurable amount of people. Soul Palace, Elemental Sect, including many Kingdom Capitals, all gritted their teeths at the mention of him.

With his invisibility from his soul pets, the factions all had trouble truly catching him. Only until three years ago, when an expert in the soul palace inner palace heavily injured him, did he finally restrain himself.

Of course, the inner palace expert that fought with Duan Xinhe also lost two of hismain soul pets, losing a huge amount of power.

These years, there were often messages of people and soul pets dying out of nowhere. Many suspected that these were the works of Duan Xinhe, but no one could find any powerful evidence, and none could track him down. Those who've always wanted to get rid of Duan Xinhe also had headaches because of this.

Even the older generation experts couldn't do anything to Duan Xinhe, yet today, Duan Xinhe fell in the hands of two twenty year old young generation members. This truly was a laughable work, and people who had grudges against Duan Xinhe would definitely laugh in delight. After all, to Duan Xinhe, he really lost too much face in this matter!

The Li City Master usually won't randomly remember people of lower caliber, but these two teens he quite appreciated, though they succeed somewhat through accident……

"The Fifty million gold bounty is theirs, then. Give another fifty million down for the slain soldiers and reward for the participants of this fight." Li city guard very generously said.

City guard Li Gu quickly saluted in thanks. The fifty million gold was quite a sum even for Li Gu himself. Mainly, with this money, he could finally placate the families of the dead, and the other guards will more or less gain some gold to strengthen their soul pets.

……

……

Underground Palace of Li City

The Underground Palace was also a faction. However, what was different was, the people of Underground Palace usually couldn’t see the light of day.

The Underground Palace congregated mostly people who were infamous in the soul pet world, soul pet trainers who have been wanted by big factions to the point where they had nowhere else to go. Simply put, the members of the Underground Palace were a bunch of soul pet world fugitives.

The Underground Palace also had another name, which was assassin palace. The Underground Palace, other than underground trading, gained most of its money through assassination fees.

On this, the Nightmare Palace was similar. What was different was, Nightmare Palace was both good and evil murkily and was massive. They weren’t evil people that killed everyone they saw. As for assassins, they were but a small part of their faction too.

Nightmare Palace also had a hefty influence and complete ranking system, like Soul Palace and Soul Pet Palace. They could all be described as empires. However, because of Nightmare Palace’s scary and cruel Nightmare selection, they caused many to blanche

at the mention of their name.

The Underground Palace was an absolute shady faction. Everything they did was led by killing and pillaging. They were an underground massive power that specially collected evil people that the big factions hated.

……

“Send someone to find out who those two people are!” Duan Xinhe heavily slammed his fist into the rock wall, his face distorted because of anger.

“So what if you find out, you still dare to show yourself?” The man sitting by Duan Xinhe said lightly.

This man wore a fake mask, so his face wasn’t seeable. He wore dark blue clothes. If not for his fake mask, he would give off a feeling of culture.

“Heng, but you requested me here, so you have to pay for the loss of my seven hundred grandkids!” Duan Xinhe sat facing the masked man coldly, eyes glaring.

The masked man’s mouth twitched, clearly disgusted by Duan Xinhe calling his Gluttonous Insect Monsters “grandkids”.

“You help me find the Cyan Hidden Dragon, I will naturally give you the price I gave you. Recently, just let your remaining

Gluttonous Insect Monsters search around, don't let them attack city people." Masked man said.

"Heng, I don't need you to teach me how." Duan Xinhe said with a humph.

"Let me introduce you to a person. This person is Elemental Sect young master. If you have any needs in Li City, go to him. I still have other matters, so if you have any clues, contact me." The fake masked man said lightly.

After speaking the man stood up and walked out of the door. Duan Xinhe kept his eyes on the man's back image and slowly smiled coldly.

Duan Xinhe didn't know the man's identity either, only knowing that he had a certain amount of power in Underground Palace, able to gather an absolute evil like him.

But Duan Xinhe wasn't the kind to be restricted, let alone, who wouldn't want the dragon eggs inside the Cyan Hidden Dragon?

Duan Xinhe actually had clues already, but under this situation, he definitely couldn't tell this fake masked man that he didn't trust. As for the Elemental Sect young master sent over, Duan Xinhe didn't even need to guess to know he was just a person to monitor his activity, in case he sneakily did things.

"Duan senior, I am Yu He, Elemental Sect elder Yu De's son. To

see an influential character like you is my honor.” A deep blue clothed Yu He slowly walked in front of Duan Xinhe and bowed down.

“What influential character, more like infamous. Kid, you don’t have to flatter me.” Duan Xinhe said coldly.

Yu He immediately smiled apologetically, “To us, you are influential.”

“Okay, stop with the nonsense. Help me find two people.....” Duan Xinhe definitely won’t let it go that easily.

“You mean the two young people who drowned your soul pets?” Yu He was smart and quickly guessed Duan Xinhe’s intentions.

“En, it is them.” Duan Xinhe specially glanced at Yu He, noticing that he indeed was a smart man.

“Yu He has helped you figure that out already. Its two wandering soul pet trainers. One is called Ye Qingzi and one is called Chu Chen.” Yu He said.

When the masked man had told him he was meeting Duan Xinhe, Yu He had already made preparations. Just as he had thought, the first thing Duan Xinhe would ask was the identity of the two people, so Yu He could naturally say it now.

Duan Xinhe was slightly surprised and smiled while patting Yu

He's shoulder, "You sure are quick-witted, very well, do you know their identity? Especially the male."

Yu He had already prepared what he was about to say so he said, "They're both wandering soul pet trainers with average identities. The male Chu Chen seems to have some relationship with the Soul Palace, but is probably a normal member……."

Duan Xinhe immediately furrowed his brows and said lightly, "The kid is quite strong, not like a normal person."

Yu He stared blankly for a second, not thinking that Duan Xinhe had already came in contact with Chu Chen. He immediately switched a line and quickly said, "You've met him before?"

"En, the kid saw my appearance and I almost killed him, but I met an old bastard in the Soul Palace." Duan Xinhe said.

Hearing Duan Xinhe say this, Yu He's eyes immediately brightened and he said, "Since he saw your appearance, you can't leave this one alive."

"I don't need you to tell me that, go, tell me where he is." Duan Xinhe said.

Duan Xinhe always uses his Gluttonous Insect Monsters to do evil, and he himself rarely showed himself. Including the soul palace expert that he just fought, no one had seen him. It was only through the negligence at the brothel that he was suddenly seen by

the kid, which was a reason why he had to kill Chu Mu.

Yu He immediately nodded and said, “Duan elder, do not worry, since he is a member of the Soul Palace, I’ll come in contact with soul palace people in the next few days. Maybe we can meet him and then I’ll create an opportunity for you where you can kill him!”

“That is best. This kid killed so many of my great grandkids, I need to rip him into eight pieces or else it won’t sate my anger!!” Duan Xinhe said through gritted teeth.

Seeing Duan Xinhe’s eyes blink with a vicious glow, Yu He smiled and left a contact method before quickly walking out of Underground Palace.

Chapter 257: The Meeting Of Many Factions

“What joke are you making? Releasing a bit of water gave you a reward of 50 million? Are these Li City officials stupid?” inside the room, when Ye Wansheng learned that Ye Qingzi had returned with a huge sum of 50 million, his chin nearly dropped to the ground.

To Ye Wansheng, although his soul pets had a value much higher than 50 million, unfathomably earning a 50 million reward would definitely increase a soul pet’s strength by a huge margin if it was solely concentrated on this soul pet.

“Half of it is Chu Mu’s.” said Ye Qingzi.

“That’s still 25 million. Tell me what happened.” promptly said Ye Wansheng.

Ye Wansheng had undergone many days of medicine nursing, and his body had pretty much recovered to normal; only his skin was a bit of an unnatural color.

Ye Wansheng had spent three months poisoned before recovery. Three months to any young soul pet trainer was extremely important. The most evident thing was that Ye Wansheng’s soul pet’s were no longer Ye Qingzi’s opponent at all. Further adding on the death of Ye Wansheng’s strongest soul pet, the War Court Black Beast, Ye Wansheng’s strength had naturally hugely decreased.

Fortunately, Ye Wansheng wasn't dispirited because of this. His entire being still looked just as usual in that slightly crazy manner.

"I refined a few spirit items that I sold on the market before; adding on this 25 million, I've accumulated approximately 50 million gold coins. In a few days we can go look at the market and buy you a strong soul pet to make up for your vacant soul pet." Ye Qingzi said to Ye Wansheng.

"You've even become a wealthy woman." said Ye Wansheng.

Three months of stagnation as well as the death of his soul pet truly did cause a large wound to Ye Wansheng. If he didn't quickly make up for it, Ye Wansheng's cultivation could potentially find it hard to increase due to this rupture.

"If you can become a spirit master, then it'll be good. We will also be able to directly buy a monarch rank soul pet." said Ye Qingzi.

"Monarch rank... forget it. Leave the money for yourself to strengthen your soul pets. I have another plan." Ye Wansheng shook his head.

"Another plan?" Ye Qingzi didn't understand as she looked at Ye Wansheng.

"Hmm, I'll tell you later., Didn't you say that Chu Chen, that brat, is in the Soul Palace? That fellow called Duan Xinhe isn't some benevolent person; we aren't too safe outside, let's go find

him first.” said Ye Wansheng with vigilance.

Ye Qingzi thought like this as well. After all, although they had obtained a large reward, they had offended an enemy they currently would have a hard time fighting and could only request the protection of others to remain safe.

Ye Wansheng rode on his Star Wilderness Devil Colt while Ye Qingzi rode on her Purple Robe Dream Beast towards Soul Palace.

Halfway there, Chu Mu happened to be looking for Ye Qingzi, and when he saw the brother and sister come, he cracked a smile, saying: “Rather coordinated.”

Chu Mu brought the brother and sister into the Soul Palace. A little while later, Dong Qing specially came, saying he wanted to bring Chu Mu to the city master’s residence.

Chu Mu had originally planned on meeting up with the Ye Family brother and sister before immediately heading to the city master’s residence because the vice-palace master had mentioned that the city master would call together the seniors of the various large factions. They would prod through the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s matter in order to prevent these large factions from each harboring ulterior motives and resorting to some trick or plot in Li City.

For the meeting this time, invitations had been sent to Soul Palace, Soul Alliance, Elemental Sect, Merchant Alliance, Nightmare Palace, Soul Pet Palace, and the numerous great Li City

families that were watching on covetously. Among them, Soul Palace's Yu Palace Master and a few other seniors from Tianxia City had come to give judgement for Yu Lang's death. Yet, because they happened to chance upon the Cyan Hidden Dragon's matters, the Yu Palace Master had to place the most importance on this and could only push the judgement to the side, use the power of Li City's Soul Palace and begin looking for the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Soul Alliance's influence wasn't very widespread, and the most prominent thing about Soul Alliance was the people that could enter it. Practically every one of them was an extremely famous soul pet trainer in the soul pet world. These soul pet trainers could be said to be standing at the very top layer of the soul pet domain, and they pretty much all had the strongest soul pets!

Soul Alliance didn't have many encampments and cities, nor did they have members scattered across the land. However, this faction was like an aloof ruler that looked down on the entire soul pet world. The moment something big happened, Soul Alliance's people would definitely appear!

Merchant Alliance was an alliance of various large markets. In this world, nearly every market had to go through the Merchant Alliance, and thus it was one of the richest factions. Without considering Soul Pet Palace's existence, Merchant Alliance's status would definitely be on par with Soul Palace, NIghtmare Palace, Soul Pet Palace, and Soul Alliance-these four great factions.

Merchant Alliance occupied an important spot in Li City, and they naturally wanted a part of the action of the Cyan Hidden Dragon matter this time.

As the most fear evoking thing in the soul pet realm, Nightmare Palace had never and would never forsake any large profitable event.

Nightmare Palace's encampment in Li City was also in the center plaza; they ostensibly were targeting Soul Palace, whose thousands of their members had grievances against and they happened to be directly across them. As long as one walked out of one of these faction's entrances and he or she shot his or her gaze across the expansive plaza, the other side could be seen.

Nightmare Palace's palace style was the opposite of Soul Palace's. Soul Palace chose a stately and divine style while Nightmare Palace carried a tyrannic aloofness that resembled an overbearing bully.

Nightmare Palace and Soul Palace had a large amount of hatred between them. Generally speaking, cities where a Nightmare Palace palace appeared wouldn't have a Soul Palace palace, and cities with Soul Palace encampments would rarely have Nightmare Palace encampments.

Of course, this was limited to cities with affiliations with them. In cities similar to Boundary City, this 11th rank mighty city, both factions, despite their grudges had to occupy a top spot and just compete for resources against each other in the dark.

Elemental Sect's position in Li City wasn't inferior to the other large factions because Li City's vice-city lord was the Li City Elemental Sect sect master.

As for the matter which regarded Yu He with Yu Lang's death, if it wasn't for this Li City Elemental Sect sect master's influence, Yu He currently would be placed under house arrest in Soul Palace. How would he be able to stroll around Li City like nothing happened?

Chu Mu originally would not have attended anything like this meeting of the soul pet world's peak figures. After all, he presently hadn't reached their level.

Only, this matter involved the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon and with so many experts gathered in Li City, Chu Mu really was worried about it. Thus, when the vice palace master mentioned participating in the meeting of these factions, Chu Mu firmly decided to attend.

"Chu Chen, Ye Qingzi, during the meeting my father will mention matters regarding the bastard Duan Xinhe. This pretty much is an opportunity for you to become famous; you must know that everyone at the meeting is a huge figure. As long as they know about you, your names will definitely spread quickly in the soul pet world." Dong Qing said to Chu Mu and the two others as they walked.

When Dong Qing said this, the Ye Family brother and sister and Chu Mu creased their brows.

Chu Mu spoked first: "Mentioning Duan Xinhe is fine, as for my name, forget it. There are places where it's not the best to divulge

our identity.”

“Not best to divulge your identities? Are you afraid of Duan Xinhe retaliating? Don’t worry, my father truly plans on putting an end to this fellow this time. This Duan Xinhe either has to hide for many years, or he’ll die the moment he appears. You guys don’t need to worry.” said Dong Qing.

Chu Mu shook his head, saying: “I’ll still trouble you to tell the city lord that we aren’t people that enjoy glorification. We’re also people who are used to wandering everywhere.”

“Oh… that’s fine then. I’ll honor your opinion.” Dong Qing nodded his head.

Dong Qing knew as well that there were a few young experts, especially those that enjoyed going out to learn, that only divulged their real surname whilst fighting a decisive battle or an appointed fight with someone. When they travelled to various large cities, even if they did some rather shocking thing, they habitually remained low key.

“Chu Mu, why didn’t you ask us. You’re a Soul Palace young master and your identity is already high enough. Qingzi and I are disciples from a small town. Such a good chance to become famous and you reject it right away; I still want to become famous and have numerous young women fantasize about me.” said Ye Qingzi with soul remembrance as he carried a mocking tone.

Chu Mu naturally thought that Ye Wansheng was joking because

from what he observed, Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng were extremely low key when they did things. It was very rare that they would directly reveal their identity and name, some Chu Mu didn't even have to think before rejecting Dong Qing's suggestion.

Of course, what Chu Mu didn't understand was that although this brother and sister pair were obviously very strong, they always gave him the feeling as if they were hiding from something.

Li City lord's residence was still a short distance away, and Chu Mu bluntly used soul remembrance to ask Ye Qingzi if the two of them had some hidden trouble they weren't mentioning.

"This... I'll tell you later. On the contrary, I feel like you're very strange. You're clearly the eldest young master of a palace, but you're still hiding more than us. Even this meeting, you evidently can use your young master status to attend, but you still had Dong Qing lead the way... That said, I've known you for so long, and I still don't know which young master you are. I heard that Soul Palace has nine young masters, and seven of them are extremely strong. A few of them have already surpassed the category of a young generation expert..."replied Ye Qingzi.

Chu Mu bitterly laughed. He wasn't able to learn about Ye Qingzi's affairs and was instead cross-examined by her.

This time, Ye Qingzi didn't maintain her calm temperament and instead asked Chu Mu a few questions. This made him, for a moment, not know how to explain his identity to Ye Qingzi.

“Moreover, for the past few days you’ve intentionally told me not to address you by your real name. The name, Chu Mu, is very famous in Western Kingdom, but in Zhanli Kingdom, not many people should know. There shouldn’t be a need to be so careful, right?” Ye Qingzi continued to ask.

In truth, the identity of being a Soul Palace young master wasn’t the area that made Chu Mu’s head hurt. What truly made it hard for him to assume the identity of Chu Mu was the matter of the dragon egg. After all, this was connected with his identity of Prison Island King.

Chapter 258: Comparing Calmness? Comparing Attitude?

Sensing that Chu Mu was in an awkward position, Ye Qingzi didn't continue asking Chu Mu. In truth, Ye Qingzi didn't enjoy getting to the bottom of a person. Just like when she was on Colored Sky Mountain, she was still used to speaking only when she was supposed to talk, and listening to Chu Mu.

The Horizon Feather Bird's flying speed was very fast and Chu Mu, Ye Qingzi, and Ye Wansheng promptly arrived at Boundary City's city lord residence.

After descending into the courtyard, Dong Qing knew that the meeting would begin quickly, so he had others prepare a bit of refreshments, allowing the three people to temporarily rest. They would wait there for the members of other factions to arrive before going to the conference hall.

"Dong Qing, Dong Qing, where are you. Move your ass out here." the moment the three people sat down and were appreciating the unique style of the city lord residence's courtyard, an arrogant woman's voice rang out from outside.

Yet, when Dong Qing heard the voice, he massaged his temples and helplessly laughed: "it should be young lady Sha. That woman is terribly annoying when she bothers people."

"What identity does that young lady Sha have?" asked Chu Mu.

“She’s Merchant Alliance’s Qian Jin eldest young lady and can be considered to be a half cousin. She always comes over here and last time we played city chase, I was dragged there by her. In the past we would often play around, but after assuming duty, I’ve laid back alot, haha…” laughed Dong Qing as he explained.

As expected, not much long later, a young lady wearing a short skirt walked over. Although young lady Sha’s clothing today was much more reserved compared to last time’s city chase, her mannerisms still exposed that of a spoiled rich young lady.

Young lady Sha quickly saw Dong Qing in the pavilion and walked a few steps over and swept her eyes over Chu Mu and the others.

“Oh, let me make the introductions. You should recognize Chu Chen. The one next to him is young lady Ye; the main effort behind our eradication of the Gluttonous Insect Monsters this time was young lady Ye. The one next to her is her brother, Ye Wansheng.” quickly introduced Dong Qing.

Young lady Sha nodded her head at the Ye Family brother and sister, but her eyes rapidly fell on Chu Mu. She even intentionally walked a few steps closer and looked him up and down.

“Hmph, it really was you. Don’t think that your disguise prevented me from recognizing you. You truly are an immoral and despicable person. Speak, last time what did you do to sister Ruo Shui!!” said young lady Sha rather angrily as she pointed at Chu

Mu.

Chu Mu didn't expect young lady Sha to recognize him so easily. Presumably, it was because of the Night Thunder Dream Beast's uniqueness. Yet, he didn't deny or affirm her guess.

"Young lady Sha, what are you saying?" Dong Qing was incomparably angry, and pulled her to the side and grew serious.

"What are you talking about. You ask him yourself what he did!" Young lady Sha continued accusing Chu Mu.

"Chu Chen did a great service this time, and even my father wants to meet him. If you're going to make trouble, don't bother brother Chu Chen." Dong Qing was gaining increasing respect for Chu Mu, and he naturally wouldn't let young lady Sha make trouble without reason.

Young lady Sha was anxious. In one breath, she recounted the scene of her going to the brothel to look for Ruo Shui and then seeing the disguised Chu Mu bring Ruo Shui down the stairs in his arms. She even emphasized that Chu Mu had fled out of guilt.

"Chu Chen, you aren't an honest person eh. You went to the brothel and didn't even invite me..." Ye Wansheng who enjoyed stirring the water let out an immediate laugh.

Chu Mu couldn't be inclined to explain trivial misunderstandings, including young lady Sha's baseless trouble;

after all, all the young lady Sha had to do was ask that girl called Ruo Shui and would naturally understand what happened.

However, Chu Mu felt Ye Qingzi's gaze...

When she heard young lady Sha's words, Ye Qingzi shot Chu Mu a stranged glance.

Ye Qingzi belonged to the very calm sort of girls, and she didn't reveal any expression upon hearing Chu Mu going to the brothel; only, her eyes did the talking and they made Chu Mu feel an extreme need to explain himself.

Thus, Chu Mu briefly explained him chasing after that Gluttonous Insect Monster before pursuing all the way to Duan Xinhe. After finishing, Chu Mu intentionally laughed at Ye Qingzi and used soul remembrance to tell her:

"I've seen her twice before. The second time was when I chased the Gluttonous Insect Monster in that brothel, so you don't need to misunderstand..."

Ye Qingzi felt that Chu Mu was specially explaining things from her, and shifted her gaze to another location. Using calm voice that was deliberately put on, she said: "Who's misunderstanding..."

Ye Wansheng was an experienced person, and he immediately saw through the two of them using soul remembrance to communicate. He promptly laughed and said: "Brother Chu Chen,

you really didn't have to explain for my sister. Men... you don't need to say you were playing along; even if you really did do it..."

"Si!!!!!!!!" Ye Wansheng was halfway through his words when he sucked in a breath of cold air because Ye Qingzi, without a change in expression, had stamped on his foot. This made Ye Wansheng swallow the rest of his words.

Linking the fact that Chu Mu and the others had killed the Gluttonous Insect Monster inside their nest that day, the young lady Sha wasn't a person who didn't understand logic, so she didn't continue asking Chu Mu.

"Young master, young master Yu He has arrived." the few of them were in the midst of talking when an old servant walked over and bowed as he spoke.

"Tell them that young master has guests and doesn't have time." Dong Qing looked somewhat sick of something as he waved his hands.

"Haha, Dong Qing, you and I have known each other for so many years. I've specially come to see you, but you send me away. This truly is very rude." at this moment, Yu He's laugh came in.

Chu Mu turned around and quickly discovered Yu He wearing dark blue clothing slowly striding towards the pavillion. This Elemental Sect young master seemed to know Dong Qing would be here.

“But it was you who turned up unsolicited. Since you’ve come, take a seat anywhere. I’ll introduce you to these outstanding people.” Dong Qing didn’t hide the dislike he had for Yu He and casually pointed at a place, indicating for Yu He to sit.

Yu He naturally saw Chu Mu and the two others. Chu Mu’s grudge with Yu He was very direct; if it wasn’t because of Chu Mu, Yu He could have retreated unscathed after killing Yu Lang. Yet, now he had come under the judgement of Soul Palace and with a single careless mistake he could suffer from their strict punishment.

Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng naturally didn’t have to be mentioned. They had previously fought over the Dark Fire Heavenly Devil in Zhanchi Kingdom and had planted a hatred. Afterwards, Ye Wansheng had been captured and his strongest soul pet, the War Court Black Beast had perished, and his body had suffered from the torture of ulceration. These made the Ye Family brother and sister hate Yu He to the bone!

Yu He didn’t expect the three people he hated to all be at Dong Qing’s. When he saw them, he revealed a rather shocked expression, but then put on an arrogant smile.

“So it was you guys. Haha, this truly is a coincidence.” laughed Yu He.

Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi were abnormally calm people, and even in front of this enemy who they hated endlessly, they didn’t show any drastic emotions.

Even Ye Wansheng who had an extremely deep hatred for Yu He was extremely calm. Furthermore, when Yu He appeared, his smile became even more splendid.

Dong Qing didn't know of Chu Mu, and the two other's grudge with Yu He and he himself didn't have any good opinion of Yu He. He mockingly said: "Why aren't you hurrying to fix your relationship with Soul Palace. Instead you've come here to cause trouble. You really aren't afraid of being held as a murderer?"

"I, Yu He, am a person of clear conscience. Such a non-existent matter will naturally come to light. On the contrary, it was this friend, Chu Chen, who absolutely had to accuse me as a criminal. I don't know when I offended this underling of a young master which made me mysteriously have to attend a trial." said Yu He.

Yu He's words made young lady Sha and Dong Qing's eyes fall on Chu Mu. Including Ye Wansheng curiously looked at Chu Mu. He didn't know at what point Chu Mu had gained the identity of an underling of a young master?

In the entire soul pet kingdom, only heirs of large factions or people of the highest authorities would be called young masters. Thus, whenever a young master was mentioned, these young generation members were extremely sensitive to it. After all, a young master represented the highest status of the young generation.

Chu Mu knew that Yu He wanted to discover his identity so he

didn’t explain anything. Instead, ignored the superfluous words that carried a slight provokation. He calmly began talking about the question of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s poisonous effect with Ye Qingzi.

The feeling of being ignored was an extremely unpleasant one, especially when one hated this person to this extreme. At the moment, although Yu He maintained his fake smile, he was already thinking in his heart how to make Chu Mu die to Duan Xinhe’s hands.

Yu He was actually extremely similar to Ye Wansheng here. Ye Wansheng still had a very carefree appearance and was even arguing with young lady Sha next to him; however, the inside Ye Wansheng’s heart was dark to the max. He didn’t wish more than anything than to chop up this fellow into a thousand pieces. Otherwise, how else would he not let down the War Court Black Beast that had followed him for so many years!

From Ye Qingzi’s War Court Black Beast, it was possible to guess that Ye Wansheng’s was an extremely rare soul pet. Moreover, it was his main pet that accompanied him for so many years. It was just because of Yu He’s two underlings that it had been poisoned to death in the underground. This seed of hatred had long since been buried in Ye Wansheng.

However, Ye Wansheng was a person with a lot of patience, and he knew that he presently wasn’t Yu He’s opponent. Even if the hatred in his heart was surging like a tide, he had to maintain his fake smile and argue with young lady Sha...

Dong Qing was a person who often met others and pretty much saw the hatred between Chu Mu and Yu He. As for the relatively simple minded young lady Sha, she was completely unable to realize the weirdness in the atmosphere. Instead, she was in the midst of an argument about problems with her figure with the pretending man whose heart was so dark it was on the verge of exploding.

Yu He’s fake smile grew more and more stiff. His unperturbedness, calmness, and shrewedness, amongst his peers,was extremely hard to come by. He originally believed the three people wouldn’t be able to stay calm when they saw him. At the very least, Ye Wansheng, who he tortured half to death, would be extremely angry. Yet, he didn’t expect the three of them to be acting so naturally and even ignoring him. Moreover, their calmness contrarily made Yu He a bit unsettled.

Chapter 259: I am Yu He, Dong Qing's Old Wound

"Chu Chen, you still remember the appointed fight between us?" said Yu He as he feigned calmness.

"Yes." Chu Mu nodded his head then continued to talk with Ye Qingzi.

The corners of Yu He's mouth twitched. Chu Mu's actions were truly angering him. He still remembered the clear and loud slap Chu Mu delivered to his face; in the twenty years of his life, this was the first time Yu He had been slapped by someone outside his household!"The poison effect should have been obtained through absorbing the life force of soul pets that possess poison, but it also requires something that can protect its wooden heart, and doesn't let the poison attribute infect it. In other words, the stronger the poison, the stronger the spirit item that protects the wooden heart needs to be. This may be something very expensive. After all, the spirit item that protects the wooden heart is the same as something that lets a soul pet have certain immunity against a bug, flower, and vine type soul pet's poison." Ye Qingzi explained to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu nodded his head and asked: "Then how did your Wood Tray Spirit soul pet come to possess the poison attribute?"

"My Wood Tray Spirit has the flower attribute, and it comprehended it itself when it evolved to the fourth phase." Ye Qingzi blinked her eyes. She was wondering how Chu Mu didn't know of even this sort of common knowledge.

“Oh, I guess so. Then, what spirit items have this effect?” asked Chu Mu.

“Heart’s Nectar – this is a special water nectar that condenses in a forest’s bewildering world. It doesn’t take the form of a liquid, but instead of a pearl. Normally, it exists inside a flower type soul pet. However, flower type soul pets are inherently rare and those with Heart’s Nectar are even fewer, so if the Heart’s Nectar can resist an eighth rank poison, it approached nearly 10 million in price.” said Ye Qingzi.

Chu Mu was sitting relatively close to Ye Qingzi. When Yu He had met Ye Qingzi before, he had harbored many intentions towards her. Right now seeing the two of them completely ignore him and talk about flower type poison, he feel comfortable anywhere in his heart. After all, their tones were congenial, and their minds were invested in the conversation. It was like a pair of lovers talking about love and were about to hold hands...

“Heart’s Nectar. Haha, this item is something I have one of. An eighth rank Heart’s Nectar. Before I was considering what we would put at stake for the appointed fight, but now you guys made me realize what to use.” Yu He couldn’t make the two of them chatter away in front of him any longer, and he decisively interrupted his way into their conversation. Moreover, he changed the topic to his fight with Chu Mu.

“Oh, then thanks.” said Chu Mu as he raised his eyebrows.

“Why are you thanking me? Could it be you believe that you can beat me?” Yu He found that the group of people here weren’t taking him seriously at all. Without a need for a feigned tone, he spoke to them with a cold voice.

When the adjacent Ye Wansheng saw that Yu He finally wasn’t faking it anymore, he began laughing and gave a thumbs up to Chu Mu, saying: “You’re the real bad one here. You forced that fellow to bet something worth 10 million!”

There were always rewards from fights.The appointed fight between them originally had been Yu He challenging him, but if there were rewards for challenging him, that would be the best so he would fight with even more vigor.

“What about your stake?” Yu He wasn’t dumb and couldn’t let Chu Mu take advantage of him without giving anything in return.

“What, there’s an appointed fight between you two?” Young lady Sha and Dong Qing were evidently not connected with them in this way ,and their eyes astonishedly fell on Chu Mu and Yu He.

When Yu He had mentioned an appointed fight, the two of them thought Yu He was intentionally provoking things. They never expected for them to have already met each other.

Sparks began to fly, and Yu He no longer put on a fake facade. He had an arrogant and contemptuous attitude and he wanted to see if Chu Mu dared to use a stake like his that was nearly 10 million gold!

“Young master, the lord is inviting you and your friends to come. The meeting is about to start.” at this moment, the family servant slowly walked in and spoke to everyone.

“We’ll talk about this a bit later. Let’s go first?” Dong Qing realized that this matter wasn’t simple, and promptly alleviated the tension between the two parties.

Yu He didn’t say anything. He coldly sneered and stood up. Then, using a mocking tone, he said: “In my opinion, you should pick an empty location to fight me like today. If you lose and are seen by so many people, you’ll lose the face of the Soul Palace young master who stands behind you.”

After speaking, Yu He ignored the others and walked directly toward the City Lord Mansion’s meeting hall.

“Yu He, acting so brash in my territory... has your brain been kicked in by a donkey?” Dong Qing wasn’t someone who would just swallow his anger. Seeing Yu He shedding his pretense of cordiality, he didn’t have to show Yu He any manners of being a host.

“I’ll remind you once, young master, that it’s merely because of your father .Without the old Li City Lord, you would be nothing more than a second rate soul pet trainer. Train first for a few more years before you come speak to me.” Yu He thoroughly shed his amicable pretense and even when speaking with Dong Qing, he did so without manners.

Dong Qing's anger was already visibly exposed, and his eyes stared ice coldly at Yu He. However, he ultimately took in a deep breath of air and forcibly suppress his anger.

"That despicable person. He caused the death of a person's main pet and still dared to shamelessly boast about training another few years first here. Two years ago, Yu He was nothing more than a dog that followed others. He would wag his tail and beg, trying his best to curry favor." Young Lady Sha was also angry and pointed at Yu He who was walking away as she loudly berated hin.

Chu Mu's gaze fell on Dong Qing, and he indeed found that his emotions had been greatly disturbed. Especially when the Young Lady Sha mentioned what happened two years ago, the arteries and veins on his face began to slightly protrude.

"Dong Qing? What's the matter?" Chu Mu made Dong Qing sit and asked him a question.

Dong Qing wasn't a hot headed person and after sitting down, he finished the tea in his hands. However, it was a while before he said anything.

Young Lady Sha couldn't keep her mouth closed and promptly said: "You've probably seen those friends of mine and Dong Qing. They can all be considered young people from the same generation and they respectively represent the various large factions of Li City, including Soul Palace, Merchant's Alliance, Soul Pet Palace, Elemental Sect, Zhanli Kingdom, Spirit Church, Nightmare

Palace....”

“The thing from two or three years ago was that everyone had recognized Dong Qing as the head of this large group, including Yu He. Back then, Yu He had intentionally tried to curry favor with Dong Qing and entered our group. However, Yu He was a shameless and despicable fellow who intentionally hid his strength. When a few of them were in the wild training, he exploited the trust Dong Qing had in him and caused the death of Dong Qing’s main pet, drastically reducing Dong Qing’s strength.”

When Young Lady Sha spoke, she was very emotional, and had an expression that seemed to indicate that she wanted to cut Yu He into pieces. In truth, Young Lady Sha had just been enduring it just now. After all, everyone was someone with status and couldn’t just casually cause trouble wherever he or she pleased. This would definitely incite the scolding of their elders. Thus, when sparks began to fly between Chu Mu and Yu He, the Young Lady Sha basically couldn’t endure it any longer. In spite of supposedly being an aloof eldest Young Lady, she still pointed at Yu He’s back and loudly berated him.

Dong Qing had been like Ye Wansheng for the past while, silently holding back the anger in his heart. Moreover, when Yu He had spoken those vile words just now, Dong Qing had only barely managed to endure it because Dong Qing was no longer Yu He’s opponent.

The elders of the various families were acquaintances with each other and the grievances between the young people were to be solved by themselves. Dong Qing further knew that before he truly

had the strength to challenge Yu He, he absolutely could not act rashly.

"That was barely anything. Later on, Yu He formed his own group in Li City and excluded Dong Qing. Ultimately, the only ones remaining were myself and those useless fellows." Young Lady Sha continued to speak.

"It turns out everyone is the same. Haha, it seems that Yu He really is an egregious wretch!" Ye Wansheng finally removed his facade and sneered.

"Tell me what grievances you have with him?" Dong Qing was already slowly calming his emotions and he asked them a question.

Chu Mu gave a rough account of his and the Ye Family brother and sisters' matters to Dong Qing and Young Lady Sha.

"At the beginning when I heard the news, I was 100% certain that Yu Lang and Feng Ya had been killed by him. It's good now since the person who witnessed it were you guys... but Yu He is truly crafty and didn't leave any direct evidence. I can only hope that Soul Palace's people do things properly and punish Yu He." said Dong Qing.

"That's right, otherwise, he'll be outside the reach of law again. Nor will we know how many people will be killed by him in the future." said Young Lady Sha.

“You guys don’t seem to believe in Chu Chen?” Ye Qingzi watched the two of them sigh with lament and questioned them, puzzled.

Since Chu Mu was going to fight Yu He, he would be able to teach him a firm lesson before the trial. Moreover, he would also be able to kill off one or two of Yu He’s soul pets. However, Dong Qing and Young Lady Sha didn’t mention the fight ostensibly, as if they weren’t counting on Chu Mu being able to help them vent a little bit during his fight with Yu He.

“This… Yu He is abominable and egregious, but his strength is honestly very strong. Amongst those people of our age, there’s no one that’s his opponent. Those that are actually stronger than him have already gone away to distant places to train…” softly said Young Lady Sha as she looked at Chu Mu.

Young Lady Shan had only seen Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast. While it’s speed really was extremely fast, merely speed alone could not win a fight.

“Young master, the lord wants you and your friends to go over…” the old servant bowed his body again and gave a reminder.

“We’ll talk about this later. Let’s enter the venue first so we won’t be impolite.” Dong Qing finally realized it wasn’t early anymore and immediately had the old servant lead the way.

“Sure, we’ll talk about it after the meeting. I’m sure Yu He will be specially waiting for me once the meeting ends.” said Chu Mu.

The meeting was about the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, so Chu Mu didn't want to miss it. After all, Yu He' matter was something small, while the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's matter was the important one.

Chapter 260: Whoever kills Duan Xinhe gets the Dragon Egg

The conference hall was very large, well furnished and luxurious, vividly showing off the manners of a Kingdom Capital's city master hall.

On the main seat, a slightly rotund Li City Master sat there, not greeting members of any faction, nor gesturing to any expert, simply sitting there calmly.

There were already people entering the meeting area before the Li City Master entered, who found their seats and started chatting casually, or in the case of opposing factions, started mocking and jeering.

But, the moment Li City Master entered his seat, each faction's members all stopped their clash of words. This small scene displayed the invisible aura of an expert, as well as the air of a city master.

"Today, everyone pretty much dug three feet into all of my Li City, flipping it upside down." Li old city master didn't waste time with nonsense and entered straight into the main topic.

When Li old City Master spoke, no one interrupted. The other faction members were either drinking tea, calmly smiling, or not reacting at all, as if the words weren't directed towards them. In reality, old city master's words were said to all of them, since the factions gathered here were all called over because they were

thinking of getting the Cyan Hidden Dragon. It's just that some made bigger moves than others.

No matter if it was big or small actions, with this many factions together, there would inevitably be many issues for Li City. It was because of them that the Li old city master set the entire Li City army on alert for the past two months.

Things had worsened, and Li old city master no longer had the patience. If he didn't drag all of the masters of these factions in Li City together and scold them, they may have forgotten whose territory they were in already.

So, following that, Li old city master's words were very impolite. Those that sat nearest to him were the first he scolded.

"Old Wang, is it that you think land taxes here in Zhanli Kingdom are cheap, especially Li City land taxes?" The old city master quickly locked onto the Li City head of Merchant's Alliance, Wang merchant master.

"No no, of all the kingdoms, your Zhanli Kingdom has to be the most expensive of all……" Wang merchant master started laughing with his fierce, meaty face.

"Then what are your rock type soul pet trainers doing? Throwing dirt piles higher than mountains, do you want to dig straight through my Li City underground structure? And you said you found some vein of ore the other day and wanted to mine it?" City master rebuked.

“Yes, yes, yes, we did find a vein under Li City a few days back.” Wang merchant master played along with old city master’s words.

“Oh, then I’ll have to add a mining tax. I’ll just tax it based off the amount of area excavated. The more you mine, the more I’ll tax.” Li old city master said.

With these words of Li old city master, Wang merchant master’s face immediately blackened. The other faction members also tried their best to hold in their laughter, not letting themselves laugh out loud.

Everyone knew that Wang merchant master was looking underground for the Hidden Dragon. The mining was but a known excuse. If he were taxed by the amount excavated, he would probably have to pay the Li old city master half of all his business’s revenues. This was a massive and unfathomable amount of money, something the Wang merchant master couldn’t possibly afford.

Soul Pet Palace palace master, who had a small conflict with Merchant’s Alliance, didn’t hide his laughter in time, and it caused the old city master’s scoldings to fall upon him.

Soul Pet Palace was always the most neutral faction, meaning this time joining was a rare occasion. Li old city master also targeted his criticism towards Soul Pet Palace’s usual approach vs the restlessness displayed now. It made the Li City Soul Pet Palace palace master completely embarrassed, and caused him to make clear that he was simply in it to watch the show.

Li old city master didn't give any face to Nightmare Palace, Soul Palace, or Soul Alliance either, coldly telling those non-Li City members off. On the surface, he had a tone of welcoming them as tourists, but in reality, he was suggesting for them to get the hell out while they still could, and to not act reckless in his territory.

All of the factions were scolded, but they also realized that Li old city master was truly angry this time, so no one really contradicted him.

"All of these are big factions, and this Li old city master wasn't the slightest bit polite towards them. The local masters being silent is somewhat understandable, since he governed them, but why are Yu palace master, Western Kingdom White Nightmare City subcity master, and people from Soul Alliance silent as well, not daring to speak up?" Chu Mu used his soul remembrance to ask Old Li.

Nightmare Palace had its own structure in Li City, a blue Nightmare Palace, but this time, the Blue Nightmare Palace master couldn't join here, and was forced to take a back seat, because the Western Kingdom White Nightmare Palace City's tenth level title vice city master Xiao Ren was present.

Chu Mu wasn't too familiar with the rankings of the big factions, so naturally Chu Mu found it strange that Li old city master could rudely tell everyone there off.

Old Li naturally understood all the ranking infrastructure and immediately spoke, "Everyone here is the master of each faction,

having what is known as a tenth level title in the faction. For example, Li City is a tenth level city, so all the faction holdings here, like Nightmare Palace, Soul Pet Palace, Soul Palace, Elemental Sect, Merchant's Alliance, etc. were all tenth level territories. Their masters had to be person with a title of over tenth level."

"Almost all the Region Capitals were tenth level cities, so Kingdom Capitals were named tenth level cities, but are actually eleventh level cities. This way, Kingdom Capital city masters were basically eleventh level titles, while the masters of each faction within the city were just tenth level. This is why they don't dare contradict when a Kingdom Capital city master scolds them."

"As for the Tianxia City Yu Palace Master, the people from Soul Alliance, and Western Kingdom White Nightmare City Xiao Ren, they technically count as eleventh level people as well. But, as the saying goes: "The strong dragon cannot out-pressure a local snake."". Li old city master is the boss here. Even if he was a level lower, with his power and character, he would still scold them, let alone them being the same level. They all came to Li City with sinister thoughts, so they can only take the scolding. Speaking of which, I think Li city master is pretty polite today. If it were before, he would probably flip a table or two. This Li city master isn't someone easily messed with. He's famous in the soul pet world for having a bad temper." Old Li said.

"Yu Palace Master is at the eleventh level? I remember my Soul Palace Decree is only at the tenth level, so why did he have to be somewhat polite to me?" Chu Mu asked, confused.

Liu Binglan's Soul Palace Spirit was only at the tenth level as well. If Yu Palace Master was an eleventh level title, then he should be even higher than Liu Binglan.

"This, you don't understand. Most factions have clear rules on the outside, with tenth level as highest. But, just think, Luo Region Region Capital soul palace master is tenth level, but a palace master of a Kingdom Capital such as Li City was also but the tenth level. Both as palace masters, which has more power? Naturally, the Li City palace master.

"Yu palace master comes from Tianxia City, and was one of the seven palace masters of the main Soul Palace. His Soul Palace Decree is also the tenth level, but he is in a higher position than many others. Inner people call him eleventh level. The Noble Women has a similar situation. Her title isn't high, but the power she has is much greater than the other named tenth level people. In other words, her unique title and position is already higher than any proclaimed level title. Though Yu Palace Master seems cold and apathetic on the outside, he has to be somewhat polite to you." Old Li said.

Old Li's explanation made Chu Mu's head spin, but at least Chu Mu knew one thing, which was: among the big factions, the tenth level didn't seem to be the top……

"That scoundrel Duan Xinhe has come to my Li City and slaughtered hundreds of poor citizens in my city, as well as a hundred of my guards. You fleas have caused my city to run out of people to even deal with such matters. If not for these two young generation individuals with outstanding resourcefulness that

killed Duan Xinhe's seven hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters, I don't even know how many more innocents of Li City would fall prey……" As he spoke Li old city master's eyes fell on Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi, who sat in the backseats.

Li old city master extended his hand, wanting to specially and grandly introduce Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi, who had contributed greatly and thwarted Duan Xinhe.

Many big faction members' eyes fell upon Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi, but their faces revealed confusion because, though they heard that two young generation members killed Duan Xinhe's Gluttonous Insect Monsters, they didn't expect them to be this young.

The young generation was a fuzzy category. Twenty seven year olds with somewhat young faces could also be called young generation. Yet, Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi were clearly only twenty years old. They were this young, yet they gave Duan Xinhe, whom countless soul pet world people had headaches over, a heavy blow. These tenth level title characters were naturally very surprised.

"Duan Xinhe is definitely still in Li City. This person has to die, so all of you send an expert, put down your shovels, and get rid of Duan Xinhe first." Li old city master directly borrowed the forces of all the factions to get rid of Duan Xinhe.

"Naturally, this bastard Duan Xinhe should be chased down by everyone."

"I just happen to have some time on my hands, allowing me to

play with Duan Xinhe for a bit."

"Since even Li old city master is putting down an order of arrest, we naturally all have to try our bests……"

All the factions started showing their approval, displaying that they were willing to get rid of Duan Xinhe.

"Heng heng, don't do this half-heartedly." Li old city master said without courtesy, his eyes sweeping over everyone.

Each faction fell into embarrassment. In reality, all of them were indeed half-hearted. After all, with everyone's attention on the Cyan Hidden Dragon, who had time for Duan Xinhe?

"I'm too lazy to play any hidden schemes with everyone. Everyone came for the Cyan Hidden Dragon and its egg. Since this thing appeared in my territory, let me decide, to prevent it from making my Li City a slaughterhouse."

"Duan Xinhe is someone everyone here has hatred for, so, what I say we do is……"

Li old city master specially paused for a moment. Seeing that each faction was showing disapproval already, he instead smiled, "Make Duan Xinhe's life as the key to this competition – Whoever kills Duan Xinhe gets possession of the Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg!"

Meaning though a person can be normally superior, they can't win when the inferior is in their own territory/habitat.

Chapter 261: An Arena That Belongs To Only The Big Factions

The moment the old Li City lord's words came out, the entire conference hall erupted. Regardless if it was Nightmare Palace's Xiao Ren, Soul Palace's Palace Master Yu, Elemental Sect's Sect Master Yu, Merchant's Alliance's Merchant Master Wang, or Soul Pet Palace's master, who had come to stir up trouble, none of them expected for the old Li City lord to use Duan Xinhe's life as the contested chess piece by every large faction!

"I, Li Sheng, will say this: the moment the Hibernating Dragon Egg appears, it will belong to the person or faction that killed Duan Xinhe. If you try and play some kind of trick in secret, try and steal the dragon egg from the killer of Duan Xinhe, or alarm my Li City's citizens with rain and wind of blood, don't blame me for being impolite. I will kill who I need to kill, and I won't speak a sentence of garbage with you people." after Li City's old lord finished cursing at everyone, he said something else shocking and, for a moment, the noise and discussion was suppressed.

Everyone present was someone with status, and behind them was an enormous faction. Li City's city lord made everyone shocked with his boldness.

"Old Li, this city lord, Li Sheng, probably doesn't make everyone respect him just because of his status, right?" Chu Mu was also deeply moved by the city lord's boldness.

"Li City's city lord, Li Sheng, is a generation older than your father. In his early years he was an overlord, and he belonged to

the class of people that no one thought of provoking. His strongest main pet's fighting strength isn't inferior to the forbidden region's Blue Galactic Demon Emperor. It can be said that he is the number one publicly acknowledged expert in Zhanli Kingdom. Of those present, I estimate that only Soul Alliance's Qin Liefeng has the qualifications to contend against him. The others, including Palace Lord Yu and Nightmare Palace's Nightmare City vice city lord, Xiao Ren, will have to step aside.

"This Li Sheng will keep his word. Since he said that whoever kills Duan Xinhe will obtain the dragon egg, even those Soul Alliance fellows won't dare be presumptuous. At least they won't dare to make any small movements in front of Li Sheng." said Old Li.

Li City's city lord's words had an enormous amount of authority. Many people of the factions present revealed unsightly faces, and began to ponder over Duan Xinhe's matter.

"Old city lord, we'll naturally listen to your words. However, right now we haven't even found the Cyan Hidden Dragon's silhouette. Does Duan Xinhe's life have anything to do with the Cyan Hidden Dragon? Aren't your words just having us work for free for a month?" Elemental Sect's elder, Yu De, had an objection first.

LI City's city lord glared at Elemental Sect's elder, Yu De, and coldly sneered: "What does you guys working have anything to do with me? Comply with the rules, and you can continue staying here. If you don't comply with the regulations, then you can get up and leave now."

The old city lord Li didn't give any of the factions room to discuss, and his eyes apathetically swept over them.

As expected, although these rules made all the factions feel it was very sudden, no one actually opposed it. Everyone present was part of a large faction, and if they shed blood fighting over the Hidden Dragon Egg, they would lose face. Furthermore, their higher ups wouldn't allow them to casually begin fighting.

"Since no one left, I'll speak of the details." the city lord saw that all the large factions were going to comply to the rules, so he continued speaking.

"I previously mentioned that each large faction has to dispatch people to get rid of Duan Xinhe. For the purpose of equality, each large faction can dispatch five people. These five people are in charge of finding and killing Duan Xinhe. Those over forty from any large faction can stand off to the side. There's no need to break your old bones trying to kill Duan Xinhe and let others know you can't keep face. As for whether the dispatched people are going to be killed by Duan Xinhe in retaliation, don't ask me. Without strength, don't come and fight for treasures. Train for a few years first before showing up."

The old city lord's determined rules caused many people to have objections again. Wasn't not letting those above the age of forty compete essentially stopping a large handful of experts? After all, a majority of those who could actually contend against Duan Xinhe were above forty.

Thus, when the old city lord finished speaking, Elemental Sect, Merchant's Alliance, and Li City's aristocratic families had a few objections.

However, as they were about to speak, the old city lord didn't give them a chance and continued: "Listen to me finish speaking first before you express your objections."

"Each faction can dispatch two people with no age restriction. These two people will be in charge of dealing with the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Whatever faction makes the Cyan Hidden Dragon surrender, the Cyan Hidden Dragon will belong to him or her. To clarify things, the Hidden Dragon Egg isn't included in this, and after yielding the Cyan Dragon, you must go through the appraisal of every faction. If there is a Hidden Dragon Egg in its belly, you must give it to the party that kills Duan Xinhe."

The old city lord's words made everyone's expressions change again. However, every faction knew that this contest had now become a regulated contest. Whoever didn't comply would probably be eliminated. Therefore, for the time being, no one expressed any objections.

Hearing old city lord Li's words, Chu Mu showed a puzzled expression. Using soul remembrance to communicate with Old Li he said: "Isn't the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's strength close to unrivalled? How can the city lord only have each faction send out two people to deal with it? Even if every factions makes an alliance, it's very easy for it to flee. What's the point in talking about making it surrender?"

“Perhaps the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon has already been heavily injured, or every large faction has a treasure capable of making the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon surrender. Oh, the surrender doesn’t mean forming a soul pact with it. It should be at the very most putting it in some soul capture device. Although very few soul capture devices can hold a creature like the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, all the various factions came prepared, and their treasures should have already been prepared.” explained Old Li.

Chu Mu creased his eyebrows. So many factions were joining together to deal with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. If it was in peak condition, even if everyone formed an alliance, they perhaps were still not its opponent. However, if it had suffered a serious injury, the situation wouldn’t be too optimistic for it. After all, everyone present was an expert.

“Finally, I, Li Sheng, will provide a 50 million young soul pet as a reward while each large faction will dispatch five young generation members to search for the Cyan Hidden Dragon. The party that finds it will win the reward. It must be declared that regarding the matter of finding the Cyan Hidden Dragon, aside from the five young generation member teams selected, other people are not allowed to interfere. If someone violates the rules and is found, the encampments of that faction will all be expelled from my Zhanli Kingdom’s over seven hundred and eighty two cities. I, this kingdom lord, do not welcome people who don’t follow rules. Furthermore, the young generation team that searches for the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s hiding spot must publicize the information to every large faction. They may not solely inform their faction before stealthily dispatching people to deal with the Cyan Hidden Dragon. The moment this is discovered, it will be the same punishment as I mentioned before.” the kingdom lord, Li Shen,

continued to say.

The kingdom lord, Li Shen's, words were full of force, and didn't allow for the slightest bit of rejection. It seemed that one only had speak half of a "no", and that faction would definitely be expelled from his territory.

Most of these kingdom lords flattered these factions in hopes that they would increase the number of encampments on their land. By doing so, this would allow for the development of various places across the kingdom. After all, places where there were factions definitely meant soul pet trainers would set foot there.

However, Zhanli Kingdom was a large kingdom with extremely abundant resources, and these large factions required such resources. Whether it was the economy, the human capital or the land, if they were to completely withdraw from this kingdom, it would be an incomparably large blow to the faction. It was much more serious than the Cyan Hidden Dragon, which they had completely no idea about. Under these circumstances, these various large factions ultimately didn't make any small moves, since if these Li City factions were to be completely swept out of Zhanli City in one motion, when those big shots from the main encampments blamed them, they wouldn't be able to shoulder the responsibility.

"This Li Sheng really is a character. If it was another kingdom lord, perhaps he or she would have already been eyed covetously by these factions, and a large uproar would have been caused in this town. Yet, Li Sheng split this large cake into three pieces. One for the young generation, one for the middle generation, and one

for the old generation. It is both a nonintervention and an interconnected competition. Not only did he pacify the most recent unstable situation in Li City, but he further had these threatening huge figures know there place." Old Li let out a sigh.

What Old Li was talking about happened to be what Chu Mu was thinking. Chu Mu couldn't help but admire this extremely bold kingdom lord.

Only, because of this, Chu Mu had no choice but to be worried for the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. After all, everyone now had such an orderly competition, and the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon wouldn't be able to flee because of the chaos.

"Finding the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon will be the responsibility of the young generation. The best method is to delay time and not let these people find the Empyrean Cyan Dragon, further giving it an opportunity to recover its injuries. This way it won't be confined by these people." silently thought Chu mu.

Chu Mu pretty much came up with his plan. Other young generation members would be searching for the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon so he would interfere with them and not let them find it!

"I'll remind all the young members first that the Cyan Hidden Dragon should be in a pupasis state. When you see threads of the pupa you can immediately report it. By not means do you have to thoroughly search for it; that is equivalently to seeking death. Do you understand?" the kingdom lord intentionally warned.

When he said this, the kingdom lord specially swept over the young generation members in the back seats. The young generation members present were pretty much all gathered and each faction had them. However, they were all in the back seats and could only listen. Only those young generations members with strength to enter the main seats had the qualifications to speak. This rule was pretty much the same everywhere.

“Then we can disperse for today. By tomorrow, send your respective three lists to me. Those not on the list can stay to the side. Don’t meddle in other people’s’ business. Also, this matter does not allow for people outside of the factions here to participate. Everyone should know what to do, right?” said the Li Kingdom lord.

Every faction nodded their heads.

Normally speaking, when it came to large matters like this, the most important thing for the large factions to do was to not fight amongst themselves. Instead, they conducted a large sweeping through and swept out those people without a faction and solitary factions out of this cruel arena. This prevented them from implicating a few ineffable things. This also was the overbearingness of the large factions and only had things to do with strength.

Chapter 262: Kill Yu He, Palace Lord Yu's Favor

The conference dispersed, and the various factions probably began to clearly think through who would participate in these three things. Thus, they didn't stay around in the city lord's residence and they all said goodbye.

"Why didn't young master Chu come? Didn't he say he would?" as they left the conference hall, Palace Lord Yu swept his eyes over the Soul Palace Members before asking a puzzled question.

"This subordinate doesn't know either. Young master did say he was going to find a friend, and that he would come later. However, I don't know where he went later, and haven't seen him since." responded the vice-palace lord.

Palace Lord Yu's eyes quickly fell on Chu Mu, and because he remembered the person who eliminated a plethora of Duan Xinhe's soul pets should have been young master Chu Chen, how did he so mysteriously change into this brat.

What Palace Lord Yu found strange was really normal, because Chu Mu was wearing a disguise when he bumped into Palace Lord Yu, who had never seen Chu Mu's true appearance.

"Could it be Palace Lord Yu wants it to find young master Chu to have him participate in the young generation group finding the Cyan Hidden Dragon?" asked the vice-palace lord.

Palace Lord Yu glanced at the vice-palace lord and indifferently said: “Could it be you think that there’s someone else in Li City’s Soul Palace that is better at doing this than young master?”

“This… there naturally isn’t…” a wave of awkwardness came over the vice-palace lord. He originally wanted to recommend his own eldest child to become the captain of the young generation members, but when he realized that a grand Soul Palace young master was here, that young generation member’s strength was probably stronger. He thus had to stand to the side, and the vice palace lord could only swallow this thought…

“Go and find the young master. Also pick a few young experts from the palace to have them find the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Also, find two experts that fit the conditions the Li Kingdom Lord just said to kill Duan Xinhe.” said Palace Lord Yu,

Since Palace Lord Yu told the vice palace lord to find two people, he intended to find three people himself to participate in killing Duan Xinhe; in other words, he had already decided on three people behind closed doors.

As for the elder generation members, one of the spots would definitely be taken by Palace Lord Yu, while the other spot probably would be given to the number one expert in Zhanli Kingdom’s Soul Palace, or Li City’s Soul Palace Lord.

Li City’s Soul Palace Lord was very old, and the matters in Li City were completely under the control of Palace Lord Yu. The other

matters were put under the responsibility of the vice palace lord, and the Li City Lord didn't even attend the meeting this time.

"When you find young master Chu, tell him the contents of the meeting today, and tell him I have something to say to him." said Palace Lord Yu.

"This subordinate understands." the vice palace lord nodded his head and quickly followed behind Palace Lord Yu.

……

……

The old Li City Lord had already expressly indicated that he wouldn't let other factions inside the meeting participate. Chu Mu originally didn't want to represent a faction to find the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, but when he thought about this problem, he had no choice but to occupy the position of a Soul Palace young generation member.

After Chu Mu left the city lord's residence, he immediately went to Soul Palace and found Palace Lord Yu.

Palace Lord Yu quickly recognized Chu Mu, after all his disguised and undisguised appearance weren't very different.

"Young master Chu probably doesn't want to watch on the sidelines, right?" asked Palace Lord Yu.

“Yes.” Chu Mu nodded his head. He came to find Palace Lord Yu naturally for this matter.

“I already had the vice palace lord choose a few young generation experts to form a team with young master. If young master is interested in the rewards, then you must really think about how to find the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.” said Palace Lord Yu.

“There’s no need to find people. I have a few friends who happen to make a team of five.” said Chu Mu.

“Oh, since young master himself has a team, then there’s no need to find more people.” Palace Lord Yu nodded his head.

Chu Mu’s words made the vice-palace lord’s expression turn somewhat unsightly. 50 million was an extremely considerable reward for a young generation member. Moreover, this clearly was a competition between the various young factions’ young generation members. The vice palace lord wanted to pick from among Li City Soul Palace’s young generation members in order to showcase their abilities. However, he was left between laughter and tears when this young master not only occupied the position of team leader, but also took the other four spots.

“This… young master Chu, if you take all the spots, the young generation experts our palace won’t feel it’s fair. Why doesn’t young master Chu leave one or two spots…” carefully said the vice palace lord.

“Vice palace lord, the only thing you have to think about is killing Duan Xinhe.” Palace Lord Yu wasn’t courteous at all to the vice palace lord, and waved his hands, indicating to do as Chu Mu said.

The vice palace lord had a bitter expression, and even if he wanted to say something, didn’t dare say it. He was helpless as Palace Lord Yu was a figure two ranks higher than him and he didn’t dare oppose his words. The other was a Soul Palace young master so why would he dare say that the young generation members in his palace were stronger than the young master and his friends...

After dispatching the vice palace lord, Palace Lord Yu intentionally pulled Chu Mu to the side to speak.

“I heard Colored Sky City’s palace lord mention that young master witnessed the course of events in which my child was killed?” Palace Lord Yu’s tone became heavy.

Palace Lord Yu had come here this time primarily for the matter of his son being killed. In reality, he didn’t truly care about the Cyan Hidden Dragon, but as a great palace lord, he had no choice but to put his private matters to the side.

“Yes.” promptly, Chu Mu approximately recounted the events of Colored Sky City to Palace Lord Yu.

Palace Lord Yu had a dispirited face from the beginning, and when he knew that these fellows had thrown his son and Feng Ya’s

corpse into a group of soul pets, his entire body gave off a cold air and the environment's temperature, due to the palace lord's terrifying killing intent, somewhat dropped!

"It's just a pity that there's no direct evidence that it was Yu He who ordered it." said Chu Mu.

Yu He was extremely crafty when he killed Yu Lang and Feng Ya. He already wiped all the evidence including Zhang Qin and Qing Li who both had good relations with him for a few years. During the fair trial, as long as Elemental Sect defended Yu He, Palace Lord Feng would cut connections with them.

"My son's death must be compensated for. It doesn't matter if I start a conflict with the Elemental Sect people, I'll still do it. However, if I haven't guessed incorrectly, there's definitely some person directing things behind the scenes." Palace Lord Yu slowly suppressed his emotions.

Chu Mu nodded his head, and remembered that Old Li had said this matter wasn't simple. After all, Yu He could not so mysteriously kill Yu Lang, who was a perceptive person.

"As of most recently, there's been someone often provoking the relation between our Soul Palace and Elemental Sect. Only, I didn't think that my Yu Lang would become the sacrifice of this plot..." Palace Lord Yu slowly clenched his fists.

The open and secretive fighting between factions was an intangible yet terrifying blade. Palace Lord Yu was already so

careful about this, yet Yu Lang, who had gone away to train, still perished in this frightening fight. This caused him, who wielded immense power, to feel heartache...

"The sinister person behind the scenes wants to rupture the relationship between us and Elemental Sect. I can kill Yu He in anger, but that's the same as letting the sinister person's plot succeed."

Speaking up to this point, Palace Lord Yu let out a breath of air. Like a steel statue, he slowly lowered himself and coldly and dignifiedly half-knelt in front of Chu Mu.

Palace Lord Yu was half-kneeling in front of him?

Chu Mu was stunned, not expecting Palace Lord Yu to suddenly do something like this. For a moment, he didn't know what to do...

Palace Lord Yu was the seventh palace's palace lord and wielded a plethora of power. Even in front of people like Soul Palace's Old Yuan, he didn't even half to kneel for them; there wasn't even a need to mention a young master. Thus, Palace Lord Yu's action made Chu Mu feel extremely shocked.

"I've never knelt down for someone of the same generation, and obviously not for a younger generation. Yet, I, Yu Shang, would like to request young master Chu of a matter..." Palace Lord Yu's voice was deep.

“Palace Lord Yu wants me to use this opportunity to find the Cyan Hidden Dragon to kill Yu He?” Chu Mu wasn’t a dumb person either, and Palace Lord Yu’s salute to him was definitely for his son, Yu Lang.

Palace Lord Yu nodded his head and said: “Indeed, if young master Chu helps me avenge my son, I, Yu Shang, will owe Young Master Chu a favor in this life. If some day you have some use of me, I, Yu Shang, will not evade it!”

“Yu He is someone who I must kill, as well as my two friends. Even if Palace Lord Yu didn’t say it, I would still kill him. Thus, Palace Lord Yu can be at ease about this.” Chu Mu helped Palace Lord Yu stand up.

“As long as Young Master Chu kills him, I, Yu Shang, will certainly give you endless thanks!” Palace Lord Yu stood up; his face was rather grave. No matter what emotion he was harboring, this Palace Lord Yu would always seem serious, and like someone who didn’t laugh. He wouldn’t even let out half a bit of grief…

Chu Mu was presently relying on Soul Palace as his main supporter. If he was able to obtain the favor of Yu Shang, it would be very beneficial in the future. Even disregarding the fact that it was something he had to do and even if it was specially entrusted to him, Chu Mu would gladly accept it.

……

After leaving Soul palace, Chu Mu’s heart was filled with a lot of

sorrow, especially when he thought of Yu Shang, this proud and respected figure, half-kneeling.

Without a need to guess, Chu Mu further knew that Yu Shang was definitely a person who possessed an extreme amount of dignity when he knelt down. His son having been killed, his heart was full of rage, yet he had to consider the big picture. Him having to get Chu Mu to take revenge for his son was both a compromise and a point of grief that Chu Mu could understand.

The more power one had, the more considerations one had to keep in mind. Regardless, Chu Mu still admired a person like Yu Shang because he saw the helplessness and grandness of a father who possessed supreme power.

The curtain of rain continued to fall on this expansive city. Chu Mu stood in the patter of rain and unconsciously thought of his father, Chu Tianmang. Presumably, after the news of him being killed upon his disappearance, he was also like Palace Lord Yu...

“Main pet self-destructing...” Chu Mu shook his head. Every time he thought of this matter, it made his heart tremble because to any soul pet trainer, it was an unimaginably sorrowful thing...

.....

“Soul Alliance, hmph, don’t think you’ll succeed this time!”

In the ice cold rain, Chu Mu tightly clenched his fists.

……

Chapter 263: Finding the Cyan Hidden Dragon

Five people in a team, representing Soul Palace. It was said to be five, but Chu Mu really only had four, respectively himself, Ye family brother and sister, and Dong Qing, who wanted to kill Yu He as well.

Though there was an opening, Chu Mu didn't want to let any soul palace young expert join, because his main mission this time was definitely not to find the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, but was instead to protect it, and kill Yu He in the process.

"Chu Chen,where do you think we should start searching? Li City is so big, and the other powers have sent so many experts around to no avail. I don't even know if us young generation can actually find this Cyan Hidden Dragon." Dong Qing said.

"Let's start in the western street area, the probability of finding it there is higher." Chu Mu said.

Chu Mu guessed that the Gluttonous Insect Monster probably accidentally touched the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's white silk, and since they were roaming the western street area, it meant that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon most likely was hiding somewhere there as well.

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon could change its body size. If it didn't want attract anyone's attention, its metamorphosis was probably very low profile too. Possibly, the Empyrean Cyan

Hidden Dragon was just even deeper in western city area waters.

"That's true, but do you have a rock type soul pet? I remember the underground sewage tunnels are the oldest underground relic of Li City. In the past, researchers have found ancient fossils within to make ancient soul pet encyclopedias, but now, with thousands of years of chance, the underground ruins were slowly covered in sand. Many underground passageways are blocked. Without a rock type soul pet to lead the way, one mishap, and we'll all die stuck in there." Dong Qing said.

In the past time, most of the factions had their main searching target as the sealed away underground ruins of Li City. However, Li City was massive, and the underground structure underneath it was also complicated. Wanting to find a Cyan Hidden Dragon that could change its size was still very difficult.

"So there's an ancient ruin under Li City! It's the first time I've heard of this. Maybe there's some good treasures, like ancient soul equipment, ancient soul pet fossilized eggs, lost scrolls of soul techniques……" Ye Wansheng's mind quickly wandered off and started making these connections.

"You're thinking too much. The old ruins are just old Li City. It's not some true historical remnant; it just still has a couple of passage ways. From what I see, it'll be hard to even battle there." Dong Qing said.

"……" Ye Wansheng immediately became disinterested.

“Chu Chen, how do you plan on dealing with Yu He?” Ye Qingzi asked.

“Maybe they’re thinking of how to deal with us. Since he likes these plots and traps so much……” Chu Mu said.

……

After the Gluttonous Insect Monsters were cleared out, the west street area citizens slowly started moving back to live. Since there was an increase in guards in that area, the western street citizens naturally could feel a lot more at ease.

Chu Mu went into the underground tunnels of western street area early morning the next day. Since it had been washed with water, Chu Mu would probably have a tough time finding where the Gluttonous Insect Monster had encountered the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s white silk, rendering them only able to start a carpet search.

“No wonder the underground tunnels didn’t fill up even after we poured that much water in. These tunnels have been disfigured beyond recognition by the Gluttonous Insect Monsters.” After entering, the four people found that many places showed signs of excavation. Very clearly, those Gluttonous Insect Monsters were also looking for the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

“Thank goodness most of Li City’s old site is closed. If they dug through to some place inside, they might have just run away from there, no matter how much water we poured in.” Dong Qing

continued.

“Let’s go to the old address. The underground tunnels should have been scoured clean by those Gluttonous Insect Monsters.” Chu Mu looked down at the deep pits filled with water.

This deep pit was also opened up by the Gluttonous Insect Monster. There were still two Gluttonous Insect Monster corpses floating on it. Presumably, because of the pit, they didn’t flow into the river with the rest of the water.

“Moon, draw the water somewhere else.” Ye Qingzi summoned Water Moon to let it discharge all the water.

Like a jellyfish, the translucent Water Moon slowly extended a finger and, with a faint blue glow, the deep pond like water was quickly drawn up by the Water Moon and send down the tunnels towards the rivers……

What the four found very strange was, the tunnel dug up was very deep. Water Moon casted a full five minutes before it finally got all the water out……

“Sword Beetle, go down to check it out.” Ye Wansheng summoned his seventh phase third stage Sword Beetle, and let it follow the wet hole into the Li City old site.

Many bug type soul pets could easily break through dirt. Some even lived underground. Ye Wansheng’s Sword Beetle was clearly

very able underground. It scaled the vertical pitwalls like it was walking on flat ground as it quickly reached the deeper parts.

“There’s no danger, let’s go down.” After not too long, Ye Wansheng opened his mouth and announced.

……

Chu Mu knew that someone who dug up a tunnel in western city area must be very close to the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s Innards of a God, so Chu Mu didn’t go looking through the old site randomly, but instead went down every underground tunnel pit to search around before returning back to the underground tunnels and continuing to the next pit.

Though they didn’t really understand why Chu Mu wanted to follow the Gluttonous Insect Monsters’ footprints to look for the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, the Ye brother and sister didn’t say much, letting Chu Mu search the way he liked.

As for Dong Qing, he respected Chu Mu greatly now, so he thought Chu Mu probably wasn’t wrong in whatever he was doing……

A whole day passed with the four people going through the endless holes of western street area. Other than the floating corpses of the Gluttonous Insect Monsters, they didn’t find any more valuable information. When it reached night time, the four stopped looking and went back to their respective places to sleep.

The second and third day were identical. Chu Mu still kept to his plan and looked through Western Street Area, but there were too many holes. Looking through them one by one truly took a long time.

……

“There’s none here either. Let’s call it a day, should we go back?” Chu Mu recalled his Zhan Ye into his soul pet space and glanced into the dark at the other three, who were still scanning through the old site for hints.

“We’re stopping this early? With how lazy we are, we can hardly out compete the others.” Ye Wansheng said.

“I’m a bit tired too……” Ye Qingzi said.

“Chu Chen, I heardthe Yu He and the young generation expert from Soul Alliance, Lu Ying, made an alliance.” Dong Qing said.

“En, I heard that from Soul Palace. This Lu Ying seems to be from your Li City, too.” Chu Mu nodded.

Soul Alliance didn’t have a territory in Li City, yet they had eight people come. The strongest Xiao Ren was lead, while the other six were all top tier experts of soul pet world. The only young generation member they had this time was Lu Ying, so they weren’t very interested in the city master’s reward, allowing him to join the team of Elemental Sect.

“Lu Ying is a Li City person who colluded evilly with Yu He for many years. He later entered Soul Alliance and rarely appeared in Zhanli Kingdom after. I heard he’s pretty famous in the other kingdoms, so I don’t know how powerful he is now.” Dong Qing said.

Chu Mu also basically knew Lu Ying’s situation, so he left Dong Qing and returned to Soul Palace to rest, deciding to look further next day.

……

Deep in the night.

By Chu Mu’s normal habits, after feeding White Nightmare, Chu Mu started to meditate.

It was in the later half of the night when Chu Mu vaguely felt there was someone in the courtyard. He opened his eyes and walked up to the windows to open them.

The rain stopped half way through the night. The flowers and trees in the courtyard were all wet. Within the white pavilion, a graceful beauty stood there silently, holding her cheeks, looking slightly melancholic……

Chu Mu looked through the window crack at her and hesitated slightly before pushing open the door lightly and walking to the

pavilion.

“What’s up?” Chu Mu looked at Ye Qingzi, who wore a light jacket, and asked.

Ye Qingzi’s jacket was slightly thin, hardly able to cover up her body. Especially with the night sky and flowers in the background, she was like a blossoming lily in the night, beautiful and touching……

“I was waiting for you……” Ye Qingzi’s beautiful eyes watched Chu Mu. Even in the night, they could reflect a beautiful glint.

“Waiting for me?” Chu Mu felt slightly surprised. He specially looked over Ye Qingzi and noticed that, under her jacket, she only wore a thin sleeping gown. However, possibly because she had slept well, a few buttons were lose, showing crystal pure skin. Though nothing explicit was showing, it caused one to dive into the beauties of one’s imagination.

“Don’t think askew……” Ye Qingzi tightened her jacket and feigned anger.

Chu Mu rarely saw Ye Qingzi with such an expression, making it even harder not to imagine things……

Ye Qingzi quickly calmed down and looked at Chu Mu, “I feel as if you’re too well-behaved recently.”

“Hehe, I feel as if you can always read me very clearly.” Chu Mu laughed.

“Don’t switch the topic.” Ye Qingzi gave a cute stare to Chu Mu, “Though I don’t want to ask too deeply, it is a Cyan Hidden Dragon in the end. I don’t want to look around randomly with you for no reason, especially in the situation that you haven’t said anything.”

Chu Mu laughed bitterly, as if anything of his couldn’t escape Ye Qingzi’s eyes……

Ye Qingzi saw that Chu Mu didn’t say anything. She slightly hesitated, then said with a probing tone, “I feel as if you already know where the Cyan Hidden Dragon is……”

“……” Chu Mu was speechless. In his mind, he was thinking that Ye Qingzi must be like the tapeworms living in his stomach, able to discern even this. If he often put his emotions on his face, this wouldn’t be too big of a deal. Yet, he was the sort to have no expression no matter what happened, so how did this woman find out?

Chapter 264: Beauty's Night Words

"That day, when Dong Qing mentioned the Cyan Hidden Dragon, your reaction was way too strange..... After, you then risked great danger to chase the eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster just for a ball of white sticky silk. Beyond that, these days, I feel as if your attention isn't even on finding the Cyan Hidden Dragon, but instead was on setting something up..... you acting this strange, I could only rely on you to find the Cyan Hidden Dragon, and then start thinking of how to kill Yu He..... did I guess correctly?"

Chu Mu nodded grudgingly.

Ye Qingzi looked at Chu Mu's scrunched up face, and her face blossomed into a smile.

Ye Qingzi's smile was very reserved. It didn't look much different from her usual light smile, but Chu Mu could still sense a hint of a woman's delight, as well as Ye Qingzi's unique knowledgeability.

Looking at the smart Ye Qingzi, Chu Mu felt that there was no need to hide anything from Ye Qingzi anymore, since she basically knew everything already.....

"In reality, I found the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's Innards of the Gods on the third day already, but I really hope that noone else finds it." Chu Mu said.

"Why? And, everyone else calls it the Cyan Hidden Dragon, who do you uniquely call it Empyrean? Is it that you've come in contact

with this Cyan Hidden Dragon before?" Ye Qingzi was indeed a meticulous thinker, noticing even the small details in Chu Mu's speech……

"Qingzi, you know, I'm starting to think you're scary." Chu Mu said.

With this sentence, the previously excited Ye Qingzi fell silent.

"If you were my enemy, I would probably be constantly led around by you helplessly, because anything I think of, you can guess." Chu Mu said.

"Sorry, I was just curious."

Ye Qingzi's expression became more apathetic and said quietly to Chu Mu.

After she said that, Ye Qingzi felt as if this questioning of hers indeed was too over the top. She turned around and went to return to her own room.

"Qingzi, that's not what I meant……" Chu Mu saw that Ye Qingzi was about to leave and hastily grabbed her hand.

With this tug, Ye Qingzi stopped walking and turned around to look at Chu Mu, and then glanced at her hand, grabbed tightly by Chu Mu's……

“A moment of excitement……sorry, sorry……” Chu Mu awkwardly pulled his hand back and explained his previous words, “What I meant was…….ai, it’s pretty hard to put in words…… how should I say it……”

“I know you didn’t mean that, or else you wouldn’t have needed to admit to my guesses.” Ye Qingzi looked at Chu Mu, and seemed to feel that she was too close. Her white face blushed a tint of pink, as she silently shuffled back a tiny bit……

“I believe that the others will find out not too long after, so telling you first won’t do any harm.” Chu Mu had some ineffable trust in Ye Qingzi. Even Chu Mu didn’t know what this trust was founded upon.

Ye Qingzi shook her head and didn’t let Chu Mu speak first, instead speaking up, “I’ve also retained some information from you, not telling you why my brother and I have been hiding around. If you say yours, don’t I have to say mine to make it fair?…….”

“Alright, then let’s both hide it now, and tell it to each other in the future when there’s the opportunity.” Chu Mu didn’t plan on telling Ye Qingzi everything anyways, but since Ye Qingzi respected his secrets, there was no need for Chu Mu to get to the end of Ye Qingzi’s things as well……

“It isn’t early anymore, I’m going to go sleep.” Ye Qingzi said.

“En, I’ll sleep too.” Chu Mu nodded.

Both of them didn’t say much, returning to their rooms. They said they were going to sleep, but both Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi definitely didn’t sleep. Cultivation was full of effort. They always slept but one or two hours a day. The rest of the night, to them, was just the beginning of their boring and dull cultivating nightlife……

“You really just wanted to trade secrets with him there, right?” Ye Wansheng’s soul remembrance floated in from the other room.

“No.” Ye Qingzi denied.

“If we traded secrets, we would either move forward further in our relationship, or we would completely shatter it. I first won’t judge Chu Mu’s character. Just from his fuzzy identity, we can’t be sure of his standpoint. Standpoint is a scary thing, many times not determined by the person themselves.”

“Ai, to speak the truth, with this many variables in the future, I really don’t want to walk on the opposite side against this sly kid who acts all cool, especially since my sister’s heart is unknowingly tilted towards him. Qingzi, you say I’m not proper all day long, but look at yourself now. You don’t stay calm in the presence of handsome guys either.” Ye Wansheng’s drawn out voice floated into Ye Qingzi’s ears.

Ye Qingzi was about to enter meditation, but with this jumble of words from Ye Wansheng, it broke Ye Qingzi’s mental state. She

sent her remembrance to Ye Wansehng, “I’m just thankful for him and I trust him in some things, don’t make up these useless things.”

“Alright alright, I’m making it all up. But speaking of which, this Chu Mu indeed is suitable as a husband for a younger sister. The guy is just a tiny bit less handsome than I am, and rarely has opponents in his generation. He seems to also be some soul palace young master. Actually, you really could bet it all and trust his character. Pledge yourself to him and become some young master’s bride. With Soul Palace behind us, we wouldn’t have to drift around anymore……”

“I’m too lazy to talk to you.” Ye Qingzi walled her mind off using her soul remembrance and stopped listening to Ye Wansheng’s broken record-like nonsense.

“Not calm anymore, not calm anymore, you little girl still pretending. No matter how calm and unperturbed you are usually, your little thoughts can’t escape your old brother’s eyes……”

On the sixth day, Chu Mu found that Yu He and Lu Ying’s team frequently appeared in west street, and were very close to where the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon became a cocoon.

Though he didn’t know where the guy got his information, Chu Mu felt that the two had great pointedness when they arrived, locking deadly onto western street area, seeming to know that there definitely would be hints of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon down under western street area.

Chu Mu also guessed that they would all come here because of Duan Xinhe eventually, but he didn't think it would be this swift.

"Should we start planning to kill Yu He?" Ye Wansheng felt the killing intent in Chu Mu's eyes, and his face split into a strange smile too.

"En, they should've entered the underground palace-like old site area we found on our third day. Let's lay ambush there." Chu Mu said.

It wasn't that Chu Mu wanted to lay ambush in such a sensitive area, but Yu He and Lu Ying seemed to really have gained some information, starting to search unrestrained through the region near there. Finding the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon would only be a matter of time.

"Then, just us four?" Dong Qing asked.

"En, to prevent additional trouble, it's best we kill them all. Don't leave any evidence that will implicate us." Chu Mu either didn't attack, or left none alive. This was a basic principle Chu Mu learnedon Prison Island.

"Soul Alliance's Lu Ying shouldn't be violated, right?" Dong Qing asked hesitatingly.

Lu Ying was a member of Soul Alliance. Soul Alliance has always

been a formidable faction, and they only had five people here this time. If they killed Soul Alliance's young generation member, they would receive an immense amount of pressure.

"That's why we have to kill them all." Ye Wansheng was also a merciless person. This, he agreed with Chu Mu wholeheartedly.

Ye Qingzi usually didn't object either. When the time came to strike, she naturally would strike. There was no need for Chu Mu and Ye Wansheng to prepare her mentally.

"Heng, anyways, the people with Yu He are also a bunch of scum, killing them is fine!" Dong Qing finally made up his mind too.

Dong Qing hadn't gone out for training very often. From this simple action, Dong Qing could already see why he was distant from Yu He. Yu He always put people to death, while he always had too many concerns……

"After this ends, no matter what, I have to go out to train for a while, or else I'll never become a true expert." Dong Qing said.

"Hehe, then I'll give you a most important warning: Don't easily think of friends as friends……' Ye Wansheng said with a laugh.

The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's metamorphosis region was the old site that Chu Mu found on the third day. This old site originally should've been the remains of some lavish structure, but it was silently buried into the ground.

This old site area was massive. The Water Moon and the Violent Unicorn Water Beast took a full half hour to completely get rid of all the water in here.

In reality, this old site also had some Gluttonous Insect Monster lairs. When the water was pulled out, at least fifty corpses came with it.

Every hole dug also had Gluttonous Insect Monster corpses. The total before was around seven hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters, but in reality, it should have been closer to eight hundred. Duan Xinhe wasn't in the wrong to hate Chu Mu to the bones. After all, if one counted a normal seventh phase commander rank to be fifty thousand gold, Duan Xinhe lost near 400 million gold.

The old site's space was quite large, with the main hall full of old pillars. Some seemed to be unable to withstand their weights anymore, showing signs of cracking and fracturing.

Because the hall was submerged, it still seemed very moist. In each direction, there were many tunnels. These tunnels previously didn't exist. Chu Mu and people went in to dig them all up to connect all the secret room like spaces together.

Chu Mu did this to make fighting easier. After all, they had four people. If they fought in the old site main hall, the limited landscape meant they would have to fight Yu He and the others head on, which was disadvantageous for them.

Chapter 265: Confrontation of Schemes

Chu Mu's premonition wasn't wrong. After Chu Mu and the other three hid nearby the old hall, the five man team lead by Yu He and Lu Ying finally appeared there. From their dispositions, they clearly wanted to turn the old hall upside down in search.

"They've fixed onto this place most likely because someone from the Elemental Sect discovered something here earlier, right?" Ye Qingzi quietly asked Chu Mu.

Chu Mu nodded his head and whispered to Ye Qingzi: "This Lu Ying shouldn't be weaker than Yu He. In a bit, you will need to keep him busy."

"Sure. Even if I can't beat him, I'll be able to stop him." said Ye Qingzi.

Many of Ye Qingzi's soul pets were support types, like the Water Moon, which was a powerful healing soul pet, so the length of the fight would definitely unlimitedly delayed.

"Then Dong Qing and I will respectively deal with one. There's still one remaining, who we'll deal with according to the situation." said Ye Wansheng.

Quickly, the four of them came up with a rough outline of their jobs. They only had to wait for the opportunity to arrive, and then they would attack.

……

……

“We’ve searched the vicinity ten times. Yu He, why do I feel like you brought us here to waste time?” said one of the Elemental Sect members who was a bit bored.

“That Cyan HIdden Dragon is nearby. Believe me, I’m not wrong.” confidently laughed Yu Jia.

“Let’s go down. I feel like the space below is very large, and perhaps there may be something.” Lu Ying wasn’t suspicious of Yu Jia’s statement at all, and he pointed at the large hole under his feet created by the digging of the Gluttonous Insect Monsters.

These five people were rather cautious, and when they descended into the old hall, they especially had their bug type soul pet and rock type soul pets go scout ahead.

“I don’t like damp places.” said one of the female soul pet trainers as she creased her brows.

“Don’t worry, go down eh.”

The five of them didn’t think too much, and jumped down in sequence into the pitch-black old hall.

The old hall still contained many puddles and, after jumping down, they could feel a damp aura that made one's body feel all weird overcome them. The female soul pet trainer from just now who was extremely discontented was even more unwilling now.

"Fang Tong, if you feel that this place is uncomfortable, then just go back first." said Yu He as he swept his eyes over that female soul pet trainer.

"I hate water the most, especially this place where it's both dirty and smelly. I think that I'll wait for you guys on the surface." without even walking a few steps, the female soul pet trainer called Fang Tong displayed the temper of a domineering young lady. She promptly urged her bug type soul pet on, planning on leaving.

"Ok, after you reach the tunnel, walk on the right and you'll see a T shaped passage. If you walk to the left, you'll be able to see an exit and after you leave, you can wait there for us." Yu JIa reminded Fang Tong.

Fang Tong nodded her head and quickly entered the underground passage. As she walked, she grumbled, having known earlier that this matter would be both strenuous and unrewarding. Thus, she didn't participate any longer. The past few days walking through the underground remains caused her to not sleep well.

"We're short one person with Fang Tong leaving like this. If we encounter another faction's team, won't we suffer then?" said the young man who had yet to speak.

“Don’t worry, it’s impossible for them to find this place.” said Yu Jia very confidently.

“Whatever, Fang Tong is just a pretty face and it’s the same with or without her.” said Yu Jia carrying a somewhat mocking tone.

When the other three Elemental Sect members heard Lu Ying’s words, they naturally were inwardly uncomfortable. After all, Fang Tong was a member of their Elemental Sect, and debasing her like that was pretty much debasing themselves.

Only, the three of them didn’t dare order Lu Ying to do anything, since he was a Soul Alliance member and his strength spoke for itself here.

……

Upon seeing the female soul pet leave, the eyes of Chu Mu and the three others hidden in the underground passage transformed ice-cold.

“Kill or not to kill?” Ye Wansheng asked Chu Mu.

“Let her leave so as to not startle the people underground.” responded Chu Mu.

This female soul pet trainer leaving the team fortunately reduced

the pressure on Chu Mu and the others, and they probably had a large chance of killing Yu He and the three others.

The woman called Fang Tong was still muttering to herself, and was completely unaware that she had nearly lost her life just now.

When she entered the sewer, she changed her soul pet and rode on her demon towards the exit Yu He had directed her to.

“Go to the T shaped passage and then head left. It should be this way.” Fang Tong stopped at the fork in the path and after determining the direction for the moment, didn’t stop any further and continued on the left.

“That’s strange, why haven’t I seen the exit yet. Didn’t Yu Jia say I would be able to see it very soon?” after going forward for a few minutes, Fang Tong was still unable to see any light and she creased her eyebrows.

Upon continuing to walk for a short distance, Fang Tong felt that this path didn’t seem to lead to an exit, so she had her soul pet stop.

“That freaking Yu Jia. Did he point this young lady in the wrong direction? If he didn’t know, then he shouldn’t have blindly directed me and wasted this young ladies time.” said Fang Tong somewhat angrily.

The completely empty underground passage was perfectly

straight. It was both dark and damp and Fang Tong's muttering quickly changed into a strange echo that returned to her ears.

"Young lady, this route is obviously correct."

Suddenly, a voice that made Fang Tong's hair stand on end came from within the incomparably dark passage!

Fang Tong's body trembled, and she hastily chanted an incantation, summoning two other soul pets in front of her.

"Who? Who is it. Show yourself!" yelled Fang Tong somewhat unconfidently.

"I'm right next to you..."

An incomparably strange thing occurred, and as Fang Tong was searching all four directions for that person, she abruptly discovered that his voice was right next to her ear; moreover, she could feel the putrid and cold breath as he spoke!

"AH!" Fang Tong couldn't react in time and suddenly felt a huge grabbing force at her stomach. She let out a sudden sharp cry.

"Tch, not bad. You have a lot of elasticity and are really well developed. I can play with you lots." laughed a lewd and evil voice.

Fang Tong was already so scared that her beautiful face had gone

pale because she simply couldn't see the thing next to her. Instead, she could only feel the attack on her stomach and the embarrassment and fear made her face pale white.

"Attack, attack this thing!" Fang Tong was incomparably flustered and she recklessly ordered her three soul pets to attack.

Fang Tong's three soul pets, including the demon she was riding on, weren't soul pets with strong perception; despite being so close, they still could not detect that terrifying invisible person and could only let out bewildered roars.

"Don't fret, I'll let you die in happiness. Looking at your ample chest, it's practically been prepared for me as a present. If there's enough time, I'll be able to play with you for an entire night." the frightening voice lingered next to Fang Tong's ear.

The unknown threat and undisguised obscenity caused Fang Tong to descend into extreme panic. Just as she was about to have her demon flee, two traces of blood were abruptly spat out.

The two soul pets she summoned weren't able to release an attack, and moreover, she couldn't even see the opposing person. Thus, the soul pets' vital parts were immediately ripped open and they slowly collapsed into a puddle of blood.

The demon under Fang Tong wasn't any luckier, and its stomach was easily split open. Its innards completely spilled out...

Fang Tong never expected she would encounter such a terrifying event and she promptly fainted.

However, this bastard didn't seem to enjoy playing with women who had passed out, and deliberately used something pungent to rouse her. He didn't have to intentionally inhibit her soul remembrance, and directly used brute force to rip apart her clothes...

"No... release me... please let me go..." Fang Tong was a young lady and had never encountered something like this before. She was already so scared that she was crying without sound.

Her crying please weren't of any use and soon, a disgusting scene occurred in this terrifying underground passage. As for this bastard, it seemed like he wanted to vent all the anger he had built up over the past few days on this eldest young lady of the Elemental Sect...

.....

.....

Inside the old hall, Chu Mu rode on his Night Thunder Dream beast and hid on top of a pillar which the top half had been split off. He seemed to have entirely melded into the darkness.

His eyes were sharp and cold and he could look down on the four people inside the old hall.

When Chu Mu discovered that the four people were somewhat split up, a cold smile rose on his face and he used soul remembrance to tell Ye Qingzi and Dong Qing: “Release!”

Ye Qingzi and Dong Qing had already summoned their Water Moon and Violent Unicorn Water Beast. Once Chu Mu’s order was given, these two water type soul pets simultaneously began fermenting their techniques!!

“Hua~~~Hua~~~~Hua~~~~~~~~~~”

Suddenly, the upper part of the old hall began to violently tremble. Immediately following, the fierce battering sound of flowing water could be heard!

“What happened?!”

The old hall immediately began to shake and Yu Jia and the three others all let out expressions of panic.

“Don’t tell me that Cyan Hidden Dragon has come out of its pupa?”

Lu Ying said as he was incomparably astonished. From the information leaked to Yu He, that Cyan HIdden Dragon was very likely in the vicinity, and it was definitely capable of causing such a large disturbance.

“Dida~~~dida~~~dida~~~~~”

Suddenly, the upper parts of the wall began to drip liquid. The frequency of the falling liquid grew increasingly more until finally it was like a large rain falling.

Yu Jia raised his head and his face instantaneously turned pale. He yelled: “Summon your water type soul pets!”

Just as Yu Jia’s voice faded, a flying waterfall suddenly came down from the hole above the old hall. It was like a river of water than violently poured into the old hall!

“Longlonglonglong~~~~~~~”

The powerful flood caused the entire old hall to severely shake. As for the flow of water, it caused the surroundings of the old hall to be knocked away!

“Crap, they intentionally collected water before stockpiling it, and then waited for us to enter here!” said Yu He as he gritted his teeth!

Chapter 266: Fighting Yu He in the Old Hall

Yu He's face became extremely unsightly, because Chu Mu's actions were completely unpredictable. Moreover, the four of them clearly did not have water type soul pets, and so this sudden flood caused them to descend into panic.

With the engulfing flood, the four of them that were already split up and promptly picked a passage in the old hall to head to, as none of them wanted to be washed away by the impact of the water.

"Don't split up."

Loudly yelled an Elemental Sect member. Only, his voice was swallowed by the rumbling sound of water. The large amount of stocked up water flushed in; its force of impact was considerably terrifying, and regardless if he had summoned a soul pet, he was ultimately pushed into one of the various old hall passages by the surging water.

Using the flowing water, Yu H e and the three others were forced into different side chambers or hidden rooms. As for Chu Mu and them who had already done their preparations, they naturally went looking for the lone Elemental Sect soul pet trainer first, and took advantage of the chaos to get rid of them.

The volume of water violently rushed forth ,and it quickly submerged 1/3rd of the old hall vertically. Even with a water type soul pet, since the flowing water was violently surging, the

movement of the water would push the water type soul pet to another location.

The various passages leading to the old hall had previously been dug by Chu Mu, and they all went downwards. The moment one of them was pushed to the edge, the soul pet trainers that didn't react would be pushed down the passage directly to the very bottom.

"Ye Wansheng, the passage at your location leads to a lone soul pet trainer. You and Dong Qing need to kill him as fast as possible. Don't give him any chance to catch his breath." Chu Mu immediately said to Dong Qing and Ye Wansheng.

Dong Qing and Ye Wansheng were already prepared, and after they targeted a lone soul pet trainer, they didn't hesitate at all. Dong Qing rode on his Violent Unicorn Water Beast, while Ye Wansheng rode on his Sword Beetle. The two of them charged together towards the soul pet trainer that was forced into the side chamber.

"Qingzi, have your Water Moon continue to create a current, and push the water into the passage on your left. Confine the two of them." Chu Mu said to Ye Qingzi.

Ye Qingzi's greatest advantage was that she had an eighth phase fourth stage water moon. In this sort of fighting environment, the Water Moon was of crucial use. As long as Ye Qingzi had her Water Moon stand at the entrance to the passages that led to the side chambers and unceasingly poured surging water into them, the two people forced into the side chamber would definitely be battered by the surging flood.

“If you’re going to kill Yu He, you must be careful.” Ye Qingzi knew that Chu Mu was definitely going to fight Yu He and specially reminded him.

Chu Mu nodded his head and said: “If you find that you can’t confine the two of them any longer, choose to run towards your brother. Don’t force yourself.”

“Ok.” Chu Mu’s stockpiled water had a limit, and he could not completely fill the entire old hall as well as the dug out passages to the side chambers.

When the volume of water gradually decreased, Ye Qingzi was like a mermaid, as she jumped into the rushing water with her Water Moon. She swam to the passage location of Lu Ying and the other Elemental Sect member.

“Treasure Drop!” Ye Qingzi gave an order to her Water Moon!

Wherever there was water, it was the Water Moon’s domain. When the Water Moon chanted its incantation, several water droplets suddenly began floating in the space in the old hall that hadn’t been submerged yet. These water droplets were sparkling and clear. In the darkness, they radiated the Water Moon’s lustre, and were like pearls floating in the air as they numbered in the thousand!

A transparent arm gave a light wave, and the water pearls in the air above the rapidly surging water in the old hall were completely

under control. When the level of water began to descend as the water rushed downwards into the passages, these water pearls began to unceasingly link together, transforming into an enormous water pearl that flew at that passage!

This water pearl didn't have any real attack characteristic and moreover, it wouldn't deal any damage to soul pets or people. However, it was able to expend the opponent's physical strength and fighting strength to a large extent. If the entirety of this water pearl attacked an eighth phase commander, it would be able to consume ⅓ of its physical strength,.

Ye Qinzi didn't use a direct attack method, and used the unique topography to adequately exhibit her Water Moon's superiority. She unceasingly released these kinds of weakening abilities and firmly confined Lu Ying and the other Elemental Sect member into the deepest side chamber that they had been forced into.

Chu Mu, who was riding on the Night Thunder Dream Beast and hidden on top of the broken pillar had already targeted Yu He, who had been pushed into a hidden room by the torrential wave.

Yu He possessed a water type soul pet, but under the surging torrent, his reaction was still a little too slow. By the time he summoned his water type soul pet, he had been pushed into the hidden room that Chu Mu had already prepared beforehand.

It probably was best to say that Chu Mu wasn't adept at water fights, so when Yu He was pushed into the hidden room, Chu Mu intentionally waited for him to remove all the water before he rode on his Night Thunder Dream Beast inside.

The hidden room was extremely dim, but the space was enough. When Chu Mu entered, he instantly saw the dripping wet Yu He.

Yu He previously didn't summon his soul pet in time nor did he chant a soul technique incantation. This flood battered him into an abnormally difficult state. Yet, when he saw Chu Mu come to kill him, he rapidly grew calm, and his eyes carried a slight malevolence as they stared at Chu Mu.

"Hmph, it seems you've been waiting for me here for a long time. I'm really curious; you clearly already found the Cyan Hidden Dragon, yet you for some reason didn't collect the reward. Could it be that you plan to kill me here?" Yu He chanted a water type incantation and removed all the water from his body. He slowly collected all the removed water into his hands and formed a slightly muddy ball of floating water.

"Pretty much." Chu Mu jumped off the Night Thunder Dream Beast. He indifferently chanted an incantation, and he summoned the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Mo Xie in front of him.

"It's still these two warrior rank soul pets? If you don't have any stronger soul pets, the person who dies today will definitely be you." Yu He didn't show any signs of panic, and after he crushed the ball of water in his hands, he also chanted an incantation, summoning his seventh phase fourth stage Sturdy Rock Guard, which took the most advantage of the topography!

When Chu Mu was in Colored Sky City, Yu He's Sturdy Rock

Guard was at the seventh phase third stage, but now it had reached the seventh phase fourth stage. Nonetheless, from its physique, it probably hadn't undergone strengthening for now.

Chu Mu originally planned on having the Ghost King with ample defense deal with Yu He's Sturdy Rock Guard. However, due to a series of consecutive events, Chu Mu didn't have a chance on purchasing any spirit items that could strengthen it. Thus, it was still at the fifth phase ninth stage.

There was a huge difference in strength between a fifth and sixth phase. Without reaching the sixth phase, even if the Ghost King was a monarch rank, it still could be killed by the Sturdy Rock Guard, which neared the monarch rank after strengthening.

Mo Xie's attacking strength was the strongest and at the moment, it was only by relying on Mo Xie that could he beat the powerful Sturdy Rock Guard, whose defense had reached the eighth stage.

"Let me see what skill you have!" wantonly laughed Yu He.

The sound of laughter echoed around the sealed damp chamber. The soften layer of soil was suddenly blown apart as several tens of incomparably tough tentacles shot out of the ground like ground snakes. They flew towards Chu Mu and his soul pets with speed!

Chu Mu had expected Yu He to have already summoned his Hundred Tree Female Demon and to have hidden it in some place in the hidden room.

“Night, Night Dance!” Chu Mu immediately had the Night Thunder Dream beast use its dodging technique.

Chu Mu’s soul remembrance was linked with the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s thoughts. Through his soul remembrance, he was able to target the direction of the wood branches flying at him. The Night Thunder Dream Beast, using Chu Mu’ soul remembrance targeting, completed the most perfect dodging and quickly the several tens of wooden branches lost their attacking direction. In the dark black hidden room, they transformed into serpentine whips that randomly began slapping about.

“Devil Tree, Root Twist!” ordered Chu Mu.

Although the hidden room wasn’t small, the Hundred Root Female Demon’s wooden branches were rather terrifying. Practically in every area of the room was a wooden branch twisting about. In such a way, the entire area of battle was pretty much being controlled by Yu He and forced Chu Mu’s soul pets into an extremely difficult situation.

Wood type against wood type. The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was no longer the Devil Tree Battle Soldier from two months ago. Its high rank demon wood roots were like small life forms that quickly covered the entire dark hidden room and coiled around the Hundred Tree Female Demon’s wooden branches.

In a short period of time, the hidden room was practically covered by wooden branches and roots. It was like a large group of

azure red colored wild pythons engaging in a chaotic battle with a group of ashen blue colored snakes in a subterranean nest.

"Demon Wood Spike!" Yu He's Hundred Tree Female Demon clearly could simultaneously use techniques. As its branches were being coiled by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's roots, several incomparably sharp demon wood spikes grew out from its body and pierced towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

The demon wood spikes flew across with abnormal speed. From its black tips it was possible to determine that there was a certain amount of poison on the demon wood spikes!

The Hundred Tree Female Demon's main attribute was wood, while its auxiliary attribute was vine. Vine type soul pets happened to always possess poison. What made people most annoyed was that its wooden branches and vines that emerged endlessly, and the most terrifying vine type soul pets could even restrict over a hundred soul pets in one breath!

"Dual release, Wooden Cyclopentadiene!" Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier wouldn't lose to other soul pets, however, when it came to wood type techniques. It had also trained the dual release ability to perfection.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier opened its mouth, and immediately spat out several unique seeds. These seeds landed directly in front of it and after entering the soil, they rapidly grew. In a short short period of time, they formed a wooden tree wall that completely stopped the demon wood spikes.

Triple release, Wood Finger Prison!

“Ao~~~~~~~”

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a roar, and as the Wooden Cyclopentadiene was still growing, it abruptly swiped its palm fiercely into the loosened ground. Its ten wooden fingers quickly submerged underground...

“Pu pu pu~~~~~”

The Hundred Tree Female Demon also planned on doing a third release; however, Yu He didn’t expect Chu Mu’s warrior rank Devil Tree Battle Soldier to also be able to do a triple release. What made him even more surprised was that the third release speed was even faster than his Hundred Tree Female Demon.

Chapter 267: Shockwave Kill, Nine Tail Hammer

Ten wooden fingers quickly sprouted out of the loose ground, gathering above the head of the Hundred Tree Female Demon, which was still channeling its third technique, when it covered over the Hundred Tree Female Demon's body.

The Hundred Tree Female Demon had never seen such wood type technique before. Dodging too late, with a heavy yank from the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, the Hundred Tree Female Demon was immediately pulled to the ground.

Though the Hundred Tree Female Demon had the poisonous effects of vine type and powerful restrictive abilities, in terms of power, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier clearly was stronger. Very quickly, the Hundred Tree Female Demon was pulled to the ground, causing its body to clearly show marks of constriction.

"Ice Wizard!" Yu He didn't reveal any signs of panic, quickly finishing his incantation and summoning his seventh phase fifth stage Ice Wizard in front of himself.

The moment the Ice Wizard appeared, the temperature in the entire secret room fell, causing frost to quickly spread.

"Freeze!" Yu He sent a command to his Ice Wizard.

The Ice Wizard opened its giant, fang-ridden mouth and spewed

out an icy gust of cold air. This cold air covered over the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wooden fingers and made it brittle.

Losing the unique flexibility, pulling against the wooden fingers would easily shatter them. Under the brute force of the Hundred Tree Female Demon, its ten wooden fingers were quickly all snapped!

"Ning, come out." Chu Mu quickly read out an incantation, and retracted his Night Thunder Dream Beast back into his soul pet space, while decisively summoning the Ice Air Fairy in front of himself.

The Ice Air Fairy also controlled Towering Ice. Having two organisms with Towering Ice in the room caused the room's temperature to drop even lower. The edges of the room were all filled with frost, causing the moist grounds to become frozen mud.

The contest between Ice Air Fairy and Ice Wizard were completely one of ice type against ice type, but the Ice Air Fairy was five stages lower than the Ice Wizard. The only way the Ice Air Fairy could beat the Ice Wizard's advantage in ice type techniques was using its very adept ice type capabilities as well as superior ice type control.

Seeing that Chu Mu summoned his Ice Air Fairy, he decisively sent his Sturdy Rock Guard towards Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy.

Rock type was a perfect counter to ice type. Though the Ice Air Fairy could still deal with the Crafty Rock Guards easily, those

Crafty Rock Guards were not strengthened. If it met a true rock type soul pet, other than slowing its movement, it could barely cause any other damage.

On the other hand, once the rock type soul pet casted an incantation, then its Sturdy Rock and Crystal Rock, which were tougher than Ice Crystal, could easily shatter an ice body's defense.

Yu He understood this battle advantage, and Chu Mu naturally also understood his disadvantage, so how would he let Yu He's Sturdy Rock Guard near his Ice Air Fairy?

"Mo Xie!"

Chu Mu yelled, telling Mo Xie to remove her Pitiful Appearance.

"Wuwu~~~~~~"

It had been a while since Mo Xie had battled to her heart's content. The nine royal flames around Mo Xie started spinning at high speeds, suddenly becoming a growing royal flame tornado that blew at Mo Xie's silver fur, causing it to lift in the gusts.

The royal flames' temperature was immensely high. After the two Towering Ice soul pets lowered the temperature, Mo Xie's domineering royal flames clearly raised it back up. The narrow room was completely lit up by the two different colored flames!

Demon aura poured out and, within the blazing royal flames,

nine silver fox tails fanned out majestically, as Mo Xie's body underwent a change. One of the slanted and incomplete pillars was even shattered into powder by one of Mo Xie's tails because it was in the way!

Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox!

The powerful monarch aura immediately shrouded the secret room. Within the rolling flames, a silver and proud body stood with emotionless, cold silver eyes, displaying the powerful aura of a superior soul pet!

Seeing Chu Mu's little silver fox change, Yu He's eyes went wide. He would never have thought the little demon that relied solely on speed to annoy his Sturdy Rock Gurad would transform into such a rare and powerful soul pet within a moment's notice.

Yu He couldn't tell what the full name of this firefox was, but from its otherworldly arrogance and aura, he could feel the dominance and power of this monarch rank soul pet!

Mo Xie's attributes didn't truly reach monarch rank, yet the beyond top tier commander rank talent in fire, beast, and demon type, beyond top tier commander rank talents made Mo Xie almost without a weakness!

Yu He laughed coldly. This cold laugh also had a jealousy that accompanied the discovery of such a perfect soul pet in Chu Mu's possession. Yu He had guessed before that, since Chu Mu could contend with Qing Li and Zhang Qin, his strength definitely wasn't

what it appeared to be. But, to any soul pet trainer, a Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox like Mo Xie was always the most extravagant wish of any ambitious soul pet trainer!

"Mo Xie, Nine Tail Dragon Obliteration!" Chu Mu sent a command to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie's speed was fast as wind. When she stepped forward, she only left a fox afterimage in the blazing royal flames before disappearing from her place!

The absolute speed of a demon was something none of Yu He's soul pets could match. Mo Xie directly broke away from Yu He's soul remembrance lock on and, as if she was teleporting, she suddenly appeared behind the clumsy Sturdy Rock Guard!

Mo Xie's tails were very long, but these tails never impeded Mo Xie's movement at all. Just opposite, these nine tails that were even more nimble than arms could make constant changes as Mo Xie moved, ready to defend or attack at any point.

At this moment, Mo Xie's nimble body was behind the Sturdy Rock Guard's back while its nine glamorous tails were like ribbons, wrapping around the Sturdy Rock Guard's muscular and rocky body. The Sturdy Rock Guard was just about to cast Ground Stamp to send Mo Xie back, but it was too slow.

Its heavy body was wrapped up tightly by the softened Inferno Fox nine tails. The moment the Sturdy Rock Guard gathered up rock type energy and was about to step down, it was lifted off the

ground, causing its Ground Stamp to step in thin air.

“Crystal Rock Armor!”

Yu He quickly realized that this Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox was a very cold-hearted killer, so he quickly casted a seventh rank soul technique, putting the effects of a Crystal Rock Armor on the Sturdy Rock Guard!

Yu He’s Sturdy Rock Guard’s defense was already at the eighth rank. With this Crystal Rock Armor, its defense was even stronger!

Mo Xie’s tails started churning, becoming nine dragons full of destruction, but with the increase of the seventh level Crystal Rock Armor, Mo Xie’s Nine Tail Dragon Obliteration clearly couldn’t truly affect this obscenely well-defended organism.

“Nine Tail Hammer!”

Seeing that the Nine Tail Dragon Obliteration couldn’t completely break through the Sturdy Rock Guard’s defense, Chu Mu decisively made Mo Xie change her nine tail technique.

The nine fox tails stopped grinding and again became soft and flexible ribbons that tightly wrapped the Sturdy Rock Guard’s body!

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~”

Mo Xie's body went taut as the roots of her tails suddenly exploded with frightening power, forcibly drawing a powerful arc with her nine tails, heavily slamming them into the ground!!

"Beng!!!!!!"

The Sturdy Rock Guard's body was unbelievable heavy, and the true power of the Nine Tail Hammer was shock. When such a sturdy body fell, even the rock formations within its body would probably start cracking with the shockwave!

Yu He's face became very ugly. The seventh rank soul technique Crystal Rock armor's addition now instead became a hard object against which the Sturdy Rock Guard could get shaken on. What made his heart sink even more was, after that shock, his Sturdy Rock Guard clearly suffered inner wounds.

Yu He was adept at playing tricks and making plots. He could dance the game of thrones easily, even using many methods to gain anything he wanted.

But in straight up combat, his scheming couldn't be displayed fully. Furthermore, fighting definitely couldn't be won only by scheming. Only those who truly constantly fought could have the keenest battle instincts.

In battle instincts, Yu He was clearly inferior to the battle madman Chu Mu!

Another incantation sounded as Yu He knew, after his Sturdy Rock Guard suffered that shock wound, it couldn't truly compete against the powerful Royal Flame Nine tail Inferno Fox. He then retracted it and summoned another soul pet.

Though Yu He was one of the Elemental Sect, his soul pets weren't purely elemental. Under the protection of the Ice Wizard, Yu He quickly finished his change between soul pets!

Yu He's soul pet symbol was very strange. Especially when it was carved into the black dirt wall, its symbol looked as if it merged into the black mud, creating a portal where a new body was produced from the mud.

Eight bone legs first reached out of the symbol, showing a feeling of recklessness as well as malevolence that came with being unshackled.

The body seemed to perfectly take up the entire summoning symbol, causing the symbol to slowly become the body, or rather, become the ancient runes engraved on the back of the body.

Evil Bone Devil Spider!

Evil Bone Devil Spider had a human face on its abdomen, and magical engravings that symbolized death on its back. The Evil Bone Devil Spider's body was completely a white skeleton. The body, not covered by a single scrap of meat or skin, gave off the most direct feeling of death. When it was still, it made one's hairs

stand on their ends.

Evil Bone Devil Spider: Beast World (Departed Spirit World) – bug type(corpse type) – Devil Spider species – Evil Bone Devil spider – commander rank

Its pale white bones started moving. Its eight bony legs had very quick movement speeds, and relying on the dark and rocky surroundings, it put its abnormal movement to use.

Chapter 268: Corpse Diagram, Corpse-Like Decay

Seventh phase eighth stage commander rank soul pet – Evil Bone Devil Spider. Its speed completely outshone the clumsy Sturdy Rock Guard. Very quickly, this eight legged half beast half demon cast its strange technique!

The symbol that symbolized death on its back glowed with a strange light. A ball of deathly aura surrounded it, bringing out its deathly nature even further.

Suddenly, the Evil Bone Devil Spider jumped up, extending its body and eight bony legs towards Mo Xie!

Its body completely stretched out in mid air. At the same time, the ball of deathly aura projected an image into the air, the exact image of death that was imprinted on its back. When its bony body fell, it felt as if this scary devil spider was stepping on a diagram of death, as it pounced towards the living!

“Young master, this is a corpse type technique. From now on, don’t let your little fox touch it, or else, all its live skin will immediately decay, and if the entire diagram shrouded you, then even the flesh within the skin will become corpse-like, losing all its life force!” Old Li’s voice floated into Chu Mu’s mind.

Chu Mu had just learned of the terrifying nature of this Evil Bone Devil Spider’s technique, so he decisively let Mo Xie cast her Nine Tail Confuse!

Her nine tails opened up like clouds, floating slowly. As they did this, Mo Xie's body had already appeared twenty meters away.

Nine Tail Confuse's illusionous tail curls were very soft, as if it twere running water. Even if it suffered a tremendously powerful attack, it wouldn't cause any harm.

But what made Chu Mu very confused was, when Mo Xie cast Nine Tail Confuse to dodge the Evil Bone Devil Spider's Corpse Diagram, one of Mo Xie's tails seemed to have touched the edge of the corpse diagram. Her normally fluffy silver fur actually immediately started falling off.

The frightening power of corpse type energy quickly spread and soon, Mo Xie's entire tail's lower end was furless, and seemed completely grey.

"I've said not to let it even touch!" Old Li screamed at Chu Mu's mental world loudly.

This was also Chu Mu's first time dealing with a soul pet of corpse type, so he immediately told Mo Xie to back further away as his brain worked swiftly, thinking of a counter strategy.

"A corpse type is quite scared of light type soul pets. Because they don't have blood in them, your little fox's Blood Flames are very hard to make use of. Normal flames also don't work well on them." Old Li's voice continued.

Chu Mu furrowed his brow, not knowing what to do with Yu He's corpse type soul pet at the moment.

Yet Yu He, seeing Chu Mu's Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox showing signs of retreat, had a smug smile slowly float onto his face.

Yu He knew that the Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox was very quick. If he truly wanted to attack it, it would probably be very difficult. Taking this opportunity where Mo Xie backed off, he commanded his Evil Bone Devil Spider to directly leap towards Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

The fight between the Devil Tree Battle Soldier and the Hundred Tree Female Demon had already lasted a long time. The Hundred Tree Female Demon's attack strength and restrictive abilities were clearly much stronger than the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Yet, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's defense and power caused a great headache for the fragile Hundred Tree Female Demon.

At the very beginning, because of the appearance of the Wood Finger Prison, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had created a constant barrage of wood type techniques, forcing the Hundred Tree Female Demon to constantly hide to dodge.

After that, the Hundred Tree Female Demon's advantage of four stages slowly showed itself. Under the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's fierce attacks, it slowly found back the balance of the battle, and

with its powerful restrictive vines, it controlled the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, giving the Devil Tree Battle Soldier many wounds.

Only with its body wounded could the importance of Life Force Absorb be shown. In the constant process of fighting, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier constantly absorbed the life force of the opponent, using Life Force Absorb, to replenish its own.

Constantly remaining at a peak status, yet rendering the opponent weakened due to the life force loss, every time the Devil Tree Battle Soldier used it, it gained a greater advantage, completely suppressing the powerful Hundred Tree Female Demon.

In every battle, a soul pet trainer had to care for all of his soul pets. Before, when Yu He found that Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier had Bloodsuck, his face went dark.

One had to know that, just two months back, this Devil Tree Battle Soldier of Chu Mu's was just a bundle of sticks, something that his Hundred Tree Female Demon could easily defeat.

But now, in such a short time, not only did Chu Mu raise its phase to seventh, he even strengthened its wood type to near monarch. The craziest thing was, he even granted his Devil Tree Battle Soldier the Bloodsuck technique. This Devil Tree Battle Soldier was virtually invincible.

Yu He felt that his Hundred Tree Wood Demon was no longer the match for this Devil Tree Battle Soldier's match, so he decisively

let the Evil Bone Devil Spider come to the battlefield over there to help!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier couldn't possibly dodge like the Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox, and Yu He precisely wanted to exploit this. As long as the Evil Bone Devil Spider could near the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body, Yu He could make Chu Mu's annoying Devil Tree Battle Soldier into a pile of dead wood instantly.

"Devil Tree, careful." Chu Mu decisively changed his battle tactic, letting Mo Xie throw fire type techniques from afar to suppress the Hundred Tree Female Demon, and not letting it interfere with the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, thus letting the Devil Tree Battle Soldier fight the Evil Bone Devil Spider.

No matter if it's a powerful beast type or a quick demon type, in front of a wood type soul pet, its powerful attacks or swift dodges were rarely useful. This because to real wood type soul pets, within fifty meters of them, there was always wood type soul pet weapons and traps ready. If the beast type and demon type soul pets couldn't near the wood type soul pet's body, they would definitely be beaten to a pulp.

Yu He clearly recognized this, so he didn't directly let the Evil Bone Devil Spider attack the Devil Tree Battle Soldier directly, but instead let it, as a bug type soul pet, use its control of the ground to burrow into the ground and disappear into this moist room.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier also very preemptively rooted itself into the ground, preventing the Evil Bone Devil Spider from

crawling straight to him.

Chu Mu himself also let out his soul remembrance, wanting to lock onto his Evil Bone Devil Spider. However, it clearly had casted some technique that could avoid even Chu Mu's soul master level soul remembrance.

Seeing Chu Mu being somewhat helpless Yu He smiled coldly, while his eyes unwittingly glanced upwards.

Right above Yu He, which was above the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, darkness shrouded the room. Yet within the darkness, a thin black line flashed with a deadly glint.

At the end of the black silk, a bony white spider silently slid down, slowly nearing the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

Suddenly, this corpse-like devil snapped its silk and pounced straight towards the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier couldn't possibly dodge, causing its upper body to almost be completely covered by the eight legs of the Evil Bone Devil Spider. Its terrifying corpse diagram started to melt away at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's lively body.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's green skin immediately became a petrified wood like grey. The frightening corpse diagram's effects quickly deadened the outer Devil Wood Armor layer. As the Devil Tree Battle Soldier struggled, it fell down around him.

After the Corpse Diagram rotted the skin, it started seeping further into the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body. The most important organs were already starting to show signs of grey……

After Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier was completely controlled, Yu He let out an even more smug smile. Every fight, what Yu He loved the most was to see a lively body slowly turn grey under the torment of his Evil Bone Devil Spider, before finally become a lifeless corpse.

Wood Type soul pets' territorial nature was the strongest. On this, Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier did very well. But, Yu He's Evil Bone Devil Spider was indeed strange. Once it completely tangled onto the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, it could no longer continue fighting.

Yu He smiled and specially looked at Chu Mu. As long as Chu Mu started a chant, Yu He would, without hesitation, interrupt Chu Mu, not giving him a chance to retract his soul pet or save his Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Although, what made Yu He feel strange was, Chu Mu didn't even seem to want to do that.

Instead, from the very beginning of this fight, other than chanting a summoning incantation, Chu Mu had not used a single soul technique, even now.

Suddenly, in the dark, Yu He noticed that there was a confident

smile on Chu Mu's face. Yu He could feel that Chu Mu gave a command to his Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

Yu He had a bad feeling already, quickly turning to look at his Evil Bone Devil Spider.

Yet at this moment, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body suddenly sprouted a few unbelievably sharp wood spikes. These wood spikes were very piercing. Even the Evil Bone Devil Spider's bony body was punctured in multiple places!!

Yu He was dazed, not expecting the Devil Tree Battle Soldier to still be able to retaliate.

"Hengheng, lets see who's soul pet dies first!!" Yu He bit down and didn't let his Evil Bone Devil Spider give up its corpse technique!

The effects of death have already entered the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's inner body. With just a few more moments, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's innards will all become corpse-like, making it completely dead.

Yet, corpse type soul pets were known to be unkillable. No matter how heavy of an injury, it wouldn't die. When both attacked simultaneously, Yu He was clear of who would win.

"Of course, you would die." Chu Mu said calmly.

After saying that, Chu Mu immediately sent a command to his Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Absorb!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wood spikes were already burrowed into the Evil Bone Devil Spider's body. This way, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier could rampantly absorb the Evil Bone Devil Spider's life.

"Dumbass, don't you know that corpse type soul pets don't have blood to suck?" Yu He saw that Chu Mu wanted his Devil Tree Battle Soldier to use an absorbing technique and immediately laughed out loud, his face full of mocking for Chu Mu's obvious blind spot in knowledge.

Chapter 269: Corpse Type Is Still The Same, Absorb

Elemental world soul pets didn't have blood, and their life force couldn't be sucked. Departed spirit world corpse types also didn't have blood, so bloodsucking techniques were also ineffective on them.

Corpse type soul pets could be regarded as rare in the soul pet domain and many people judged the Evil Bone Devil Spider as a demon world – insect type – Devil Spider species.

In reality, the Evil Bone Devil species probably was a departed spirit world soul pet instead, because its body was composed of the most pure type of departed spirit world corpse types – the skeleton of a corpse.

When Yu He nurtured this Evil Bone Devil Spider, he had put an extreme amount of emphasis on its corpse attribute, so he was completely at ease about it.

Moreover, Yu He could be sure that in a mere two seconds, Chu Mu's Devil Tree battle Soldier would turn into a pile of dead wood!

Two seconds of time quickly passed. Yu He was only paying slight attention to the fighting state of his other two soul pets, and after he gave them subsequent battle orders, he turned his attention back and was sure that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier had collapsed.

Mo Xie was clearly being restricted by the Hundred Tree Female Demon, especially since its wood branches possessed a certain amount of the water attribute. This caused Mo Xie's fire attribute to be unable to obtain a very large advantage; instead, she ended up being inhibited by the plethora of wood branches.

Mo Xie didn't attack the Hundred Tree Female Demon at a close combat. Instead, she unceasingly attacked it with her demon fire evil flames and blood flames.

The Hundred tree Female Demon's life force had been absorbed by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, and its fighting strength had dropped at least by one third. Thus, in this state, it was hard to use violent attacks and it could only create an unceasing amount of wood type defenses to defend Mo Xie's flames.

On the other side, the Ice Air Fairy and the Ice Wizard's fight was clearly on a stable level. The Ice Wizard had the phase/stage advantage, while the Ice Air Fairy had the higher awareness and control in the fight. The two of them that both controlled early stage towering ice, and could be regarded as equally matched foes where the winner couldn't be easily decided.

Two seconds of time consisted of three or four fifth rank techniques clashing between the Ice Air Fairy and the Ice Wizard whilst controlling tiny specks of ice crystals. Yu He was confident his Ice Wizard wouldn't lose to the Ice Air Fairy and didn't pay it any heed. His gaze fell on the Evil Bone Devil Spider, as he wanted to personally witness the death of this old Devil Tree.

Only, Yu He's expression quickly stiffened because Chu Mu's

Devil Tree Battle Soldier was still standing there and hadn't turned into a pile of dead wood...

"It still hasn't died... it's life force is strong eh, hmph!" coldly harrumphed Yu He.

Wood type soul pets had twice the amount of life force, so the fact that the Devil Tree Battle Soldier hadn't died yet didn't make Yu He too flustered. Instead, he silently assured himself that in another two seconds, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier would definitely be dead.

Only, another two seconds passed and it was still standing firm there. Moreover, there were no indications of death.

On the contrary, Yu He's Evil Bone Devil Spider's eight bone legs which were firmly attached to the Devil Tree Battle Soldier showed clear signs of slackening, and longer seemed as strong as before.

Yu He's face slowly changed because he evidently had detected a large amount of his soul pet's life force being drained!!

"How... how is this possible!" Yu He's opened his eyes wide.

At the moment, Yu He's Evil Bone Devil Spider had slackened its eight bone legs, and its bone body unexpectedly began to fall off of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wood spikes pierced in its body...

Its life force gradually grew weaker, and Yu He could sense that it

was about to die, making his face even more full of shock, panic and disbelief!

"Quickly... quickly come back!" Yu He realized that his soul pet was about to die and regardless of the reason, he had to recall his soul pet, otherwise it would definitely die!

Just like Yu He had chanted an incantation after watching Chu Mu, Chu Mu was staring at Yu He, and when he saw that Yu He had an incantation in his mouth, he immediately released his soul remembrance, locking down Yu He's soul remembrance. He didn't give him a chance to chant an incantation.

A second remembrance spirit master. The discrepancy in levels was extremely evident and his powerful mental soul remembrance poured into Yu He's mind. It cased Yu He's mental world to instantly suffer from an abnormally heavy pressure, cutting off his incantation mid-incantation.

"Spirit master soul remembrance!!!"

The instant Chu Mu released his soul remembrance, Yu He distinctly felt his soul remembrance level. With this difference in levels, it probably would be even harder for him to recall his soul pet.

At the moment, Yu He's face was completely dark. A spirit master meant that the opponent could still summon another soul pet to participate in the fight. Yu He abruptly realized that the young man in front of him had yet to even use his full strength.

They were of the same age, yet he had strength that was so far above his. This was something extremely hard to accept for most hot-blooded young people. Yu He's mind was also like this right now, especially when this person was someone that he wanted to kill badly.

Life force was rapidly drained, and whilst Yu He was shocked at Chu Mu being a spirit master, his Evil Bone Devil Spider was completely sucked of life force by the Devil Tree Battle Soldier!

The Evil Bone Devil Spider was a corpse type soul pet and didn't have any blood or organs. However, no matter if it was a plant world, demon world, or elemental world soul pet, the very foundation of every soul pet was life force. Regardless of what type it was, it was definitely supported by the energy of life force.

Yet, what the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's absorb technique happened to absorb was the life force that every soul pet had. How would Yu He know that Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier had comprehended such a powerful technique?

Yu He ultimately was unable to recall his soul pet, and the Evil Bone Devil Spider finally transformed into a pile of white bones. They dangled down from the wooden spikes on the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body. With its eight limbs all hanging down, it no longer had the malevolent and evil aura from before.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body had been severely wounded by the Corpsify, but as the Evil Bone Devil Spider's life force was

absorbed, the traces of Corpsification slowly returned to normal. Aside from a slight exhaustion of physical force, its body pretty much returned to its normal state.

Upon seeing that Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier had recovered its life force, Yu He grounded his teeth even harder. However, before he could even be angry about its abnormal ability, a powerful soul attack arrived, and his face instantly paled. His two eyes, due to his soul pet's death and his envy of Chu Mu, caused them to turn into two raging balls of flame, illustrating his desire to absolutely transform into a corpse chopped into a thousand pieces.

The moment a soul pet died, the equilibrium of a fight would be disrupted, unless he could summon a soul pet that could fight one versus two.

Yu He clearly didn't have this soul pet, and he knew that he currently could not be Chu Mu's opponent, and thus showed clear signs of wanting to flee.

Chu Mu was standing in the passage of the hidden room and firmly did not give Yu He any chance to flee.

"That bastard Duan Xinhe. I sent you a woman; the only thing you care about is playing with woman. Hurry and get here!" Yu He felt Chu Mu's threat towards his life and was extremely worried in his heart.

This fight would probably end in a few minutes and if Duan

Xinhe didn’t appear, Yu He would definitely die.

……

In the sewer.

“Hahaha, wasn’t it a good feeling? Young missy, I, Duan Xinhe, have never said anything wrong before, right. Look at yourself, you’re so obscene you’re like a little b**tch…” a loud and lewd laugh reverberated around the long passage.

In the pitch-black sewer, the fair naked body of a woman was resolutely pressed against the ground. Her beautiful silk clothing had been ripped into a ragged unrecognizable state. The important parts were completely exposed to the air and were being fiercely groped by two wanton and gruff hands.

The groping wasn’t some affectionate fondling. Instead, it was completely like gripping it with terrifying strength; it was an absolute ***.

There were many spots on Fang Tong’s body where bruises had appeared, clearly because when Duan Xinhe had played with her body, he had used an excessively ruthless explosive force.

Duan Xinhe was unceasingly laughing, wantonly. His naked body was pressed against Fang Tong’s *** as he rode her with self-satisfaction and madness.

As for Fang Tong, who was practically fully naked, the tears had already filled her face. She had descended into a numb and paralyzed state, not knowing if she was still alive of not. The only thing she knew was that she was being violently *** by a beast who could eat her at any time he wished. The moment she resisted or didn't pander to him, she would be beaten up.

Fang Tong was a young lady, and had always lived like a princess. Suddenly encountering this sort of thing dealt a huge blow to her body and spirit. Her entire person was now slightly dead inside, and even when this terrifying man had left her body, she didn't realize it. She staid lying there as her naked body faintly trembled...

"Long long long~~~~"

Suddenly, a rumbling sound rang through the sewers underneath the old ruins, and the sewers began to visibly shake.

Duan Xinhe was arrogantly standing in front of this woman who had been humiliated until she was numb. When he felt this vibration, a terrifying smile appeared on his face and he sneered: "You think that by sending a self-proclaimed smart brat, you'll be able to watch me?"

"Could it be you think I, Duan Xinhe, am truly a stupid person? Listening to your words is like an idiot helping you get rid of those few people. Hmph, why don't you guys fight it out first. It doesn't matter who dies and who lives because in the end you're all going to ultimately feed my children."

Duan Xinhe naturally knew that Yu He was fighting underground with the young generation members from the other factions. Only, Duan Xinhe was a crafty creature and obviously saw that Yu He was using him to get rid of Chu Mu.

Duan Xinhe definitely would kill Chu Mu, but he wasn't stupid enough to do so before finding out Chu Mu's identity. Moreover, Duan Xinhe had always seen Yu He as the masked brat from Underground Palace who was monitoring him. Thus, he would never trust such a person who would make a decision for him.

Chapter 270: Yu He, Dead

“Wu wu~~~~~~” the sound of water splashing was suddenly heard. Duan Xinhe who was pondering the issue of Yu He heard this strange sound.

Duan Xinhe faintly tilted his head down, and saw that the paralyzed Fang Tong had, at some unknown time, gained a bit of energy and had tried to flee.

Duan Xinhe laughed, but didn’t immediately stop her from leaving. Instead, he used a lewd gaze to look down on this crawling naked body of the woman who no longer the temperament of a young lady anymore.

Finally, Fang Tong crawled a few meters, completely due to her survival instinct. Her instincts told her that as long as she left this place and stayed further away from this monster, she would have a chance at living. In truth, she presently didn’t even have the ability to rationally think, because no matter how she crawled, she wouldn’t be able to escape Duan Xinhe.

“Since you’re showing such a provoking position, let’s enjoy ourselves for another round. After all, their fight has yet to completely end.” loudly laughed Duan Xinhe. He stepped forward and pressed down on Fang Tong’s back, clutching her neck before once more inflicting his evil upon her.

Fang Tong was so scared her face contorted a bit, but she couldn’t stop him. Her entire body was being pressed under, and

even her neck had been firmly clutched as her face entered the filthy sewer water.

To Duan Xinhe, the water in the sewers was the most clean type of liquid, and he simply didn't care about this dirty water splashing on this ample and white body. Instead, he laid into Fang Tong while intentionally splashing water onto her.

Duan Xinhe was like a horse rider, as he abnormally laughed. As he laughed, he pushed Fang Tong's face into the water who flailed her arms as she was tortured to the point where multiple bruises appeared on her body. However, she ultimately was powerless... the dirty water flew about and the malevolent laugh struggled against the sounds of weeping. A bastard whose lust had reached its peak, and a young lady who suffered serious humiliation... finally, Duan Xinhe stopped his abuse, but Fang Tong was no longer struggling. She lay in the dirty sewer water and her face was no longer white, but a greenish black color. Her body began to slowly stiffen up...

"That bastard Duan Xinhe, I hope you die!" the rage in Yu He's heart had been completely ignited while he also carried a bit of fear from being near death!

Numerous remnants of flames burned in this secret room that had turned a thoroughly red because of powerful flame techniques. The air was filled with the smell of raging flames.

The remnants of numerous flames happened to be the combination of Chu Mu and Mo Xie's Heavenly Flame Rite. The might of this technique was strong, and although the Hundred

Tree Female Demon had a bit of a water attribute that could resist fire techniques, it was unable to resist the definite kill technique of Chu Mu.

Signs of burning were visible on Yu He's body, and he seemed to be in an abnormally wretched state.

From the start, Yu He had tried to plan it. He knew that Chu Mu and his team were nearby and from the subtle messages of Duan Xinhe, he knew the Cyan Hidden Dragon was very likely to be here.

In order to kill Chu Mu and to obtain the reward, and moreover the Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg, he created this crafty scheme and tried to bring Duan Xinhe here.

With Duan Xinhe's existence, why would Yu He care about what Chu Mu's party schemes. Moreover, in order to curry Duan Xinhe's favor, Yu He sold out his own cousin, Fang Tong, and sent her to the hunting teeth of Duan Xinhe. He caused this young lady of the Elemental Sect to miserably die in **.

Only, Yu He didn't think Duan Xinhe would be so crafty that he still hadn't come out. This caused him to feel panic because if Duan Xinhe didn't appear, he could only face Chu Mu himself.

The problem for the adept at playing tricks Yu He right now was that he wasn't the opponent of Chu Mu, who never stopped fighting. Just now, his Hundred Tree Female Demon had turned into ashe under the opponent's superpositioned Heavenly Flame

Rite. The second soul inflicted wound caused Yu He to realize that he was extremely near death.

Yu He had suffered from two soul injuries, and this happened to be the best time to kill him. Chu Mu definitely wouldn't give up this chance, and promptly ignored his Ice Wizard and had Mo Xie and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier launch an attack.

Yu He grit his teeth and chanted an incantation. Using a weak defence, he attempted to defend against Chu Mu's two powerful attacking soul pets. However, without soul pets, Yu He wouldn't be able to last very long under Mo Xie's claws and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's branches even if he was stronger.

Very quickly, Yu He's defense was ripped to shreds and Mo Xie's Royal Flame Claws passed through Yu He's sixth rank soul armor. It left a deep scar on his stomach.

The flames didn't illuminate the darkness as a faintly discernible outline appeared there. A pair of eyes filled with lustre silently watched Chu Mu and Yu He, almost as if it was waiting for Chu Mu to kill Yu He.

Yu He had miscalculated; he, who was an expert at plotting had completely miscalculated. He completely didn't expected Duan Xinhe to be so crafty, nor did he think Chu Mu's strength would completely surpass his imagination that he would die in the hands of someone in his generation.

In between the fear and panic was squeezed a bit of

unwillingness. He was unwilling to believe that such a perfect plan had failed like this and was unwilling to die before he had reached his true goal. He was unwilling to go before he had obtained the most authority in Elemental Sect and even above this was more unwilling to go before he had obtained that veiled faced woman whom he had only seen once but was thoroughly infatuated with.

"Shua!!!!!"

Ultimately, it was ended by Mo Xie. Her Royal Flame Claws coldly swept across Yu He's neck. In reality, her claws didn't actually touch his neck, but his neck had already begun to separate from his head. The blood that should've spurted out was completely burnt by the blood flames and moreover rapidly spread through Yu He's body.

The flames flew out the wounds on the front of Yu He's body and began burning outside his body. Only Yu He himself could feel what was going on, or perhaps it was better to say that he wouldn't feel it very much longer.

Flames burning his body, Yu He's face was slowly engulfed by the fire. However, as he reached death... just before, Yu He's eyes that should've been filled with despair, revealed a sliver of savageness amidst the pain. It was as if he was still plotting something... very quickly, his body was burnt to ashes, and the entirety of the secret room was filled with the thick burning smell leftover from the Heavenly Flame Rite earlier.

"Tch... your strength really isn't bad. You're able to reach this stage at such an age. This is extremely hard to come by..." a

mysterious voice slowly drifted out.

Chapter 271: Doubled Plot

Hearing this voice float through, Chu Mu's heart sank.

Chu Mu had never heard this voice before, but, he didn't even need to think to know that it was the voice of the evil man Duan Xinhe, who fed a bunch of terrifying Gluttonous Insect Monsters!

Chu Mu's heart sank completely. He hadn't predicted that Duan Xinhe would appear here.

"You don't need to guess. That kid that was burnt to ashes was with me. Originally, he wanted me to get rid of you, but in the end, he just foolishly believed that I would help him kill all of his competition like an idiot." Duan Xinhe slowly walked out of the shadows, where light didn't reach, his sharp face slowly emerging under the reflection of light.

Duan Xinhe's appearance wasn't completely treacherous, but his pair of beast-like yellow eyes made one very uncomfortable. If one looked closely, one would definitely discover that his eyes were completely a copy of the Gluttonous Insect Monster eyes!

Seeing this powerful soul pet trainer appear, Chu Mu could already feel the nearing of the soul reaper, because he couldn't currently fight against a character such as Duan Xinhe right now. In fact, if his invisible soul pet used its full strength, it would be able to instantly kill all of Chu Mu's soul pets.

Now, Chu Mu's heart was pumping, but the more dangerous the

situation, the more he had to stay calm.

An incantation was started. Chu Mu quietly retracted his two soul pets that could easily be killed, his Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Duan Xinhe didn't care whether Chu Mu was summoning or retracting soul pets. He only walked slowly forward with his hands behind his back, circling Chu Mu while stepping over flames.

"Speak up, what identity do you have? A thing like the Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox isn't something just anyone can have. If you didn't get immensely lucky, then some extraordinary character must have gifted it to you." Duan Xinhe wasn't in a hurry to kill Chu Mu.

"Do you want the Hidden Dragon Egg?" Chu Mu said as calmly as he could.

Chu Mu knew, if he didn't say his identity of young master, Duan Xinhe definitely wouldn't even hesitate to kill him.

Yet, even if he said his identity of soul palace young master, to seal off chances of the information getting out, he wouldn't spare Chu Mu either. Since saying anything about his identity meant death, if Chu Mu continued down that topic, he would surely die.

"Oh? You sure you aren't just switching the topic just to live?" Duan Xinhe looked at Chu Mu patiently, occasionally still sticking

a finger into his mouth to lick off the remaining scent of Fang Dan's chest. Chu Mu's heart was already pumping vigorously.

Duan Xinhe was definitely a ruthless fellow. With such a person standing in front of him, it wasn't anything less than if a powerful soul pet like the Blue Galactic Demon Emperor were in front of him. The pressure brought by Duan Xinhe was huge.

But, no matter how powerful the opponent was, Chu Mu could only remain calm, calmly finding a reason for the powerful man to not kill him. Only then can he possibly become powerful enough to compete against him!

"Let me show you something. If you recognize it, then you will know I'm not lying." Chu Mu opened his mouth to say.

As he spoke, Chu Mu secretly opened his spatial ring and, from the rows of tidy soul cores, he found the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon egg lying in the corner.

Chu Mu of course wouldn't give the egg straight up; that was just asking for death.

Chu Mu specially took the membrane outside of the egg that would shed almost every month and handed it to Duan Xinhe.

Duan Xinhe's interest wasn't that great, seeming to be sure that Chu Mu was just delaying the inevitable. However, Duan Xinhe didn't mind wasting his time.

He took over the Hidden Dragon egg membrane and looked at it thoroughly. He didn't seem to find anything special, so he specially put it aside.

Chu Mu put his head down and quickly noticed a long nose extend out of thin air that sniffed at the egg outer membrane.

"First tell me what this is used for." Duan Xinhe asked.

"Isn't this the thing you've been looking for every day?" Chu Mu said calmly."Hehe, me looking for a stupid bug cocoon membrane? I'd rather go and break women membranes down there. Speaking of which, I almost forgot. You seem to have a decent woman by you as well, why isn't she with you right now?" Duan Xinhe's eyes glowed with lust.

Chu Mu knew Duan Xinhe was talking about Ye Qingzi. The plan of water attack was Ye Qingzi's idea, so Duan Xinhe definitely hated her to the bone too.

Yet, from Duan Xinhe's eyes, Chu Mu could understand exactly what he wanted to do to Ye Qingzi. This made Chu Mu have a wave of incredible anger.

"What, you're mad?" Hahaha, I was starting to think you were emotionless, acting so calm even after seeing an evil man like me. Turns out you do have emotions." Duan Xinhe said.

“Your interest in women are at most lust. I admit I worry for that woman. If you harm her, or me, you will die within a year for sure.” Chu Mu calmed his anger and said.

“I say this not to make you scared of the consequences. I only want to tell you that killing me isn’t useful for you. Two reasons. First, the faction behind me could squash you easily, so don’t hope to ever live safely ever again. Second, I can give you the item you’ve always wanted in exchange.

“Don’t harm you and that girl?” Duan Xinhe interrupted.

Chu Mu nodded.

“The thing I’ve always wanted, do you mean the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg?” Duan Xinhe wasn’t stupid, quickly guessing what Chu Mu was speaking of.

Chu Mu nodded again. “The item on your hands is the most outer membrane layer of the Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg.”

Duan Xinhe picked up the dried membrane again and smelled it, as if communicating with his own soul pet.

Before, when the Cyan Hidden Dragon appeared in Li City, Duan Xinhe’s Hundred Mother had made contact with the Cyan Hidden Dragon, so the Hundred Mother could smell the Cyan Dragon’s scent.

The thing Chu Mu pulled out was truly the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg's membrane, so Duan Xinhe naturally could confirm it. He looked at Chu Mu in a special way, not understanding how Chu Mu came to have it. "How did you get it?" Duan Xinhe asked.

"I went looking for it before. The Innards of a God has an entrance only I know the way into. I also know how to take the Hidden Dragon Egg without waking the dragon. The benefit I can provide you is getting the egg." Chu Mu said.

Duan Xinhe started laughing, but it gave off a hair-raising feel. Chu Mu could even feel his Gluttonous Insect Monster starting to laugh eccentrically, strangely similar to its master.

Chu Mu's eyes stared right at Duan Xinhe. At this moment, he was observing Duan Xinhe's eyes. The moment Duan Xinhe revealed a hint of killing intent, Chu Mu would unhesitatingly release the white demonic devil flames inside him and become a half devil. Any other way, no matter he or his soul pets, would easily die.

"Why should I believe you? Only I know where the Cyan Hidden Dragon is right now. I only need to wait slowly before the thing is mine." Duan Xinhe was clearly somewhat convinced already.

In reality, Duan Xinhe did really want to get the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg. But, the Innards of a God aren't that easy to enter. It was still very difficult of Duan Xinhe wanted to truly get it.

"I'll let him live for a while. It's no big deal anyways. Maybe the

kid actually has a way.” Duan XInhe thought to himself.

“If you think you’re very safe right now, then you’re too naive. Don’t you know that your life has already become the key to obtaining the Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg? Since you are a team with Yu He, presumably he told you long ago.” Chu Mu said.

Duan Xinhe looked slightly confused before he turned into a cold sneer, “You think I would believe your nonsense?”

Seeing Duan Xinhe seeming to be ignorant of his wanted status by all the factions, Chu Mu instead laughed.

“What’s there to laugh about!” Duan Xinhe shouted angrily.

“It seems like we’ve all been played by the kid Yu He. Li old City Master split this task in three, respectively manned by the young generation, adult generation, and old generation. The young generation is in charge of finding the Cyan Dragon. Those who find it earn five million gold as reward. The adult generation is in charge of killing you. The person who kills you can have the egg. The old generation are in charge of taming the Cyan Hidden Dragon itself.

“Ridiculous!” Duan Xinhe laughed coldly.

You don’t believe me? I can be sure that the Elemental Sect adult generation experts are here already. Send any one of your Gluttonous Insect Monsters outside to check.” Chu Mu said.

Duan Xinhe didn't completely believe Chu Mu's words, so he indeed sent a patrolling Gluttonous Insect Monster that was underground up to check. After not long, the message quickly was sent, using special sonic communications, back to Duan Xinhe. His face immediately darkened.

"That Yu He truly is a bastard!" Duan Xinhe said with clenched teeth.

Yu He indeed was a terrifying plotter. Not only did he think of using Duan Xinhe to get rid of Chu Mu, he even timed it and sent the message to Elemental Sect. After Duan Xinhe killed Chu Mu, he wanted the people of Elemental Sect to kill Duan Xinhe. This way, the dragon egg would fall in their hands!

Chapter 272: Underground World, Innards of a God (1)

Yu He's plot indeed could be considered pretty perfect. If not for a small change in events, Chu Mu and Duan Xinhe would both be killed by the hands of someone else.

But, Yu He was wrong in estimating Chu Mu's strength and Duan Xinhe's craftiness, ultimately causing himself to die in misery. No wonder the guy still had a smile, as if he completed his greatest wish as he died. Presumably, he knew that Duan Xinhe would kill Chu Mu, and after killing Chu Mu, Duan Xinhe would quickly get caught by Elemental Sect experts, causing both of them to be surely dead.

Chu Mu knew that Duan Xinhe didn't have much of a choice anymore. Yu He's double plot seems to have saved Chu Mu instead, because if he used half devil state, surviving until the Elemental Sect experts arrive shouldn't be an issue.

Of course, Chu Mu found that Duan Xinhe currently didn't have any killing intent. If he could use his wits, Chu Mu was still willing to stall with Duan Xinhe. There was no need to sacrifice his burning soul to resolve this danger.

"Heng heng, bring me to the Innards of the God now, and help me get the dragon egg." Duan Xinhe said to Chu Mu.

Duan Xinhe didn't think that, just because the Elemental Sect people were coming, the kid in front of him would be able to get

away. In fact, if this kid's identity was very high, Duan Xinhe may even be able to use him as hostage.

Chu Mu nodded and let Mo Xie stay with him before pointing to the opening of their room. "Since you already know where the Cyan Dragon is hiding, there's no reason for you to forget that this way down is where the Innards of a God is, right?"

At this moment, Duan Xinhe just smiled and turned around, watching the old site's main hall which the room lead to.

"Kid, I see you're a smart man, and know of the purest kind of trading, one of benefit. However, you should know that you and your woman have killed so many of my great grandkids. I have to take revenge for them, so no matter if you find me the Cyan Dragon egg, I still have to do it. Of course, if you find the dragon egg for me and help me escape the current situation, I can consider letting one of you two live." Duan Xinhe said jokingly.

……

After the water that was specially prepared for Yu He's team pushed them apart, the first elemental sect member that was split was very shortly killed by Dong Qing and Ye Wansheng.

This Elemental Sect member wasn't very powerful. The two people got together and killed him without putting much effort in.

Yet, after Dong Qing and Ye Wansheng got rid of that elemental

sect member, they immediately headed towards the main hall to help restrict the two enemies that were with Ye Qingzi.

Ye Qingzi's soul pets were the most powerful. With her own power, she was able to compete against the Soul Alliance young expert Lu Ying, and the other member, who wasn't that exceptional. Ye Qingzi, in the beginning, could already use the advantage of positioning to make things difficult for them.

After Ye Wansheng and Dong Qing joined, the two elemental sect members' soul pets were quickly slaughtered.

"You guys finish him, let me check on Chu Chen." Ye Qingzi still didn't feel reassured for Chu Mu. After all, Chu Mu faced the strongest and the most adept at plotting, Yu He.

"Quickly go, in case your boyfriend gets into some accident." Ye Wansheng teased.

Ye Qingzi was too lazy to explain anything, so she just immediately rode her War Court Black Beast and ran towards the room Chu Mu was in.

The old site main hall was quite a distance away from the room, and the passageway was the narrow kind. When Ye Qingzi rode her War Court Black Beast about half way, she suddenly felt something was wrong.

"Ting, hide!"

Ye Qingzi said to her War Court Black Beast using her remembrance.

The War Court Black Beast's black fur already merged into the darkness without any technique. After using the technique, it was just like the Gluttonous Insect Monsters' ability to go invisible, disappearing completely in the darkness.

Walking slightly deeper, Ye Qingzi felt that it was even stranger, because she could already hear faint voices of two men talking.

"Kid, I Duan Xinhe have done countless evils, but everyone who knows me well knows, I keep my word. If you do what I tell you to, I'll only kill one of you……" A peculiar voice floated over.

Hearing this sentence, Ye Qingzi's face immediately paled. She hadn't thought that Duan Xinhe would appear here.

At this moment, Ye Qingzi's heart was no longer calm, because, with what Chu Mu did to Duan Xinhe's slave pets, Duan Xinhe wouldn't let Chu Mu off no matter what, and so Chu Mu was in an extremely dangerous situation.

With the situation connected to Chu Mu's death, even Ye Qingzi couldn't hold her normal calmness, with the last remnants of her calmness slowly fading away.

"Zezeze, you better pick yourself, I still want to have a good taste

of that little beauty……” Duan Xinhe’s voice came again.

Ye Qingzi heard this, and her heart went even more into chaos. She was simultaneously worried for Chu Mu, and scared of a cruel expert like Duan Xinhe.

“If you think of such thoughts again, I’d rather die with you.” Chu Mu’s anger rose up again.

“Hahaha, then you pick dying yourself. Seems like that girl’s pretty important to you.” Duan Xinhe suddenly laughed loudly.

“……”

The sounds grew fainter and fainter. In the position Ye Qingzi was in, their dialogue could no longer be heard.

Ye Qingzi sat on her War Court Black Beast at the dark tunnel. At this point, in front of her was a path. She could either continue or back off. However, she didn’t know what to choose, until Chu Mu’s last sentence.

Such emotion was hard to describe. As Chu Mu and Duan Xinhe slowly went away, Ye Qingzi’s emotions were palpable. Unknowingly, streaks of cold were already sliding down her cheeks……

……

Duan Xinhe keeping to his word?

Chu Mu had never believed a single second of Duan Xinhe's nonsense.

In reality, Duan Xinhe was indeed a very un-trustworthy person. Deep in his heart, he was unbelievably dark. He intentionally made Chu Mu pick to know his relationship with Ye Qingzi.

Duan Xinhe had incredible torturing tendencies, so, no matter if Chu Mu could help him find the dragon egg or help him escape, Duan Xinhe would still capture Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi. He wouldn't be in a hurry to kill Chu Mu, because he wanted to specially perform a torturous scene with a girl important to Chu Mu, a scene that would drive him crazy. At the same time as he tortured the woman, he would also be torturing Chu Mu's mind.

Now, Duan Xinhe already knew that Chu Mu cared for the woman very much, so he started to calculate how to unfold his plans!

Duan Xinhe had his own perverted revenge plan, but Chu Mu naturally had his own thoughts too.

From Chu Mu's perspective, choosing living or dying for himself had the same result, but whenever Duan Xinhe had any evil thoughts for Ye Qingzi, Chu Mu could clearly feel a raging fire burning in his own heart……

Duan Xinhe's Gluttonous Insect Monsters' digging speeds were phenomenal. Very soon, Chu Mu and Duan Xinhe was deep into the old site main hall's underground world.

Under the old site main hall was a bunch of hard dirt that was near the hardness of rock. At the beginning, Duan Xinghe's ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster was digging easily, but near the end, it encountered more and more difficulty.

Luckily, the Cyan Hidden Dragon also didn't seem to like living in hard rock. After the Gluttonous Insect Monster dug out some more hard dirt, they slowly found that white silk started appearing within the dirt.

The white silk was growing more and more plentiful. Gradually, the Gluttonous Insect Monster's digging became a matter of clearing out layers upon layers of white silk.

"Innards of a God!!"

As dirt was being dug out, the edges of the Innards of a God that hid underground finally revealed itself. Seeing the countless threads of silk, Duan Xinhe's face lit up with excitement, immediately summoning another Gluttonous Insect Monster to crazily dig at the thick white dragon cocoon on the outside.

The old address main hall was nearly abandoned for a thousand years and buried underground. Yet, under it was a completely hollow space. This hollow space was now taken over fully by the

Innards of a God!!

Because of his uninhibited excitement, Duan Xinhe's two ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters dug very quickly, very quickly digging out a path towards the inside of the Innards of a God.

Entering the Innards of a God, though there wasn't any light, Chu Mu, who had night vision, still saw the most incredible scene.

This Innards of a God wasn't as crazy as the one on Prison Island, covering an entire forest.

This Innard of a God only covered about two kilometers in diameter. However, relatively, not any other soul pet could create such a majestic scene. No wonder many researchers gave the name "Innards of a God" to the countless silk threats created by the Hidden Dragon's metamorphosis!

This indeed was like a massive white organ. Deep within the organ, one could see many vein like white silk threads criss crossing. Some that were thicker created massive pillar like structures that were like bones that held up the body. Yet, within the blood vessels and bones, there were thin silk threads that create the inner tendons and muscles of life……

Chu Mu had once thought that, if such a space were expanded infinitely, would it just become a special world of its own? Would countless organisms that adapt to such ecosystem live here and create a special soul pet ecology?

Chapter 273: Underground World, Innards of a God (2)

“Truly magnificent. This world is such a perfect construct that only a soul pet like the Cyan Hidden Dragon can create it!” Duan Xinhe let out an exclamation of praise. His praise carried the most absolute greed.

Although Chu Mu had seen the enormous Innards of a God before, entering it again was still shocking.

Since leaving Prison Island to now, it had been approximate a year. In this year, Chu Mu didn’t stop his unremitting hardwork towards his soul pets. He also continued to pursue the path of an expert, but even now, he still felt just like he did a year ago facing against a truly powerful creature. Compared against the strength of something like the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, Chu Mu’s soul pets were still too insignificant!

“Brat, do you want really want to obtain the Cyan Hidden Dragon dragon egg?” excitedly said Duan Xinhe.

“Who doesn’t want to obtain it?” responded Chu Mu.

“Soul Alliance has controlled the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon for so many years and already possess numerous split off dragon eggs; as for those that obtained these eggs and nurtured them into an adult Hidden Dragon, all of them are hegemons of the soul pet realm. Soul Alliance’s Lang Ke is the general of the City Under the Heavens and isn’t even thirty years old and has already stepped

into the apex of the soul pet realm. He assumes the position of the southern area's Southern Emperor Kingdom Lord...hahaha, as long as I can obtain one dragon egg, I'll also be able to quickly become someone of those ranks. Very soon, I'll be able to reach it very soon!" said Duan Xinhe in a deranged tone.

Obviously, Duan Xinhe really wanted to obtain the Hidden Dragon Egg and had moreover entered into a deranged state. As they walked deeper into the Innards of a God, Duan Xinhe didn't stop talking. He didn't cover up the greed he had towards the Hidden Dragon Egg and completely divulged it. It was like something he had hidden for many years was finally brought to light; it was like something he had been chasing all his life finally coming to fruition.

Chu Mu still had a Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon splitt off dragon egg in his soul pet ring, but aside from the outer membrane of the egg that would shed off from time to time, there wasn't any indication of hatching. Chu Mu even felt that the split off Hidden Dragon Egg from the Empyrean Cyan HIdden Dragon had no way of hatching, and would forever remain in the state.

If it was like Duan Xinhe had said, possessing a Hidden Dragon Egg would enable one to become an expert who received respect in the entire soul pet realm. Then, he only needed to break free from the crisis this time and find a method to hatch the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg in his hands; subsequently, after slowly nurturing its growth, he would stand in the highest realm and become a formidable person, bringing his dream of stepping onto the apex of the soul pet realm to fruition.

……

The rain had yet to show indications of stopping. Above the Western Street's district, an enormous creature spiralled above the cloud layer. The clouds and mist curled around it, but a mighty and powerful body could be seen!

This was a snowy white feathered beast with three heads and white cloud-like feathered wings. It was built half like a violent lion while also possessing a long and sturdy build. Its pure white feathers combed down its enormous wings and extended down its body of a violent beast that was a combination of a wing type and a beast type. The feathers continued all the way down to its feet where its feet formed several extremely magnificent and majestic feather swords.

Without a doubt, this was an extremely high rank soul pet. It was like a tyrant occupying its territory as it soared through the air. There was no soul pet that could be compared with it.

On top of this soul pet stood a middle-aged soul pet trainer. This soul pet trainer happened to be Soul Alliance's Xiao Ren, who was the leader of eight people.

Xiao Ren's age had yet to surpass 40, but his strength was still much stronger than many old generation soul pet trainers. When he was young, he was also worthy of the title of a young generation peak expert and now at this age, he had surpassed a generation of experts.

“Have those Elemental Sect people obtained news of Duan Xinhe?” Xiao Ren’s gaze apathetically looked down on the entire street district!

The feathered three headed beast under Xiao Ren had extremely tyrannical flying abilities. Many soul pets would find it extremely hard to fly above 3000 meters in the air, yet to this feathered three headed beast, this was merely the beginning of flying.

“Yes, Senior Xiao. Should we wait here or directly head down?” asked an adjacent Soul Alliance soul pet trainer.

“Let’s go down, don’t waste time.” said Xiao Ren.

After speaking, he ordered his feathered three headed beast to swoop down.

The feathered three headed beast’s wings slightly folded, and its body suddenly descended down from the clouds. Its white feathers fluttered against the violent wind as it dropped down from the expansive sky. This mighty appearance gave others the feeling of extreme aggressiveness!

It descended from three thousand meters up very quickly and the moment it landed, an incomparably powerful stream of air engulfed the surrounding 100 kilometers around the feathered three headed beast; its majesty was imposing!

“Xiao Ren!!”

The five Elemental Sect middle age generation experts were planning on entering the subterranean to find Duan Xinhe, but didn't expect Soul Alliance's Xiao Ren to suddenly appear here.

Elemental Sect's five experts had all summoned on their powerful steed soul pets, but in front of the Feathered Three Headed Beast, they revealed obvious expressions of fear.

"Leave this place." Xiao Ren rode on his Feathered Three Headed Beast, and he used a cold gaze to sweep across the five Elemental Sect experts.

"What basis do you have to make us leave?" angrily said an expert riding on a ninth phase Terror Wolf.

Xiao Ren's words had an evident meaning behind it. He definitely had obtained news of Duan Xinhe being here, and him having the others leave this place was clearly because he wanted to solely obtain the benefits of the Hidden Dragon Egg. How could these Elemental Sect experts let him do that?!

"On what basis?" arrogantly laughed Xiao Ren.

Seemingly like it understood its master's intentions, the incomparably enormous Feathered Three Headed Beast gradually walked towards thee five Elemental Sect experts. Its three heads raised high into the air and its six eyes coldly looked down on the five soul pets that fundamentally were not on the same level.

Suddenly, the ferocious mouths on its three heads opened up and instantaneously, three powerful blasts of energies shot out of its three heads. The energy blasts to be a terrifying torrential flame, a bitingly cold and tyrannical wind, and a rumbling rolling meteor!

The three forms of energies didn't actually cause true destructive force, but they terrifyingly orbited the surroundings of these soul pet trainers. The aura of the powerful three energies assaulted them and their soul pets, causing them to feel a wave of mysterious fear!

"Soul Alliance people truly are incomparably hegemonic. Hmph, let's leave!" the power of Elemental Sect was incapable of contending with Soul Palace, Nightmare Palace, Soul Pet Palace and the others. These five experts knew that even if they combined their strength, they may not even be Xiao Ren's opponent and could only swallow their grievances into their stomachs.

Chapter 274: Split Off Reproduction, Cyan Hidden Dragon

Inside the Innards of a God

“Ok, you should tell me now how to obtain a Cyan Hidden Dragon egg.” Duan Xinhe’s eyes turned rather cold.

At the moment, Chu Mu and Duan Xinhe had already reached the center of the Innards of a God. Since it was still an incomparably enormous insect cocoon that was deeply buried in numerous fluttering insect silks, it was exactly like it was hovering in the Innards of a God. This enormous feeling virtually gave people a pressuring aura.

“I’ll go up, you wait here.” Chu Mu lifted his head, and looked at the enormous insect cocoon as he spoke to Duan Xinhe.

Duan Xinhe’s eyes revealed a bit of distrust.

“Do you think that I’ll be able to flee from your soul pets in a space like this?” said Chu Mu.

“I’ll have my children go up with you.” said Duan Xinhe. As he spoke, he had the invisible Gluttonous Insect Beasts follow behind Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn’t say anything and slowly jumped up; bit by bit, he

crawled up to the very top of the enormous cocoon.

Duan Xinhe didn't follow. He dared to enter the Innards of a God, but he didn't dare to face an adult Cyan Hidden Dragon. That was equivalent to suicide, so Duan Xinhe maintained a certain distance with the enormous insect cocoon. At the same time, he had his other Gluttonous Insect Monster maintain its invisible state.

Chu Mu quickly jumped on top of the enormous insect cocoon. Of course, he could feel the invisible Gluttonous Insect Monster beside him. Its smelly stench seemed to be covered by the Cyan Hidden Dragon's hidden dragon aura.

Chu Mu stood at the very top and attempted to use his soul remembrance to enter the enormous insect cocoon. He wanted to know what the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's current state was.

The insect cocoon was a layer of the most perfect defense. It also included a slight mental energy barrier. Chu Mu quickly discovered that it was ostensibly very hard for his soul remembrance to enter the insect cocoon. With this being the case, it would also be very hard to communicate with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

In order to delay for some time, Chu Mu intentionally walked about on the enormous cocoon to both find a spot to put his soul remembrance in and to not make Duan Xinhe suspicious.

"Brat, have you discovered anything? Don't try and play me,

otherwise I'll immediately rip open your stomach!" Duan Xinhe used soul remembrance to coldly threaten him.

"The Cyan Hidden Dragon is a Cyan Hidden Dragon. If it were so easy to obtain a Hidden Dragon Egg, then wouldn't it be the same thing as those servant rank soul pets? Don't worry, let me find that location." said Chu Mu.

Chu Mu remembered back when he was in the Innards of a God on Prisoner Island and used soul remembrance to communicate with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. This meant that there definitely was a spot on the enormous insect cocoon that he could put his mental force into.

"Small fellow, small fellow, don't sleep anymore. Quickly wake up and help me out; don't you see I'm in big trouble? Don't be like last time when I was just about to be killed by those Yang Family bastards before you came out." inwardly prayed Chu Mu as he searched.

Chu Mu could only rely on the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon to kill someone like Duan Xinhe. If he wanted to live, he had to find a way to connect with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

"Young master, what are you doing? Aren't you just presenting your life to hades? Even if the Cyan Hidden Dragon emerges from the cocoon and kills Duan Xinhe, you won't be able to save yourself." Old Li's voice resounded in Chu Mu's mind.

"I know. I'm finding somewhere that I can pour my soul

remembrance into this insect cocoon right now. Do you know where it is?" asked Chu Mu.

"How would I know? Young master, in my opinion, you should try to transform into a half devil and flee to land as soon as possible. Only this way will you have a chance of surviving." said Old Li.

"Old Li, why do I feel like this Innards of a God is a bit strange?" asked Chu Mu.

For some reason, Chu Mu felt like the Innards of a God that he saw in Prisoner Island was somewhat different than this one. It seemed like the white silk color wasn't as pure and was mixed with a slight cyan color. Moreover, the shape of the insect cocoon was a little bit different than the one he saw on Prisoner Island.

"You're speaking as if you've seen an Innards of a God." said Old Li.

"Rubbish, quickly tell me information relating to the Innards of God." said Chu Mu.

"The Innards of a God is a special hibernating method of the Hidden Dragons. It can be regarded as one of the most spectacular phenomenon in the entire soul pet world." said Chu Mu.

"Then will there be a difference every time it transforms into the Innards of a God?" asked Chu Mu.

“No, the Innards of a God that a Hidden Dragon creates will be the same from birth until death; the only question is how large its size is. Scholars call this Innards of a God that remain the same in shape from birth until death as the mark of a dragon. Many scholars and ancient scholars can even discover an Innards of a God from ancient document records, or even through the description an Innards of a God from other people discover which Cyan Hidden Dragon is undergoing chrysalis there. Thus, if you have seen an Innards of a God before, and if you find that the current Innards of a God is different, then that means what you’re looking at is a different Cyan Hidden Dragon.” said Old Li.

“A different Cyan Hidden Dragon? Could it be there are many types of Cyan Hidden Dragons?” Chu Mu immediately felt shocked.

“Don’t you remember those people Duan Xinhe mentioned just now? Aren’t they soul pet trainers that have Cyan Hidden Dragons? These are all people that have obtained Cyan Hidden Dragon splitt off Hidden Dragon eggs.” said Old Li.

“The higher rank the soul pet, the lower its breeding ability is, right? Why can an Empyrean Cyan HIdden Dragon reproduce so many offspring. Won’t this damage the equilibrium in the soul pet world?” asked Chu Mu.

“You don’t understand. First, an Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon is different from a Cyan Hidden Dragon.” said Old Li.

“Different? Doesn’t a Cyan Hidden Dragon refer to an Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon?” Chu Mu showed a puzzled expression.

“Of course not. An Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon is an Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon and a Cyan Hidden Dragon is a Cyan Hidden Dragon. How should I put it. An Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon is unique and unmatched, and is neither male or female. It’s breeding is done through self ***. Afterwards, it splits off its offspring, and this part is similar with many bug type soul pets.”

“However, what’s unique is that the offspring of many insect type soul pets are attached pets, lineage descendants and split off descendants; these are categorized into direct type reproduction, attached reproduction, and split off reproduction. The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's reproduction method is the split off reproduction method.”

“Of course, the amount of split off reproductions of a Empyrean Cyan HIdden Dragon isn’t as terrifying as an ant species soul pet. The dragon species are dragon species after all, and they are powerful and unrivalled; however, they are poor at reproducing.

“The so-called split off reproduction is to consume one’s own life force to create a new life. This life is normally one or two ranks lower than the original. For instance, a commander rank ant species soul pet that split off reproduces, will breed soul pets that are definitely of the warrior or servant rank.”

“The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon is like this too, and the offspring it split off breeds are all called Cyan Hidden Dragons, not

Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragons. The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon can be considered the mother and the father of Hidden Dragons, and its rank is much higher than Cyan Hidden Dragons. The Cyan Hidden Dragons those Soul Alliance experts have all are those low level offspring descendants of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon."

Old Li's words had never been thought of before by Chu Mu. It was no wonder why no expert in Soul Alliance had been able to control the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. It turned out that these split off Cyan Hidden Dragons were much lower ranked than the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon.

"Then, Old Li, the thing inside the insect cocoon is very likely not an Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon?" asked Chu Mu.

"Definitely not. At the beginning I was drawn into this mistake by you, and thought that the Cyan Hidden Dragon in Li City was an Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. Low that I see it, it should just be an extremely strong Cyan Hidden Dragon. After all, if it was a true Empyrean Cyan HIdden Dragon, Li City couldn't be so unscathed now. Moreover, it would be hard for anyone in Li City, including the Li Kingdom Lord to harm an Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. In my opinion, this Cyan Hidden Dragon is very likely one that was split off at an early stage after being controlled by Soul Alliance. After many years of growth, it became an extremely powerful creature before specially leaving its nest to fly to the human world to find its mother." said Old Li.

"Such a powerful Cyan Hidden Dragon that grew so strong on its own..." bitterly laughed Chu Mu. If this wasn't the Empyrean Cyan

Hidden Dragon, then how would he connect with the big fellow inside? After all, the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon recognized him, while this adult Cyan Hidden Dragon probably didn't.

"Si si si si~~~~~~~"

As Chu Mu was in an awkward state, the adjacent Gluttonous Insect Monster let out an extremely hard to hear voice that caused Chu Mu to feel shivers down his back.

Chu Mu knew that Duan Xinhe was hurrying him. If he didn't bring anything of substance, Duan Xinhe would probably instantly kill him.

"It seems that I can only give it my all." Chu Mu's heart sank. In front of a powerful opponent like Duan Xinhe, only by transforming into a half devil would he barely be able to contend against him. He had to attempt to flee to ground level in order to be safe.

Chu Mu closed his eyes and began to communicate with the White Nightmare inside the soul pet space.

The White Nightmare was completely unwilling present, but still had to conform to him. The White Nightmare was obstinate, but it didn't wish to have no one to feed it tasty soul power anymore.

The white demonic devil flames appeared from inside Chu Mu's body...

“Sha sha sha sha~~~~~~”

Suddenly, an incomparably familiar sound came from within the insect cocoon and was transmitted into Chu Mu’s mind!

Upon hearing the noise, Chu Mu’s eyes immediately lit up because the Cyan Hidden Dragon inside the insect cocoon was attempting to communicate with him!

Chapter 275: A Race Against Time

“Shashashasha~~~~~~~”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s voice was just like the little cyan bug once upon a time. This very easily made Chu Mu think again back to the memory-less, powerless little bug with big eyes.

Chu Mu’s soul remembrance was stronger now, and he was more adept in the ways of the beast language. He could somewhat guess what the little cyan bug was trying to tell him now.

The mental voice of the cyan hidden dragon conveyed no emnity. It seemed to be some sort of recognition. However, Chu Mu didn’t understand why this Cyan Hidden Dragon approved of him. Such an approval seemed to be completely based on instinct.

“Young master, have you once met another cyan hidden dragon and had a decent relationship with it?” At this moment, Old Li’s voice transferred in.

“En.” Chu Mu nodded.

“Cyan Hidden Dragons have a special interaction system. Usually, if you gain the approval of one cyan hidden dragon, then your aura will gain the favorable impression of other cyan hidden dragons. However, young master should still be vigilant. Having a favorable impression doesn’t mean it won’t harm you.” Old Li said.

With what Old Li said, Chu Mu finally understood. Presumably the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon left some smell on him that was still there, and other Cyan Hidden Dragons smelled it and, through their special connection, built an instinctual trust for him.

“Cyan Hidden Dragon, I have an invisible Gluttonous Insect Monster beside me. Beneath the cocoon is a soul pet trainer. They want your egg……” Chu Mu used his remembrance to relay this information into the cocoon.

“Shashasha~~~~~shashasha~~~~~~”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon immediately sent out a string of information that Chu Mu only half understood.

Chu Mu could vaguely make out that the Cyan Hidden Dragon was asking how he came into contact with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, and why he had a special Cyan Hidden Dragon mark.

As for the Gluttonous Insect Monster and Duan Xinhe, the Cyan Hidden Dragon didn’t seem to even care about it.

“I met the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon on Prison Island. That time, to avoid the chasing of other people, it became a powerless, memory less little cyan bug that hid by me……” Chu Mu started cursorily reciting his meeting with the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, also mentioning the strange connection between the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon and Mo Xie.

“Shashashasha~~~~~~”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon spoke another string of words, of which Chu Mu had to ponder for a bit before understanding the basics.

“Right now, the person beside me wants to kill me. If you still need a while before completely leaving your shell, then I’m in great danger.” Chu Mu said.

“Shashashash~~~Shashasha~~~~~~~”

“I’ll try, but you best be fast, because I’m not really his match.” Chu Mu said.

……

When Chu Mu was communicating with the Cyan Hidden Dragon, Duan Xinhe was already impatient from the wait. He himself had jumped onto the bug cocoon and looked coldly at Chu Mu, slowly revealing a terrifying killing intent.

“Kid, I don’t have much time to waste with you. Tell me how to get the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg now, or else I’ll tell my kids to kill the girl at the old site right now.” Duan Xinhe said.

“I just sent my remembrance in, the Cyan hidden Dragon is still asleep. Let’s go down. There’s a weak spot on the bug cocoon. If we enter from there, we can get the Hidden Dragon Egg.

“Enter? Hengheng, you think I’m stupid? If I awaken this Cyan Hidden Dragon, won’t I have to die with you?” Duan Xinhe said.

“I’ll enter, alright?” Chu Mu said.

“Good.”

The bug cocoon is the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s strongest defense. This defense doesn’t have any chink in its armor. The weak spot Chu Mu spoke of was made up. He was just trying to slightly waste some time.

After jumping down from the bug cocoon, Chu Mu intentionally said another bunch of things about the Cyan Hidden Dragon that he heard from Old Li, and randomly picked a good spot.

“Right here? You sure?” Duan Xinhe asked.

“Yes, right there. Your Gluttonous Insect Monsters’ claws are even sharper. Try to rip it aside. Don’t use techniques though, they might wake up the dragon.” Chu Mu said.

Duan Xinhe remained suspicious but took Chu Mu for his word and told his Gluttonous Insect Monster to start ripping at the location of the bug cocoon.

The bug cocoon’s most outer layer is a half-solid cocoon silk. This

silk was soft yet hard to cut. The ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster's claws were already at the ninth level, but without any techniques, it could only symbolically ripped a few strands apart.

"Kid, this is the weak spot you speak of?" Duan Xinhe immediately saw the issue, his eyes flaming up with an anger of being lied to.

Chu Mu had already put some distance between himself and Duan Xinhe. White demonic devil flames quietly burned outwards in his body.

"What, you want to escape?" Duan Xinhe started laughing coldly, his eyes shooting ice daggers.

Chu Mu indeed was about to turn half-devil, yet, what was frightening was, he felt a coldness behind his back!!

"A second ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster……" Chu Mu's heart went cold. He could feel the existence of the organism now, and if he made any move, his throat would definitely be ripped apart by it!!

Half devil state needed a short time, too. Chu Mu didn't think that Duan Xinhe was this careful. He had already secretly moved his second ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster forward.

"You've always been playing with me, right? Heng, I've seen through it all along." Duan Xinhe said with an icy tone.

Chu Mu's heart was pumping incredibly fast already. Duan Xinhe's killing intent was overpowering. Maybe in the next second, he would die. A feeling of being this close to death was something that even Chu Mu experienced rarely in the past, especially one caused by a ninth phase invisible Gluttonous Insect Monster……

Chu Mu's mind spun quickly. He needed to stay calm-he had to force himself to stay calm. If he just delayed for some more time, the Cyan Hidden Dragon will escape from its shell. Death may be in the next moment, but Chu Mu had to delay it no matter what. Chu Mu wasn't willing to just die like this!

"I'll show you one last thing. Seeing this thing, you'll know I wasn't playing you." Finally, Chu Mu spoke. If it weren't up to such a situation, Chu Mu definitely wouldn't make such a decision.

"You think I'll still believe your nonsense? Are you going to pull out some shell of the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg next?" Duan Xinhe mocked.

"Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg!" Chu Mu said heavily.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg. Other than using it to delay his death, Chu Mu truly couldn't think of anything else.

Of course, Chu Mu knew that, even if he gave the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg inside his spatial ring to Duan Xinhe, he would still die in the end. Displaying the Cyan Hidden Dragon Egg of course was

to delay as much time as possible!

“Ridiculous, you with the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg? Seems like you truly make me out to be a fool that can be easily tricked.” Duan Xinhe’s face became twisted. At this moment, a powerful gaze of killing intent shot came from Duan Xinhe straight to Chu Mu’s heart, causing Chu Mu’s heart to turn icy cold!

“See for yourself.” Chu Mu took a deep breath and, after making himself calmer, he opened his spatial ring and carefully pulled the egg that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had split.

The cyan dragon egg was the size of two of Chu Mu’s palms. It was even heavier than many high density rocks. From the outside, it seemed just like a cyan pebble was covered in a layer of cyan snake skin, revealing a special scent of a Cyan Hidden Dragon.

“This is……” Duan Xinhe paused, looking completely surprised at the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg in Chu Mu’s hand.

Duan Xinhe’s distinguishing abilities were very powerful. From the soul pet egg’s outer shape to the special aura, Duan Xinhe could immediately judge its authenticity, so the moment Chu Mu took the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg out, Duan Xinhe was subdued.

Waves of ecstasy started hitting Duan Xinhe’s heart. At this moment, Duan Xinhe even forgot to ask how Chu Mu came to have it. His shaking hands were already extended to try to take it from Chu Mu.

Chu Mu was holding the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg, yet his heart felt as if it was convulsing terribly. This was an egg that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had split off. It was the symbol of complete trust from the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon. Yet, Chu Mu was using this trust in exchange for a short extension of his life. Such action clearly made Chu Mu's heart grieve.

Duan Xinhe already extended his hand. That hand was slowly rubbing the dragon egg. His yellow eyes were beaming with excitement, as if he wanted to eat the Hidden Dragon Egg whole. Excitement, greed, and a need for ownership were displayed completely.

"Sisisisi~~~~sisisi~~~~~~~~~~~~"

Just as Duan Xinhe was about to carry the Hidden Dragon egg, the Gluttonous Insect Monster behind Chu Mu let out a string of warning sounds!

Duan Xinhe's reaction was very quick. His gaze immediately locked onto the direction his soul pet was signalling at.

Chu Mu's reaction was even faster. No matter if he could finish his half devil in such a short time, Chu Mu had to escape immediately!

"Houhou!!!!!!!!!!"

Suddenly, a loud roar came from behind Chu Mu's back.

Immediately after, from the darkness, a majestic soul pet covered in black fur jumped out. Its body was a black blur, heavily slamming into the Gluttonous Insect Monster behind Chu Mu.

The ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster didn't detect this organism that could also merge into the darkness. Its small size meant it was immediately sent flying by the black soul pet.

"Chu Mu, quick!!" A girl's worried voice quickly sounded in Chu Mu's mental world.

"Qingzi……"Chu Mu first felt a wave of joy, but it was quickly followed by a wave of worry. But, he couldn't think much now, as he quickly chanted an incantation!

Displacement Specter!

White demonic devil flames abruptly sprouted from beneath Chu Mu's feet. These flames were already sending off clear soul burning effects. When Duan Xinhe was about to mentally control Chu Mu, because of Ye Qingzi's sudden action, when he released his soul remembrance, he clearly felt the soul burning power of the white demonic devil flames!

Chapter 276: White Pupil Burning

White demonic devil fire burned, quickly burning through Chu Mu's body, burning it into ashes!

Duan Xinhe recoiled slightly, but immediately realized that this was the technique Chu Mu used to dodge his lethal blow back in Soul Palace

After using his remembrance to protect his own soul, Duan Xinhe immediately locked onto another location. Indeed, a dozen meters away, a blaze of white demonic devil flames quickly appeared, and with them, Chu Mu's body.

"Qingzi, quickly leave, leave this place." Chu Mu didn't dare to hesitate, immediately summoning Mo Xie.

Ye Qingzi stood to the side of Chu Mu. Seeing that Chu Mu escaped successfully, her beautiful face finally blossomed into a smile.

Ye Qingzi also knew of Duan Xinhe's scariness, immediately retracting her War Court Black Beast to her soul pet space. The War Court Black Beast would very likely be attacked by the Gluttonous Insect Monsters if exposed. If Ye Qingzi didn't retract it, it would definitely die.

"Mo Xie, Heavenly Flame Rite!!" Chu Mu commanded.

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~~”

Mo Xie raised her head proudly, as the two different colored flames started burning on her, quickly forming beams of radiant fire that brightened up the intersecting white silks within the Innards of a God.

“Chong Mei - Heavenly Flame Rite!” An incantation sounded. While Duan Xinhe was still defending the white demonic devil fire from before, Chu Mu started chanting an incantation hurriedly!

While Chu Mu was chanting, Duan Xinhe started as well. A special black energy seemed to have enveloped this Innards of a God, like the embrace of death, giving everyone within an invisible pressure.

Ye Qingzi also started casting an incantation. However, her remembrance was clearly weaker. When the black plague-like substance came over, Ye Qingzi’s face slowly became dark green and her fragile body started wavering, on the verge of falling over.

When Ye Qingzi started showing signs of abnormal weakness, Chu Mu similarly felt the strange energy restricting him, causing his breathing to be laboured and his awareness to be fuzzy.

The fuzzy awareness made Chu Mu’s incantation chanting speed slower and slower. The Heavenly Flame Rite incantation only needed two seconds, but Chu Mu felt that, because of the strange curse upon him, he needed five seconds.

Yet five seconds was enough for Duan Xinhe and his soul pets to kill both Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi.

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~”

Mo Xie seemed unaffected by this strange technique. With a loud call, immediately, bright flames again covered the region!!

A crimson beam and bright red beam fell side by side, creating a magnificent scene within the white criss crosses of silk.

The fire light’s coverage caused Chu Mu to instantly awaken. Seeing that Mo Xie’s Heavenly Flame Rite was about to truly appear, Chu Mu forced himself to finish the last part of his incantation despite the strange power’s influence.

“Chong Mei - Heavenly Flame Rite!”

A white demonic devil fire even stronger than blood flames started burning on Chu Mu. Two fire beams were held between Chu Mu’s palms, as the fire darted three to four meters tall.

Throwing both his hands up, immediately a white beam of light followed Mo Xie’s Heavenly Flame Rite. In a moment, they collided and merged!

Three different flames combined, and there was a clear explosion within the Innards of a God. Right after, the heavenly flame dragon coiled up and brought all of their aura straight into the air.

The two eighth rank fire techniques didn't completely merge. There was still a slight discrepancy in timing, so their powers weren't truly at their peak.

Chu Mu knew this technique couldn't block Duan Xinhe's two soul pets, so when the heavenly flame dragon jumped up into the air, Chu Mu took a breath and quickly grabbed the weakened Ye Qingzi before jumping onto Mo Xie's back.

"Mo Xie, run!"

Mo Xie let out a long call as her paws started burning with flames. Crouching down slightly, she instantly released, quickly disappearing……

"Sousou~~~~~~~"

Mo Xie's instant speed was very quick. Within the fire lit and complicated Innards of a God, one could see only a silver light blinking left and right, up and down, sometimes barging straight through……

Mo Xie's instant speed could reach fifty meters a second. When Mo Xie ran for about four seconds, from within the Heavenly Flame Rite flames came two transparent silhouettes that barrelled out of the fire like a gust of wind, running towards Mo Xie and chasing back quite some distance within a short few seconds!!

“He’s so fast!” Ye Qingzi’s head was cushioned on Chu Mu’s shoulder as she looked, terrified, at the quickly approaching Duan Xinhe and Gluttonous Insect Monster.

Chu Mu, through his soul remembrance, could know where Duan Xinhe was. Duan Xinhe’s two Gluttonous Insect Monsters were incredibly fast. Mo Xie’s greatest strength is instant acceleration. In one minute, Mo Xie could outrun Chu Mu’s fastest soul pet, Ye, by nearly 1500 meters, which is basically half of her total distance.

But, Duan Xinhe’s Gluttonous Insect Monster didn’t seem to have any instant acceleration speed. It’s normal sprinting speed was already the same as Mo Xie’s burst. In other words, Mo Xie’s running could only keep Chu Mu and Ye Qingzi safe for a minute!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s initial speed wasn’t as fast as Mo Xie, but the Night Thunder Dream Beast needed an acceleration process. With Reach for the Midnight Moon, it could reach a maximum of four times its normal full sprint. Four times its speed may be able to maintain distance with the Gluttonous Insect Monster, but Duan Xinhe clearly wouldn’t leave any time for Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast to slowly ramp up.

“Sousousou~~~~~~~~”

Quickly, Mo Xie ran out of the range of the Innards of a God. Chu Mu specially looked at the dug open hole above and said to Mo Xie, “Flame Step!”

Mo Xie’s four paws’ flames started burning even brighter. Her

elegant silver body nimbly leaped on the criss crossing white silks. Every jump, she would lightly tap the vein like silks while shooting herself higher.

"Thank goodness, the Gluttonous Insect Monsters don't have much jumping capabilities." Chu Mu lowered his head to look down and found that, in terms of jumping the Gluttonous Insect Monsters were clearly not as nimble as Mo Xie.

From the hole dug for the Innards of a God, Mo Xie used her Flame Step and jumped quickly to return to the secret room before.

At this moment, the distance between Chu Mu and the Duan Xinhe's two Gluttonous Insect Monsters was finally lengthened.

But, it wouldn't take long before Mo Xie was caught up to by the Gluttonous Insect Monster again, so when reaching the secret room, Chu Mu didn't dare to stay for even a single second, telling Mo Xie to run at her fastest speed!

Mo Xie's minute burst was quickly about to end, yet they were still a distance away from the old site main hall……

"We can't run anymore……" Ye Qingzi looked down the black tunnel behind them and vaguely saw the Gluttonous Insect Monsters' silhouettes just about three hundred meters away.

As if feeling the nearing of death, even the perpetually calm Ye

Qingzi revealed nervousness, her slightly pale face tightly placed against Chu Mu's shoulder……

"Don't worry, just a little longer, it'll be okay." Chu Mu stroked Ye Qingzi's hair and said quietly to her.

Ye Qingzi's eyelids became very heavy. Even she didn't know why. She didn't get hurt in any way, yet her body felt abnormally weak. She even found sitting on Mo Xie difficult, constantly needing Chu Mu to hug her tightly.

Chu Mu knew that Ye Qingzi probably got hit by some technique of Duan Xinhe and wanted to use his remembrance to dispel the plague-like substance within her.

"Shua!!!!!!!!"

Suddenly, a cold claw flew over from behind Chu Mu. The claw was still glimmering coldly in the dark. Because of the narrow space, the walls on each side were also marked by two deep gouges, as if it was trying to cut the entire tunnel in half horizontally!

"Mo Xie, Phantom!!"

With such a powerful and quick attack, Chu Mu's heart tightened as he made Mo Xie cast a evasion technique.

Chu Mu and Mo Xie were connected by heart, so when Chu Mu realized the danger, she immediately reacted. Her silver body

quickly became five images while running!

Mo Xie's Phantom technique had already raised a stage. Five phantom effects meant Mo Xie's evasion was even stronger!

"Shua!!!!!!"

Five silver bodies quickly appeared in the narrow tunnel. When a terrifying ripping power passed over, strands of silver fur fell from Mo Xie's body and slowly floated down……

After dodging the technique, Phantom quickly disappeared. However, Mo Xie's speed burst was at its end, causing her to slow down.

When Mo Xie entered the slightly wet old site main hall, Chu Mu could already clearly feel that Duan Xinhe's Gluttonous Insect Monsters were just two hundred meters away.

"Chu Mu……" Ye Qingzi seemed to have recovered slightly. However, The disgusting cold aura of the Gluttonous Insect Monster caused her face to become paler and paler.

Chu Mu also knew that running was futile, so he just leaped down from Mo Xie with Ye Qingzi in his hands. After putting Ye Qingzi onto the ground lightly, he lightly caressed the lost Ye Qingzi and said calmly, "Hide behind me."

Ye Qingzi looked at the unbelievably calm Chu Mu. His black eyes

were emotionless, but these emotionless eyes made her feel a strange trust……

Suddenly, these black eyes changed, slowly becoming a demonic white!

It was a ball of flame. This ball of white devil fire burned in Chu Mu’s pupil, yet this strange gaze was something Ye Qingzi strangely found familiar.

In the beginning, when Chu Mu was locked out of the stone palace and nearly died coming back, when he was letting off a shivering evil energy, he had the exact same expression!

(apparently the author has some extreme phobia and nearly went into a coma, causing his update to be slowed and his hands to still be shaky with fear..)

Chapter 277: Half Devil vs Gluttonous Insect Monster

Chu Mu's pupils slowly transformed before finally becoming white demonic pupils full of devil flames. These inhuman eyes didn't have any emotions, and were like those of a most indifferent monarch in the black sky. They were insufferably arrogant and full of an evil aura!

His face began to change, as faint white demonic devil flames attached to Chu Mu's handsome face. It was as if it was being molded by some scalding hot white substance and slowly transformed into an ice cold mask burning with pale white devil flames.

This was a flaming face of the most demonic nature. It looked approximately like Chu Mu, but having been possessed by the dark demon, Chu Mu was granted an additional cold and contemptuous arrogance as well as a nefarious character!

Ye Qingzi was stunned. Chu Mu's face was only twenty centimeters away from her, so she happened to see Chu Mu's full demonic and evil change that made her feel as if he had completely changed into a devil lord that controlled souls. It brought about a shock to her heart!!

"This is the strength you've been hiding..." Ye Qingzi's eyes watched Chu Mu closely. At the moment, Ye Qingzi didn't know how to describe the half devil transformed Chu Mu; or putting it another way, she didn't dare to believe that the powerful creature radiating a strange force that was completely different from

humans was Chu Mu!

“Don’t worry, nothing will happen.” said the half devil manifest of Chu Mu.

After transforming into the half devil, Chu Mu’s mouth remained closed and when he spoke, he didn’t open his mouth; instead, a voice carrying some special devil power floated out…

Ye Qingzi couldn’t say anything at this point; she simply didn’t understand what happened to Chu Mu. Was this an evil and powerful devil lord that manipulated white demonic devil flames, or the cold soul pet trainer Chu Mu? Or perhaps it was a combination of the two.

However, Ye Qingzi could be sure that although those two completely different white pupils of Chu Mu didn’t have any emotion, they still possessed rationale. His rationale clearly expressed some resoluteness in his heart.

“Hu hu hu hu hu~~~~~~~”

The white demonic devil flames moved about on Chu Mu’s body. He slowly turned around and brought his long flaming arm down while lifting his other arm slowly. In his hands astonishingly was burning eighth rank white demonic devil flames!

His eyes were like fire, as he looked into the pitch-black cave. Under the indifferent arrogant pupils, the Gluttonous Insect

Monster's invisibility seemed to completely lose effect. Gradually, its figure emerged in the pitch-black passage.

The pale white fire light illuminated the ancient hall and made it incomparably cold. The long arms of two Gluttonous Insect Beast were half rested on the ground in fear. Among them, one of the Gluttonous Insect Beast's was riding Duan Xinhe, whose face was in shock!

Duan Xinhe had done transactions before with White Devil Palace people, and could roughly see from Chu Mu's outer appearance that his transformation seemed to resemble a terrifying monarch White Nightmare!!

Only, Duan Xinhe felt his soul tremble a bit, because this monarch White Nightmare personification was different than a real White Nightmare. Even its aura was much colder than the powerful monarch White NIghtmare, and was completely different from the most pure monarch rank!

"You... what on earth are you!!" Duan Xinhe found it hard to describe the shock in his heart. Having lived for so many years, he had never seen a half devil before. A fear towards an unknown creature manifested from the cold in his soul into his heart.

Chu Mu didn't say anything. He arrogantly lifted the ball of eighth rank white demonic devil flames in his hand and fully released its burning soul aura in this ancient hall!

A cold devil flame aura violently engulfed the area with Chu Mu

at the center!

Finally, Duan Xinhe realized the power of Chu Mu's transformation and somewhat flusteredly jumped off his two Gluttonous Insect Monsters in shock.

"Don't be afraid, his phase and stage is very low. Kill him for me!" Duan Xinhe's vision was very keen, and he immediately saw that although the half devil's rank was extremely high, it was only at the seventh phase ninth stage. Thus, his two Gluttonous Insect Monsters potentially could defeat it.

This was the first time the two Gluttonous Insect Monsters had seen a creature that could truly emit an icy cold that they could feel. Their yellow eyes became abnormally careful.

Suddenly, one of the Gluttonous Insect Beasts launched an attack which speed wasn't inferior to Mo Xie's Instant Assault. What was different than Mo Xie though was that the Gluttonous Insect Beast could use Instant Assault at all times because their normal speed was the equivalent of Mo Xie's burst speed!

"Shua!!!!!!"

Gluttonous Rending Heart Claw!

The Gluttonous Insect Beast's attack happened to head towards the heart of the half devil Chu Mu. Its speed was so fast that it was no longer possible to see the Gluttonous Insect Monster's body,

and the might of its claws created a sonic boom. It caused the aura emitted from Chu Mu's white demonic devil flames to be severed from top to bottom!

The half devil state Chu Mu wouldn't take measured steps like humans when fighting because the half devil's movement was exactly like a specter: strangely floating!

Devil Phantom!

Chu Mu's body would suddenly turn light before suddenly turn dark. Just as the Gluttonous Insect Monster's Rending Heart Claw appeared, he quickly floated ten meters away from his original position and the claw missed, descending upon three dilapidated walls. They were all ripped into pieces which tumbled down with a rumble in the ancient hall.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's claw destruction force was extremely terrifying, and even reached Ye Qingzi's location. Yet, Mo Xie's reaction was quick and one of her tails swept up Ye Qingzi as she quickly retreated to the edge of the fight.

Mo Xie's fighting strength was incapable of comparing to the half devil state Chu Mu. Moreover, Mo Xie's defense was very low. If she was at all careless, she would definitely be killed by the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster, so Chu Mu didn't have Mo Xie participate in the fight.

Chu Mu's caution was necessary. The Gluttonous Insect Monster's claws had reached the late eighth stage and including its

technique's might, the effect of its attack neared the ninth stage. A ninth stage attack would only too easily break through an eighth stage defense.

"Attack him from behind." Duan Xinhe ordered his two Gluttonous Insect Monsters.

The other Gluttonous Insect Monster had, at some unknown time, already moved around to behind Chu Mu. At this moment, the two Gluttonous Insect Monsters happened to form a front and back pincer attack!

An ominous glint was visible as the two Gluttonous Insect Beasts seemingly simultaneously strode forward with their front legs and terrifyingly launched themselves at Chu Mu.

Displacement Specter

The White Nightmare's two dodging techniques were extremely useful and Displacement Specter allowed Chu Mu to easily escape from the two ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters' claws.

The white colored devil flames burned and Chu Mu rapidly moved thirty meters. His two white pupils coldly stared at Duan Xinhe only fifty meters from him.

Duan Xinhe instantly felt the ice cold from Chu Mu, and forced down the fear towards an unknown creature in his heart. He began to slowly chant an incantation.

Yet, how could Chu Mu give him a chance to use a soul technique? His two white pupils discharged two pale white lightning-like lights that shot at Duan Xinhe.

Nightmare Black Hole!!

At the area the eye beams intersected, a ball of white flame began to spread and burn. It outlandishly left a burning special nightmare orbit in its wake!

Suddenly, a black light shot in all four directions and the devil flames inside the nightmare orbit became incomparably vigorous!!

What was even more shocking was that inside the burning devil flames in the nightmare orbit appeared a frightening black hole. This black hole seemed to lead to an unknown space of death; the moment one was swept up by it, he would never return to his original world!

Duan Xinhe had never seen this technique before, and fear arose in his heart. He hastily changed his incantation and created a black colored shield...

The black shield was an eighth rank monarch rank defense technique Duan Xinhe had learned. It practically could resist the majority of direct attack techniques. Back then, he had spent an enormous cost just to obtain this soul technique book.

Only, the defensive effect of this dark defense was abnormally weak in front of the Nightmare Black Hole. When the black hole opened up, the darkness that formed the defensive shield was easily swallowed up and the remaining force nearly sucked Duan Xinhe inside as well.

The appearance speed of the Nightmare Black Hole was fast, and it also disappeared extremely quick. After swallowing Duan Xinhe's dark defense technique, Duan Xinhe's body was pulled forward; if he were to take one more step forward, he would be within the orbit of the NIghtmare Black Hole from just now. Standing there, Duan Xinhe could even still feel the remnants of the ice cold devil flames!

Duan Xinhe sucked in a mouthful of cold air and his face became incomparably pale.

The half devil state Chu Mu had techniques that were strange to the max. Duan Xinhe found that it was hard to react and moreover, this was the first time he had come across a technique that was truly a combination of the fire and dark types!

Ye Qingzi who didn't dare rashly enter the fight stood at the very edge of the ancient hall. Her eyes were fixated on the body of Chu Mu burning all over with white demonic devil flames. She simply couldn't believe that the eminently powerful devil monarch that controlled terrifying strength was the Chu Mu she knew.

Or perhaps it was better to say that from the very beginning until now she never truly knew Chu Mu!

“Qingzi, quickly, quickly come up… my god, what is that thing!!” Ye Wansheng standing in the hole above the palace of ruins. However, when he put his head in to check the situation below, he happened to see the half devil state Chu Mu use Devil Phantom and float past him. It scared him so much that he sucked in a breath of cold air!

From Ye Wansheng’s location looking down, the entire ancient hall was a field of pale white. Moreover, standing not even fifty meters from him was a human figure burning from head to toe in white devil flames standing on a broken pillar. He was brandishing two white demonic devil flames that could onslaught the soul with cold at the two incomparably savage Gluttonous Insect Monsters!

The soul devil flames that could invade the depths of the soul and the eminently sharp gluttonous long claws. The pillars inside the ancient hall were knocked down one after the other or were shattered into dust by the violent devil flames or the swirling rain of claws!

Chapter 278: The Cyan Hidden Dragon Awakens

“Sila~~~~~~~”

Intersecting with each other, two claw blades that covered the entire ancient hall flew across. Chu Mu found it hard to dodge, and his back was instantly ripped apart with two deep wounds forming!

The half devil Chu Mu’s blood was burning all over so, when wounded, he wouldn’t spill blood; the only thing that appeared the long open wound was fire.

“Hmph, you still want to fight me with this amount of strength. No matter what thing you are, you’ll still die in the end!” coldly laughed Duan Xinhe as an incantation reached his mouth.

Duan Xinhe chanted a soul pact incantation, but this was a bit different, because the soul pact pattern couldn’t be seen.

As a soul pet trainer’s strength rose and the soul pet’s inherent strength changed, the soul pet pattern would no longer be restricted to a standard summoning pattern. Just like when Chu Mu summoned the White Nightmare, a devil flame figure had walked out of Chu Mu’s body.

Only, no matter how the soul pact pattern changed, the agreement between the souls was maintained by a special symbol

and design. Thus, a soul pet trainer's summoning pattern would always have a special soul symbol and pattern no matter how much the summoning pattern changed.

However, nothing appeared when Duan Xinhe finished his summoning, indicating that he had summoned another few attached pets.

Like balls of flesh coming off of Duan Xinhe's body, these flesh bits fell onto the ground, and as if they were being pinched by a finger, slowly kneaded into the shape of Gluttonous Insect Monsters...

Ten flesh bits had fallen off of his body and they all changed, gradually forming the disgusting bodies of Gluttonous Insect Monsters with yellow pupils!

Ye Qingzi had been delivered by Mo Xie to the hole above the ancient hall, but she didn't leave, as she was worried something would happen to Chu Mu.

However, Ye Wansheng was watching the Gluttonous Insect Monsters fall off of Duan Xinhe's body in horror, as a feeling of terror suddenly arose.

"Qingzi, let's leave this place. We can't deal with these things. Dong Qing has already gone to notify all of the various large factions. I'm sure they'll quickly arrive at this place." said Ye Wansheng.

“Chu Mu is still down there.” said Ye Qingzi.

“He’s still down there? Then... could it be that the terrifying devil monarch like thing is Chu Mu’s soul pet?” asked Ye Wansheng in an incomparably astonished manner.

When Ye Wansheng had seen the half devil state Chu Mu just now, he had jumped in fright. He had heard that the White Nightmare was a powerful creature that could take the shape of its master as it fought. At the beginning he believed that this creature was the monarch rank soul pet, the White Nightmare.

However, afterwards, he sensed that the white demonic devil flames were completely different, and its demonic nature and evil charm were much more powerful than any other monarch White Nightmare he had seen before. He simply couldn’t comprehend what soul pet of Chu Mu’s this was!

Ye Qingzi bit her lip because she knew that the devil monarch full of an evil aura was Chu Mu himself. If she hadn’t seen in herself, she wouldn’t have believed that a human could transform into a devil.

However, Ye Qingzi didn’t say this, because the abnormally powerful devil transformation power was definitely a secret Chu Mu wouldn’t divulge to anyone.

.....

The ten eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters appeared in front of Chu Mu; Chu Mu already found it extremely hard to deal with two ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters and, upon seeing another ten eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Beasts, the space Chu Mu could use became even smaller.

Duan Xinhe's eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters had all been strengthened, and their fighting strength was not something normal eighth phase commander could hope to contend against. Back when he was guarding the well, Chu Mu had been injured by a Gluttonous Insect Monster and had nearly been instantly killed.

These eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters could only be dealt with by using two soul pets together when he wasn't in his half devil state.

Although Chu Mu, who had now transformed into a seventh phase ninth stage half devil, and could crush these eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Beasts, the power of the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Beasts managed to firmly inhibit his violent evil strength from being released. Unless Chu Mu could break through the seventh phase ninth stage bottleneck and enter the ninth phase, it would be very hard to defeat Duan Xinhe.

"Don't let that woman flee. My children, go catch her and that Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox for me!" Duan Xinhe swept his eyes above him at the hole as he spoke.

"Wu wu wu~~~~~"

Mo Xie could naturally understand Chu Mu's intention, and without needing for him to give an order, Mo Xie's two tails grabbed Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng. In a few leaps, she had jumped out of the underground passage.

Mo Xie didn't stop at all and continued to add speed as she sped along the towards the passage's exit.

……

……

"Senior Xia, there's a flying soul pet in front." said the Soul Alliance member, Su Xinyi.

Su Xinyi was Xiao Ren's direct subordinate and his perceptive strength was the best out of everyone.

This time only three Soul Alliance members had entered the sewers to search for Duan Xinhe. The three of them were all experts and to them, they were enough to deal with Duan Xinhe. Perhaps it could even be said that it would be a bit degrading for someone like Xiao Ren to kill Duan Xinhe.

Very quickly, the long fluttering tails of Mo Xie sped quickly to the three Soul Alliance members. After Mo Xie saw these people, he immediately put down Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng. He ignored these Soul Alliance members and turned around, rushing straight back to the ancient hall.

“Seniors, please follow that Nine Tailed Inferno Fox; it will lead you to Duan Xinhe.”Ye Qingzi was worried about Chu Mu’s safety, and knew that these three people were Soul Alliance experts so she hastily spoke to them.

“Xinyi, Baisong, you two follow it and take a look.” Xiao Ren glanced at the Royal Flamed Nine Tailed Inferno Fox gradually running further away and let out a rather shocked expression.

……

Inside the ancient hall, the eight eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Beasts were proving to be a real threat to Chu Mu. If it wasn’t for the powerful soul burning ability of the half devil state, he probably would have already been ripped to shreds by these incomparably savage creatures.

Duan Xinhe continued to stand in the passageway to this secret room. At the moment, his eyebrows were closely knit, because he could feel that the fighting strength of the white demonic devil monarch Chu Mu had transformed into was slowly growing.

At the very beginning, the the half devil state creature could only dodge when fighting against the two ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters and would very rarely attack. However, as time moved on, he began to launch soul devil flame attacks that could threaten the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters’ lives.

Duan Xinhe had summoned the eighth phase Gluttonous Insect

Monsters to quickly end the fight, but he didn't expect it to drag out so long.

Duan Xinhe was a soul pet trainer over forty, and the Glutttonous Insect Monsters were both his attached pets and all his soul pets. Even if his strength had been greatly weakened a few years ago, dealing with a young generation member was usually extremely easy.

However, he ended up being surprised at how this young generation expert could have such terrifying strength; he was able to fight against him for so long despite only being at this age. Thus, when he matured, what sort of a terrifying realm would his strength reach?!

He could not be left alive... this person could not be left alive! This was what Duan Xinhe was silently saying to himself. If such a terrifying thing were to raise its phase and stage, even if Duan Xinhe had more Gluttonous Insect Beasts, he definitely wouldn't be its opponent. If he let him flee this time, he would never be able to peacefully pass his days!

The White Nightmare possessed the Resentment Gathering technique, and when faced against stronger opponents, would unceasingly release the resentment aura inside its body, transforming it into his own strength.

Chu Mu's fighting strength increased bit by bit because of the Resentment Gathering technique. However, this Resentment Gathering technique wasn't able to grow as quickly as the Brave Stinging Heart. The eight eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters

appearing, the space Chu Mu had to fight became smaller and the wounds on his body clearly grew.

……

Underneath the secret room in the Innards of a God.

The enormous insect cocoon inside began to sway. Immediately afterwards, numerous tiny cracks appeared on the entire outer shell of the cocoon.

Light rays of cyan light flew out of these cracks, transforming into cyan colored light rays and illuminating the entirety of the Innards of a God in a cyan color!!

From hiding transforming into a dragon, the Cyan Hidden Dragon's long claws abruptly extended out of the insect cocoon. Instantly, the breakable white colored insect cocoon was torn to shreds!

A mighty cyan dragon head suddenly twisted out of the insect cocoon and immediately, dragon aura dispersed outwards. All of the white colored insect silk promptly turned to nothingness and the entire Innards of a God began to disappear under this force!

The white silk insect cocoon was incomparably enormous, but it was already broken, as it ostensibly could not contain this awakened Cyan Hidden Dragon. Both sides of the enormous insect cocoon revealed large cracks and the Cyan Hidden Dragon's cyan

colored wings full of strength suddenly extended form within the cracks!!

“Ao!!!!!!!”

Raising its head, its dragon roar was heard everywhere as it abruptly unfurled its body. The entire enormous white colored insect cocoon was unexpectedly disintegrated in an instant and like those white insect silks that were slowly disappearing, was transformed into nothingness by the violent storm-like dragon aura!!

“Long long long long long~~~~~”

The entire ancient hall in the underground passages began to tremble as shocking subterranean cracks appeared in the ancient hall. The pillars in this already ruined ancient hall collapsed under this force…

Suddenly, an eighth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster’s head dropped down from the collapsed rocks. Immediately after, more grey earthen rocks began to fall, fiercely smashing into floor of the disarrayed ancient hall.

The top layer of rocks was visibly collapsing, and the Gluttonous Insect Beasts could no longer attack Chu Mu and fled to the side in panic.

Chu Mu raised his head as countless rocks smashed down from

above him. Just as he was planning on fleeing, the ceiling above him completely collapsed!!

“Hong~~~~~”

The collapsed rock smashed into Chu Mu’s body. He simply couldn’t dodge and was quickly buried under chaotically falling rocks with a ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster…

Chapter 279: One of Five Summits, Xiao Ren

Duan Xinhe realized that the powerful Cyan Hidden Dragon had awaken from inside the Innards of a God and quickly, his face turned pale. He hurriedly jumped onto his ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster.

This Gluttonous Insect Monster's evasion abilities were very powerful. The falling rocks and dirt layer didn't successfully cover it, and Duan Xinhe forcefully escaped from the underground cave-in, jumping into the sewer region.

The sewer system was the city's underground infrastructure, so it was obviously sturdier. With the release of the Cyan Hidden Dragon's power, these sewer regions only shook, but didn't show any signs of collapsing.

When Duan Xinhe rode his ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster down the sewer, Mo Xie had just brought over two soul pet trainers from Soul Alliance.

"Duan Xinhe!" Su Xinyi immediately discovered Duan Xinhe and his Gluttonous Insect Monster flit across his vision, and his expression became excited.

The Hidden Dragon egg had always belonged to Soul Alliance, so this time, the people of Soul Alliance who came to Li City were determined to get this Cyan Hidden Dragon. This is why they had to kill Duan Xinhe, or else the Hidden Dragon Egg would fall into other peoples' hands.

The two didn't mind the shaking and collapsing underground world. After all, the Cyan Hidden Dragon wasn't something they could deal with

A soul pact incantation started. Su Xinyi and Songbo both summoned their demon type soul pets. A ninth phase commander rank demon's running speeds were definitely not inferior to the invisible Gluttonous Insect Monster. After a second, the two people started dashing through the underground tunnel!

Soul Alliance commander Xiao Ren stood silently in the fork of the underground tunnel. At this moment, the man was as calm and still as a black steelcast statue, emanating a metallic quality.

"You two, run as far as you can." Xiao Ren's voice was like metal on metal, heavy and powerful.

This sentence of Xiao Ren's was naturally directed towards Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng. Both brother and sister let out a breath. Knowing that the Cyan Hidden Dragon was about to appear, they each hastily summoned their soul pets and planned to leave there.

"You two don't think that you are so smart. Once I get this Cyan Hidden Dragon under control, I'll come deal with you." Xiao Ren saw that both of them looked as if they had escaped recognition and simply laughed coldly.

Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng's faces immediately turned paler, because they didn't think that Xiao Ren would actually recognize

them.

“Leave……” Ye Wansheng bit down. He knew that nothing he said would matter, and escaping was the only correct choice.

……

The shaking underground was getting more and more intense. One could already feel some of the underground tunnels shattering. Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng were very quick to act. They safely found the exiting well and reached the ground of the western street area.

Yet, though they reached a safe place, both the brother and sister’s expressions didn’t look too good. Ye Wansheng was in a bad mood because of the Soul Alliance expert Xiao Ren’s parting sentence.

Clearly, Xiao Ren had already recognized the two. They had fallen into a tiger’s den. If not for the Cyan Hidden Dragon awakening, they definitely would’ve been captured.

Ye Qingzi wasn’t just worried about Xiao Ren’s words. She was still thinking about Chu Mu, who was still deep in the old site main hall. With such a commotion underground, the Li City old site should be more or less buried completely. Chu Mu definitely didn’t escape. If he died by getting buried alive like this……

“This Xiao Ren indeed has the nose of a dog. How did he

recognize us even like this? Whatever, no matter what, we have to leave here." Ye Wansheng said to Ye Qingzi.

Ye Qingzi blanked, but she didn't wish to just leave like this, so she intentionally found a question and asked, "Who is this Xiao Ren?"

Ye Wansheng looked strangely at Ye Qingzi. He felt that Ye Qingzi should know about Xiao Ren, yet she was putting on a look of complete ignorance.

"Xiao Ren, Bin Xian, Tian Mang, Zi Deng, and our master were known as the Youth Five Peaks twenty years ago. Of the five, Xiao Ren was the youngest and had the most average fame of the five. The reason he became one of the five peaks was because his power was way beyond people of his age. He had a good relationship with our master at the time. About not long ago, he even represented Soul Alliance to visit our master and saw us.

"I thought the guy had long forgotten what we looked like. This was quite a few years ago, meaning our appearances are also different from what they are now, but he still recognized us....." Ye Wansheng said.

Ye Qingzi was actually still worried for Chu Mu's safety, and she was unwiling to leave, so she followed up with a few more questions.

In reality, the things about Xiao Ren that Ye Wansheng said were all known to Ye Qingzi. Xiao Ren was a very legendary character

within the entire soul pet world. For him, age was no longer a restriction. When he was part of the younger generation still, he often challenged middle-aged generation experts and often won.

Soul Alliance had always been able to raise up soul pet trainers that were completely abnormal. Xiao Ren, who was at the tip of the soul pet world at just the age of forty, was one of the most outstanding ones. His most notable soul pet was the Three Headed Feathered Beast!

“Alright, stop asking, I know what you’re thinking about. Even if you’re worried and don’t want to leave, we at least have to find a safe place to stay. Did you think the Cyan Hidden Dragon is only a house or two large?” Ye Wansheng quickly caught onto what Ye Qingzi was thinking about and said, “Dong Qing seems to be bringing people over. Let’s go to him. It’ll be safer that way.”

Ye Qingzi nodded, and rode her War Court Black Beast towards the approaching Dong Qing.

Yet, just as Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng was about to leave, the ground under them suddenly sank down!!

Without any warning, almost at the moment Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng escaped the region, the ground suddenly sank, causing dozens of houses to collapse with a huge boom!

In the air riding his Horizon Feather Bird, Dong Qing’s vision was very broad. From his angle, he could just see that nearly a circle of a hundred meters radius suddenly sank down, creating a shocking

empty crater, as if struck by a massive meteorite. The scene caused everyone to suck in a breathe!

“Cyan Hidden Dragon, the dragon is about to appear!!”

The experts behind Dong Qing were the middle aged generation experts from each faction that were here to kill Duan Xinhe. These experts almost were all soul masters who had several *** phase commander ranks. Together, dealing with Duan Xinhe definitely wouldn’t have been an issue.

Yet, making them fight the incredibly powerful Cyan Hidden Dragon was definitely throwing an egg against a hard rock. The power of the Cyan Hidden Dragon was known to everyone in Li City. Initially, hurting the Cyan Hidden Dragon had cost them countless lives already……

“Everyone back off, don’t act recklessly!” Each faction’s leader said to their members.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s destructive abilities were very powerful. One misstep could cause a huge amount of casualties. In the situation where no true expert could fight it head on, these people didn’t even have the right to go near!

“Ao!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

“Ao!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Dragon roars transmitted through the ground, causing the entire Li City to shake with it.

With these terrifying roars spreading, from above, one could see that cracks started spreading within a kilometer's radius from the crater!

These cracks were still spreading even further. Some crossed through wide streets, some passing along gorges, while even more ripped houses in two.

The dense amount of cracks signified the imminent destruction of this part of the city. Seeing this scene, the experts of all the factions looked incomparably shocked.

"Houhouhou!!!!!!!!!"

"Houhouhou!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!"

After the dragon roars, three almost simultaneous beast roars came from underground like claps of thunder. Though not as earth shaking as the Cyan Hidden Dragons' roars, they still had a powerful intimidation.

Most importantly, these three roars were directed straight towards the Cyan Hidden Dragon, meaning a powerful soul pet was challenging the Cyan Hidden Dragon head on!

"What organism is this triple roar, daring to provoke the Cyan

Hidden Dragon?" An expert from the Merchant's Alliance immediately asked.

Almost everyone present were experts of the middle aged generation. Of them, none dared to get within two kilometers of the place the Cyan Hidden Dragon was. All of them could only ride their flying type soul pets from afar and watch the cracked city area. What confused many were, after the Cyan Hidden Dragon awoken, there still was some middle aged expert daring to fight it head on!

"Xiao Ren, it must be Xiao Ren. That triple roar was his Three Headed Feathered Beast!" At this point, a more knowledgeable middle aged expert said.

"Boss Xiao truly is courageous!"

"Indeed, people of Soul Alliance truly abnormally powerful. If it were any other faction, which middle aged expert dared to fight the Cyan Hidden Dragon?"

……

Underground, after the massive Three Headed Feathered Beast appeared, its steel-like angular body had shattered the narrow passageway even further.

Xiao Ren still stood silently in place. He used his soul remembrance to scout out the agitated ground.

He could feel that the Cyan Hidden Dragon had already awakened, and specially let his Three Headed Feathered Beast to roar and provoke the Cyan Hidden Dragon. However, what he found strange was, this Cyan Hidden Dragon didn't seem to have a single bit of its attention on his Three Headed Feathered Beast, instead quickly travelling towards a different direction for no apparent reason, as if something important were there.

"Yu, follow it!" Xiao Ren jumped onto his Three Headed Feathered Beast and commanded.

The third head of the Three Headed Feathered Beast controlled the power of rock type. When quickly chasing the underground Cyan Hidden Dragon, the Three Headed Feathered Beast also directly cast a rock type technique to move swiftly towards the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Chapter 280: Obliterating Heart, Killing the Gluttonous Insect Monster

Underground Old Site

The cyan-like metal scales densely covered the back of its body. Sharp cyan dragon claws were indestructible; even the hard rock that covered the ground weren't able to stop them.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon didn't have the rock type. Its frightening underground movement speed purely relied on its powerful body that rammed the thick rock layers aside, or its powerful claws to slam rocks towards the surface while pushing forward to enlarge the hole.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's hurried actions was to go and save Chu Mu. it felt that Chu Mu had been submerged by the thick rocks and his life force was waning.

Indeed, Chu Mu was currently buried under the heavy rocks.

As a half-devil, Chu Mu's defense was incredibly high. The fallen rock layers couldn't actually take Chu Mu's life, but what was lethal was the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster that was right beside Chu Mu. It was only five meters away from Chu Mu. At such a distance, the Gluttonous Insect Monster could definitely attack!

The Gluttonous Insect Monster had a bug type. The dirt and rock

layers couldn't do much to restrict it. Very quickly, the Gluttonous Insect Monster dug through the layers and slowly neared Chu Mu.

Rending Heart Claw!!!

The seventh rank attack suddenly swiped past where Chu Mu laid. Chu Mu had a dozen meter thick rocks on him. Yet, as the Heart Rending Claw fell, the dozen rocks were all cut open from the middle, and its claws reached straight towards Chu Mu's back!

Chu Mu's back already had an empty hole within it. As the Heart Rending Claw fell, it caused Chu Mu's wound to become even bigger. A huge claw mark on Chu Mu's back clearly no longer emitted white demonic devil flames.

Chu Mu sucked in a cold breath and withstood the pain of ripping. As the rocks on him were cut open, he quickly got up and casted Devil Phantom to avoid the second attack of the Gluttonous Insect Monster!

"Shua!!!!!!!!!!"

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's claw power was truly terrifying. After every claw, one could find a ten meter long gouge mark reaching a few meters deep. It definitely was worthy to be called eighth rank late stage claws!

Chu Mu's defense at the half-devil reached eighth stage intermediate stage. Such a defense was almost invincible among

his generation. However, Chu Mu was faced against an infamous old-timer of the soul pet world. His ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster definitely wasn't that easy to deal with.

Chu Mu could still summon a soul pet to help him fight. However, Chu Mu knew that none of his soul pets would be of use. Because of this, of all his soul pets, the highest defense was the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, yet its defense was barely at the eighth stage. WIth its life force, it may be able to take a few hits from the Gluttonous Insect Monster, but in this completely dirt environment, the Devil Tree Battle Soldiers couldn't possibly unleash its full restrictive potential.

As for Chu Mu's other soul pets, including Mo Xie, Chu Mu didn't dare to let them fight. After all, all their defenses were below the eighth rank. With the Gluttonous Insect Monster's eighth rank late stage claw and its techniques, its power was already infinitely close to the ninth rank.

The effects of Resentment Gathering was still continuing. Though Chu Mu's fighting strength was still at the seventh phase ninth stage, it was already beyond the limits of seventh phase.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's continuous attacks broke many rocks, giving Chu Mu some space to move around freely.

"Burn in flames!"

His sinister pupils flashed with a white demonic glint as Chu Mu's right hand abruptly slammed towards the ground.

Immediately, with Chu Mu as the center, a tidal wave of white demonic devil fire rolled outwards and engulfed the narrow space!

The cold flames quickly assaulted the Gluttonous Insect Monster. The monster didn't dare to face the soul hurting flames head on. Its claws suddenly started digging faster as it created a hole to hide in when the devil flames rolled over.

"Shua!!!!!!!!!"

A claw appeared behind Chu Mu's back without any sign, causing another fierce attack. This time, Chu Mu's entire back region was cut open, causing the majority of his white demonic devil fires to extinguish!

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's digging speed was very quick. Chu Mu was only just finished with the technique when the Gluttonous Insect Monster had already reached behind Chu Mu.

"Nie~~~~~~~~~~~~~"

Chu Mu getting hurt meant the White Nightmare would get hurt as well. The white devil merged with Chu Mu let out an abnormally shrill screech!

The devil cry morphed into an even thicker resentment. This resentment quickly merged into Chu Mu's half devil body, which in turn transformed into an even more vigorous white demonic devil fire that started burning on Chu Mu's body!

Pain was inevitable, but compared to the pain of extreme temperatures burning his soul constantly, the claw pain that hit him wasn't worth mentioning.

Chu Mu calmed himself amidst the pain and released his soul master level soul remembrance to lock onto the darkness that is the dirt layer.

"Sisi~~~~~~~~"

The Gluttonous Insect Monster appeared again, this time still behind Chu Mu. A cold light crossed each other and added another deep cross mark on Chu Mu's wounded back. This cross mark almost ripped Chu Mu apart from top to bottom!

Pain again assaulted Chu Mu, but he used his remembrance to lock onto the Gluttonous Insect Monster in the instant it flitted across.

On his body, white demonic devil fire suddenly darted up from his legs, disintegrating Chu Mu's body to nothingness.

Displacement Specter!

This was an opportunity Chu Mu traded a heavy injury for. Using his remembrance to lock on, the judgement of position and the cast of the technique all couldn't be off by the slightest, because the Gluttonous Insect Monster's speed was way too quick-fast to the

point where Chu Mu couldn't even truly attack it.

Pale devil flames started burning behind the Gluttonous Insect Monster, and Chu Mu's arrogant devil image slowly appeared amongst the blossoming flames!

Success! This time, Chu Mu cast his technique abnormally accurate, causing him to appear successfully behind the Gluttonous Insect Monster.

Obliterating Heart!!!

WIthout a doubt, the only technique that could kill the Gluttonous Insect Monster was this half devil's lethal Obliterating Heart, which ignored defenses!

The white demonic devil flames on Chu Mu's palms burned silently and Chu Mu's right hand became a blade that slowly cut into the Gluttonous Insect Monster's spine from behind.

Without any obstruction, it passed through the Gluttonous Insect Monster's body. Chu Mu's Obliterating Heart Claw felt as if it extended into a otherworld, wanting to pick something out from an alternate dimension!

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's reactions were very quick. Realizing that Chu Mu was right behind him, its hind legs kicked and its body immediately blurred into a black light that dashed forward, wanting to escape Chu Mu's attack.

Chu Mu had long expected that his attacks couldn't match the Gluttonous Insect Monster's dodging abilities. His left hand quickly grabbed onto the Gluttonous Insect Monster's shoulder as his entire body was brought flying along with the Gluttonous Insect Monster.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's running speed was frightening. When Chu Mu was lifted along, he didn't give up on his Obliterating Heart technique, one hand deadly locked onto the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster's shoulder bone, while the other hand deep within the Gluttonous Insect Monster's body.

"Beng!! Beng!! Beng!!!!"

The Gluttonous Insect Monster dashed forward, causing the following Chu Mu to continuously make contact with the hard rocks near him. During the process of Chu Mu's Obliterating Heart, he was pulled through a hundred meter long tunnel, ramming Chu Mu almost senseless.

The heavy injury and the constant slamming caused Chu Mu's consciousness to slowly become weaker and weaker, and his Obliterating Heart Claw was slowly losing its accuracy. However, Chu Mu knew that, if he didn't kill the Gluttonous Insect Monster, he definitely would be the one that would die.

Death to Chu Mu wasn't scary, but Chu Mu definitely wouldn't die such a petty death, a death caused by a ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster!!

The unwillingness to face death was a type of resentment!

This time, the resentment again became energy that strengthened Chu Mu, causing Chu Mu to feel an injection of energy as he was getting weaker and weaker, making his arm even stronger!

“Obliterating Heart!!!”

Finally, when Chu Mu’s devil hand again pushed in, the hand firmly grasped the Gluttonous Insect Monster’s organ like crystal.

Squeezing down, the organ instantly bursted, causing body fluid to splatter everywhere within the Gluttonous Insect Monster, while more slowly dripped down from between Chu Mu’s fingers!

The organ was the origin of life for the Gluttonous Insect Monster. The instant Chu Mu burst it, the Gluttonous Insect Monster’s dashing body went stiff, as if its entire body lost all power. It brushed against a rocky crevice within the old site main hall and created a long and shattered hole, taking quite a long time before coming to a full stop……

Chu Mu’s inertia brought him flying with the Gluttonous Insect Monster, and it also made him roll through the hole that the Gluttonous Insect Monster made, stopping when the hole was almost at an end.

Lying in the shattered rocks, Chu Mu's white demonic devil fire got darker and darker. Between the extinguishing flames, one could already see Chu Mu's battered and wounded body……

Chu Mu himself was also taking big breaths. His hand still had some insect juices on it. The moment he killed the Gluttonous Insect Monster, he had reached his limit as well, barely able to lift a finger. After all, he still had many, bone breaking wounds on his back.

Before, in his fight against the Gluttonous Insect Monsters, he had always been passively dodging. This time finally gave Chu Mu a chance to challenge himself. After all, it's been a long time since Chu Mu had experienced a battle this close to death.

……

"It died……it died, my child died. How is this possible, this can't be true, he should be the one that died!" In the underground tunnel, Duan Xinhe fell into a numb state.

Before, Duan Xinhe saw Chu Mu and his Gluttonous Insect Monster buried. Under such situations, Duan Xinhe had absolute confidence that his ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster could kill Chu Mu.

But, what awaited him wasn't Chu Mu's death, but instead the soul backlash from the death of his Ninth Phase Gluttonous Insect Monster!

Chapter 281: Collision of Power, Dragon VS Beast

Inside the damp rocky cave, as the white demonic devil flames on his body gradually dimmed, Chu Mu lay down in exhaustion in the darkness. His eyes stared indifferently at the rock wall above him.

Beside him was the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster's corpse which was slowly rotting after having its crystallized internals shattered by Chu Mu...

"Young master, you should do less of this dangerous stuff in the future. You're vulnerable to being killed with a simple careless mistake in these situations, and with the half devil transformation this time, I'm sure your soul has already suffered from an extremely serious burn wound..." Old Li's voice lingered in Chu Mu's ear.

Chu Mu didn't respond to Old Li's words and laid there, thinking about something.

The surrounding rocks began to violently shake; only the rocks where Chu Mu was didn't show indications of collapsing.

He continued to lie there and didn't show any expression of panic because he knew that the Cyan Hidden Dragon was approaching him.

"Beng~~~~~"

An enormous cyan long claw abruptly ripped apart the rocks on top of Chu Mu's head. As if the roof of rock had been lifted off, an empty space instantly appeared on top of Chu Mu through which he could see a portion of the Cyan Hidden Dragon's cyan colored dragon armored body!

"Sha sha sha~~~~~"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon put its head in from above through the hole. Its cyan colored eyes stared at the extremely tired Chu Mu and it let out a string of bug-like noises.

The wounds on Chu Mu's body were extremely heavy, and it severely affected the movements of his body. When the Cyan Hidden Dragon appeared in front of him, he felt the Gluttonous Insect Monster's terrifying poison spread through his body even more, causing him to be completely immobile.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon saw the heavy wounds on his body and slowly extended a claw and put Chu Mu in its palm.

"Sha sha sha sha sha~~~~~"

The Cyan hidden Dragon opened its mouth and a cyan light suddenly blossomed from its mouth. This light didn't shoot in all for directions and instead reservedly formed a surrounding cyan substance around its body like a cyan colored pearl or dewdrop...

“This is…” Old Li was hidden in Chu Mu’s soul capture ring, and when he discovered the cyan colored energy pearl that was spit out from its stomach, he was incomparably surprised!

Chu Mu’s body had been paralyzed by the Gluttonous Insect Monster’s poison, but his thinking was still relatively normal. He didn’t understand what substance the Cyan Hidden Dragon had spit out and was also puzzled by Old Li’s surprise.

“Sha sha sha sha~~~~”

When the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s cyan dewdrop was spit out, it used its insect noises to give Chu Mu a simple explanation.

This time Chu Mu didn’t understand its explanation, but faintly felt that this thing was extremely important.

The dewdrop spat out caused the soft light to envelop Chu Mu’s body; the water-like energy also slowly entered his body…

At the beginning, Chu Mu thought the Cyan Hidden Dragon was healing his wounds, since they were extremely severe. However, he quickly realized that not only were his wounds healing, but even his fighting strength was being recovered by this special energy.

“Young master, take advantage of the moment and guide the energy that entered your body into every vein and artery with your soul remembrance!” Old Li suddenly shouted.

Chu Mu was confused and didn't understand what using his soul remembrance to guide the energy in his body would do.

Soul pet trainers normally would use soul remembrance to guide energy into a soul pet's body, but couldn't guide energy into his own body. Human bodies could not directly absorb energy crystals or spirit item energies.

"Quickly, do as i say!" sharply cried Old Li.

Seeing how Old Li was so excited, Chu Mu guessed that the Cyan Hidden Dragon had gifted him something that very likely hid an extremely enormous energy, and it wasn't something that could be wasted at all.

Promptly, Chu Mu began to try and pour his soul remembrance into his own body and capture the special energy that could enter his body.

Different from when Chu Mu normally guided energy into a soul pet's body, this time he felt as if this energy was like liquid, and he couldn't catch it with his soul remembrance.

Since he couldn't catch it, how could he make this energy enter his veins and arteries? Thus, Chu Mu quickly encountered the problem of his inability to capture the energy.

"Sha sha sha~~~~"

The energy seemed to be extremely enormous, and the Cyan Hidden Dragon knew that Chu Mu needed a bit of time to absorb it. At once, it grabbed Chu Mu's body and its cyan dragon eyes stared at the rock in the darkness.

The rock was moving, and the Cyan Hidden Dragon could sense another powerful creature rapidly approaching!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon glanced down at Chu Mu wrapped in cyan energy; it faintly tightened its claw grip and after protecting Chu Mu in its palm, it squatted down slightly before abruptly charging at the above rock!

"Hong long~~~~~"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's charge caused the surface to shake again. The streets in the Western Street area suddenly exploded like a storming wave of rock which terrifyingly reached a height of hundred meters!

The wave of earth reached a hundred meters and those who were standing on the street felt as if it had covered half the sky and earth. The residents that had the courage to return to their residences on western street had only managed to calm down for a few days before this terrifying event happened. They all panicked out of fear and began to flee in other directions.

Underneath the rocks, the Cyan Hidden Dragon expanded its powerful wings and flew up into the rocks. These weak rocks

basically posed no more resistance than the air to it.

“Hou Hou Hou!!!!!!”

Just as the Cyan Hidden Dragon flew above ground, a triple layered roar rang out from the rocks. Immediately after, the rocks around the Cyan Hidden Dragon became incomparably solid, like steel, and they critically prevented its body from moving.

“Ao!!!!!!”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon was normally all powerful, and there were very few creatures in the soul pet realm that would cause it trouble. When it sensed that there was a reckless creature that was stopping it, it let out a mighty roar and used its voice to compete with the soul pet underground!

To a true expert, the rocks underground were like granules in the air and their bodies wouldn’t be inhibited by these granules at all especially if they were of the earth attribute. Those of the earth attribute would be able would even be able to easily change the composition of the rock and manipulate it like water.

The Three Headed Feathered Beast was presently using this type of rock force to close the distance with the Cyan Hidden Dragon, as it happened to be the one to inhibit its movements!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s two cyan eyes had already locked onto the Three Headed Feathered Beast. One of its claws was still

clutching Chu Mu while the other was raised up high as a cyan colored dragon force was condensing in its claw!

“Ao!!!!!!!”

Sensing that the opponent was on the brink of appearing, the dragon force gathered in the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s hand ripped apart the rock and fiercely swiped at the Three Headed Feathered Beast’s location!

“Sila~~~~~”

The dragon claw’s might was powerful, and the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s attack turned the rock in the surrounding hundred meters completely into nothingness. The dragon force spread in the direction it attacked in and opened up an enormous hole nearly a hundred meters in length; it was as if an enormous boa had frighteningly slithered across!

The might of this attack was extremely powerful and through the spaces in between the claws, Chu Mu couldn’t help but suck in a breath of air at the terrifying destructive force.

Only, in the terrifying trace it left were no signs of the Three Headed Feathered Beast’s figure.

A hundred meters behind the Cyan Hidden Dragon, the rock layer suddenly parted and the Three Headed Feathered Beast strangely appeared there. Its lion-like robust body suddenly

increased speed and viciously rammed into the Cyan Hidden Dragon's back!

The Three Headed Feathered Beast could change the composition of the rock layer and simultaneously had the collision force of a huge creature. When it neared the Cyan Hidden Dragon, Xiao Ren used this battle technique to fool the Cyan Hidden Dragon with its first strike.

The Three Headed Feathered Beast's collision strength was abnormally terrifying. Raging fire, storm and meteor formed three different colors that enveloped its body. The moment it touched any object, that object would shatter on the spot!

"Ao!!!!"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's reaction was extremely quick, and just as the Three Headed Feathered Dragon was about to crash into its body, its long dragon tail gave an abrupt wave. Immediately it swept forth a cyan colored dragon tail force!

The Three Headed Feathered Dragon simply couldn't compete with the Cyan Hidden Dragon when it came to strength. The wave of the tail fiercely knocked it back four to five hundred meters back!

"This Cyan Hidden Dragon has really amazing brute force!!" Xiao Ren was lying on the Three Headed Feathered Dragon's back and was silently shocked at this Cyan Hidden Dragon's strength.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon didn't want to fight with the Three Headed Feathered Dragon underground. Thus, after grabbing Chu Mu and abruptly extending its wings, it directly flew from underneath the surface rocks to above ground!!

……

In the Cyan Hidden Dragon's left claw, Chu Mu silently lay there as his body was enveloped by a water-like cyan light.

Chu Mu's half devil transformation didn't disappear, and the faint white demonic devil flames created a demonic light as it interweaved with the cyan colors. It caused Chu Mu to set off an even more evilly demonic and different feeling.

"Old Li, what on earth is this? My soul remembrance can't catch it." asked Chu Mu.

"It doesn't matter. Right now you must try your best to guide this thing into your veins and arteries!" Old Li tore his throat as he yelled.

"If I was able to catch it, why would I bother talking nonsense with you." said Chu Mu somewhat impatiently.

"Then think of a way to grab it!" said Old Li.

"Tell me what it is, and I'll be able to focus!" said Chu Mu.

“The story is very long so I’ll give you a rough overview. Back then, it wasn’t only Soul Alliance people that had entered Myriad Heaven Dragon Region; there were also many people who were at the apex of the soul pet kingdom that entered. Among them was the father of the Old Li Kingdom Lord. During the process of them capturing the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, Soul Alliance seized the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon while the other experts obtained a few benefits. However, the Old Li Kingdom Lord’s father obtained Jade the Spring!

Chapter 282: The Great Fight of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might

"This Jade Spring is exceptionally special, and is taken out from what is regarded as the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's most important heart blood. It's used to enable its offspring dragon to essentially be reborn as a powerful creature. There was an ancient person that called the Jade Spring a coming of age gift for Hidden Dragons. Only the most outstanding Hidden Dragon in a generation could earn the baptism of Jade Spring..."

"I already mentioned that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon can split off multiple offspring and these offspring are normally a lower rank than it. According to my estimation, this Cyan Hidden Dragon should have undergone some strengthenings otherwise its fighting strength wouldn't be so strong as to cause the entire Li City to shake."

"This strengthening could very well have been obtained through the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon baptising it with Jade Spring. Whether a Cyan Hidden Dragon underwent Jade Spring baptism is extremely important. That same ancient person indicated that after undergoing the Jade Spring baptism, one's strength will be able to rise by a rank." said Old Li.

"A rank? Then wouldn't that be increasing from the monarch rank to the emperor rank?" asked Chu Mu in astonishment.

"Pretty much; however, the Jade Spring's true value isn't just limited to this. It can also be used on any beast type soul pet. In other words, it's an extremely powerful strengthening spirit item

for beast types, and especially when used on soul pets that haven't become adults yet it has an exceptionally incredible effect. A large reason why the Old Li city lord was able to become a Kingdom Lord and moreover an upper ranked Kingdom Lord was because when he was young, his father used a portion of the Jade Spring to baptise his soul pets, causing their fighting strength to increase by a level." said Old Li.

"This treasure continued to be monopolized by city lord Old Li's father and after his father passed, it came under his possession. Since this item can only be used once, the old Li City Lord has hired a Pharmacist to replicate it. The effect of these replications probably doesn't even reach the effect of one tenth of a true Jade Spring, but I remember that back then, the old Li City Lord marked its price at 50 million for one!"

When Chu Mu heard this, great emotions surged in his heart. A one tenth of an effect Jade Spring already fetched a price of 50 million; then wouldn't a true jade spring be worth 500 million?

Moreover, Chu Mu could be sure that the value of this Jade Spring couldn't be calculated like this because Jade Spring wasn't actually an attribute spirit item. Instead, it was a coming of age baptism for non adult soul pets and was an ultra spirit item that couldn't be regenerated. To a young soul pet trainer, this was simply an enormous leap in power!

"The reason why this Cyan Hidden Dragon appeared in Li City is very clearly to steal back the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's Jade Spring. Then again, this old Li City Lord truly is too calm. I'm afraid that a few months ago when the Cyan Hidden Dragon

appeared, the Jade Spring he possessed had already been stolen by it. Yet, Old Li Sheng stayed silent and watched coldly on the sideline as the various large factions searched for the Empyrean cyan Hidden Dragon. If the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon hadn't used the Jade Spring baptism on your body this time, I wouldn't have guessed that what the old Li City Lord's father brought out with him and used to make money through replications from the Myriad Heaven Dragon Region was Jade Spring. The old Li City Lord had even said that it was a secret recipe passed down from his ancestors." said Old Li.

Old Li didn't know what goal the Cyan Hidden Dragon had by appearing in Li City at the beginning. It wasn't until he saw the Jade Spring appear that he finally connected it together, and completely understood the matters between the Cyan Hidden Dragon and Kingdom Lord Li Sheng.

"Kingdom Lord Li Shen was very calm, and he even split the huge cake into three portions. Thus, his true intention must've been to divert attention and have everyone place their gazes on the three prizes while he himself unknowingly retrieved the Jade Spring from the fight. This Li Kingdom Lord truly is a character." upon hearing Old Li's words, Chu Mu couldn't help but sigh.

Experience truly mattered. This time, Chu Mu had actually witnessed how a shrewd person did things. Not only did this old Li City Lord curse people, he also lead all of the factions around in circles.

"Frankly speaking, this Jade Spring is the most pure part of the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon's dragon heart blood. You're

currently in the half-devil state, so you possess the four attributes of other, dark, fire and beast. As long as you have the beast attribute, you'll be able to absorb the Jade Spring's energy. Moreover, looking at it from an age perspective, you happen to be coming of age so this is an exceptionally rare opportunity that you absolutely can't miss!"

Chu Mu truly realized the value of this Jade Spring. He promptly closed his eyes and poured his soul remembrance into his tendons and muscles.

Aside from the faint white demonic devil flames in his body, the Jade Spring was presently swimming about all over his tendons and muscles. The energy of the Jade Spring ostensibly wanted to permeate into Chu Mu's veins and arteries, but it was unable to find an entrance.

Chu Mu's soul remembrance could lock onto this liquid, but the energy was so enormous that it was too hard for his soul remembrance to catch and guide it into his veins and arteries. He could only use his soul remembrance to build a bridge between the Jade Spring dragon blood and his own blood's veins and arteries. This way, the energy would slowly permeate into his body.

"Long long!!!!!"

Suddenly, Chu Mu's surroundings began to violently shake. He had just begun to focus his attention on establishing a connection between the bloods when he was disturbed by the severe shaking.

“Ao!!!!!”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon was savagely dragged back down a hundred meters out of the air to the ground by the Three Headed Feathered Beast and angrily let out a roar!

Raising its head, a green light appeared in the depths of the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s throat. Subsequently, a violent and tyrannical dragon aura swept forth as the green colored Dragon Destruction Ray was fiercely spat at the Three Headed Feathered Beast!

The cyan colored Dragon Destruction Ray was like a scorching sun shining down and swept across this district into another one!

Everywhere it passed through was transformed into nothingness and the attack range astonishingly reached two kilometers!!

The Three Headed Feathered Beast’s fighting strength was clearly inferior to the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s and when the cyan Dragon Destruction Ray swept over, it had dodged in an unknown direction.

It was at this moment that Xiao Ren’s other rock type elemental main pet rapidly completed a defensive technique. Practically as the cyan Dragon Destruction Ray swept over, it completed the body of a mountain that was nearly a hundred meters high!

The hundred meter mountain’s shocking appearance was deeply entrenched and could be regarded as an enormous object to this

city district that was only a few tens of meters.

Only, when this mountain-like defensive technique touched the cyan colored light ray, it completely exploded and enormous rocks flew in all directions like shooting stars, destroying a large portion of the civilian district.

The Three Headed Feathered Beast didn't escape unscathed because of the rock type soul pet's defense. The instant the energy exploded, the Three Headed Feathered Beast was knocked flying. It happened to flying directly along the main avenue, knocking down the buildings on either side for a hundred meters.

Five hundred meters up in the air, the middle-aged powerful members riding on wing type soul pets maintained a certain distance with the battlefield. When they saw the terrifying destructive force that the Dragon Destruction Ray caused, all of their faces turned unsightly.

Of course, these people were also rejoicing that they hadn't impulsively summoned their soul pets and participated in this frightening fight with the adult Cyan Hidden Dragon. From the current battle situation, any one of those Cyan Hidden Dragon's techniques could instakill their soul pets!

"Too frightening, truly too frightening. I've never seen such a powerful soul pet."

"The Three Headed Feathered Beast should be the same rank as the Cyan HIdden Dragon, but the dragon species is the dragon

species after all. Every species must acknowledge the dragon species in front of them."

A majority of these middle aged experts speaking didn't dare participate in the fight. Instead, they watched from afar.

As for Xiao Ren who was facing the Cyan Hidden Dragon alone, his face was extremely unsightly. This Cyan Hidden Dragon's fighting strength far surpassed his imagination and very evidently, when Li Sheng, that geezer, injured the Cyan Hidden Dragon he had paid an extremely bitter price.

Chanting an incantation, Xiao Ren knew that merely relying on his Three Headed Feathered Beast to defeat this powerful Cyan Hidden Dragon was impossible. Thus, he summoned his third main pet!

A green colored soul pet pattern slowly appeared beside him and a few unique plant roots quickly grew out of the pattern...

When these roots appeared, they drilled into the ground like large pythons. As if the surrounding space had become narrower, these python-like roots began to root the area and in an instant, the fifty meter area of buildings had been knocked down by this plant kingdom soul pet!

"Long long long long~~~~~~~"

The residences in the vicinity collapsed and instantaneously, the

area around Xiao Ren transformed into ruins. Rolling smoke wafted into the air as a violent wind began to spread!

“Xiao Ren’s main plant pet. Could it be that Devil Tree Battle Soldier that has accompanied him for so many years?!”

When the people in the air discovered those roots violently growing, they all began to make guesses.

Xiao Ren was a legendary figure in the soul pet kingdom. All of his soul pets had been thoroughly researched by everyone and amongst them, the most peculiar wasn’t the Three Headed Feathered Beast, but instead the high class warrior rank Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

To someone of Xiao Ren’s level, the warrior rank was a rank that had already been gotten rid of. However, after undergoing strengthening, Xiao Ren’s Devil Tree Battle Soldier had grown to a monarch level. Most importantly, it was also his only soul pet that had reached the tenth phase!

To a soul pet, going from the ninth to the tenth phase could be regarded as an enormous leap. A tenth phase plant type soul pet would definitely be able to hold its own even if it was facing a soul pet herd that numbered in the thousands. In his early days, Xiao Ren had used this Devil Tree Battle Soldier to gain enormous fame in the soul pet kingdom.

Xiao Ren’s Devil Tree Battle Soldier was an enormous creature, and its body was even larger than the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s by

quite a bit. Half of those roots that had razed the area when the Devil Tree Battle Soldier appeared were being held by it!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon, the Three Headed Feathered Beast, and the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. The three soul pets were all enormous creatures and even the large Western District of Li City had completely transformed into a battlefield for these them, causing the entire city district to descend into unprecedented panic!

Chapter 283: The Great Fight of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might

Xiao Ren's Devil Tree Battle Soldier was different than Chu Mu's in terms of strengthening. In Xiao Ren's strengthening process, he constantly made his Devil Tree Battle Soldier larger and larger. Its current massive size could already compare to higher ranking Ancient Azure Devil Trees. Once it roots into the ground, it is like a moving forest, converting everything within a few hundred meters into its territory.

Yet Chu Mu's Devil Tree Battle Soldier didn't change much in size. Chu Mu didn't like to make his Devil Tree Battle Soldier a huge tree. Though it could make its power very strong, it clearly was not as mobile.

Chu Mu's own fighting style revolved around mobility, so he didn't like the pure size and power.

"Pupupupu~~~~~~~~~~"

Massive roots were like extremely scary ground pythons, crazily twisting their bodies as they flew through the air, pouncing towards the Cyan Hidden Dragon's body!

Xiao Ren's Devil Tree Battle Soldier's wood type crystal was already at the even higher ranking Azure Wood. The toughness and power of Azure wood was definitely not something demon wood could compare to. In the places it swiped past, no house was left, all rendered to flat ground!

The massive roots were like pythons, flying shockingly through the city area and wrapping around the powerful body of the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's attention was on Xiao Ren's rock type soul pet, so in a moment's slip, its lower body was wrapped tightly by the Azure Wood massive python-like roots, constricted tightly!

The Azure Wood was huge. The moment it tightened, countless sword like cyan barbs grew out of its outer bark. These barbs pierced straight into the Cyan Hidden Dragon's dragon scales and dug into its flesh!.

Azure Wood Root Blades that could ignore defenses!

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier reached Azure Wood level, but its attacks still couldn't easily break through the Cyan Hidden Dragon's defense. However, these Azure Wood Root Blades successfully ripped through, leaving bright marks on the Cyan Hidden Dragon!

"Root Blades that can pierce even a Cyan Hidden Dragon's scales, this Devil Tree Battle Soldier truly is powerful!"

"The defense ignoring Azure Wood Root Blades truly are tyrannical."

Seeing the Cyan Hidden Dragon injured, those watching from

afar let out surprised exclamations.

The “defense ignoring” aspect of course is relative. For example, Zhan Ye’s Ink Armor Spike also has the effects of defense ignoring, but if the opponent’s defense is two full ranks higher than the soul pet, this defense ignoring characteristic still has a tough time working.

Xiao Ren’s Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s Azure Wood Root Blades followed the same rules. Ignoring the distance between two ranks, it caused the originally purely restrictive Azure Wood Root Blades to become potent weapons that could truly harm the Cyan Hidden Dragon!

“Azure Poison Injection!”

With a command from Xiao Ren, the Devil Tree Battle Soldier injected Azure Wood poison, a type of poison that could slowly weaken a soul pet, into the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s body.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s body was cut, and cyan blood flowed out of the wounds. Azure poison could be clearly seen slowly following the wounds as it tried to infiltrate the body.

But, the Cyan Hidden Dragon didn’t reveal any emotions. Against the Azure Wood Python’s binding, the Cyan Hidden Dragon was abnormally calm.

“Ao!!!!!!!!!!! Ao!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Suddenly, a ground shaking dragon roar sounded out, and the Cyan Hidden Dragon forcefully opened up its body, releasing incredible strength.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon completely ignored the deeper wounds that the Azure Wood Root Blades would cause on it as it wildly snapped the tough wood pythons apart!

“Papapapa!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The flexible Azure Wood roots finally couldn’t withstand the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s terrifying power, splitting into many pieces and falling heavily in the ruined city area.

The bloody wounds slowly dripped with dragon blood as a deafening roar still encircled everyone’s ears. Everyone looked frighteningly at the brutal dragon, eyes wide.

Everyone was surprised no only by the power that could directly snap Azure Wood. Even more shocking was, after the Cyan Hidden Dragon broke away from the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s attacks, the bloody wounds on it started healing at a rapid rate!!

The Dragon species was under Bug Type, and a Bug Type’s greatest strength laid in its unkillable life force as well as its mind-numbing regeneration abilities.

Dragons were the most outstanding of bug types, so their life

force and life regeneration were also the top of the soul pet realm!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's dragon armor was something that only Xiao Ren's powerful Three Headed Feathered Beast could barely break. After Xiao Ren finally broke through the Cyan Hidden Dragon's defense through his Devil Tree Battle Soldier's powerful ability to ignore defenses, he would never have expected the Cyan Hidden Dragon to heal up all the wounds in such a short time!!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon opened up its vast cyan wings and abruptly flapped them, shooting its body into the skies.

In an instant, after dodging the Three Headed Feathered Beast's Tri Element Blast, it suddenly retracted its wings again, sending its mountain like body feet first straight into the ground!!

Reckless Dragon Stomp!!

The dragon's body rolled with a wild gale as it landed, full of destructiveness, in this city area!

"Longlonglonglong~~~~~~~~~~~~"

Li City shook, streets collapsed, and the very ground sank!!

From a few hundred meters in the sky looking down, everyone could see that, amidst the rolling smoke, with the Cyan Hidden Dragon's landing as center, everything within a hundred meters of

it completely disappeared!

All houses within three hundred meters of it became flat ground!

Within a kilometers radius, cracks from after the earth shaking spread wildly!

There were still many people living in the streets. From a kilometer away, one could still see panicked people riding their weak soul pets as they ran, but the cracks were right behind them, quickly engulfing their miniscule bodies……

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s Reckless Dragon Stomp was completely for the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, because all of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s roots were buried in the ground!

Under the sweeping of power, Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s massive roots were all broken into countless pieces. Even the Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s massive body was clearly wavering in paralysis from the quake, almost falling down along with the sinking ground.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s attack perfectly displayed the Destructor title of dragon species. The middle aged generation experts were all stiff in the face, watching dumbstruck at the massive hole as well as the terrifying cracks spreading over a kilometer away!

Tenth rank power!

This attack clearly reached the tenth rank. If these young generation experts all summoned their soul pets to battle, this one hit alone would cause countless people to die!!

“Xiao Ren doesn’t seem to be able to stand it anymore.”

After cocooning, the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s power seemed to have increased a little more, causing the Soul Alliance Xiao Ren to have difficulties dealing with it.

Xiao Ren had already summoned his fourth soul pet. Other than his Three Headed Feathered Beast and the heavily wounded and retracted Devil Tree Battle Soldier, none of Xiao Ren’s other soul pets are on the same level as the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Even after Xiao Ren summoned five soul pets, the effects weren’t obvious.

As the combination of bug type and beast type, the dragon type may be somewhat susceptible to vine type soul pets restrictive powers. But, Xiao Ren’s somewhat vine type Devil Tree Battle Soldier was already heavily wounded. Other soul pets could rarely match the Cyan Hidden Dragon anymore.

“Yi!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Suddenly, a thunder like screech came from far away.

People immediately looked over to the sound and saw a soul pet riding countless lightning clouds up in the clouds.

“Its Elemental Sect Yu sect master!” Very quickly someone recognized the person who came.

Elemental Sect Yu sect master, he rides a ten winged purple lighting type soul pets. The soul pet’s body was only about three meters in length. Its five glamorous purple wings looked as if they were made of purple lightning, full of power and speed.

Yu sect master’s soul pet flew very quickly. Like a dazzling purple lighting, it quickly flew through the sky and, while leaving a purple trail, he strangely appeared in front of everyone.

“Xiao Ren, don’t randomly try to be brave. Thinking back, it took the combined power of so many of us just to hurt it.” Yu sect master rode his Purple Lightning Heavenly Bird and said to Xiao Ren, who was fighting the Cyan Hidden Dragon alone.

However, Xiao Ren was proud and didn’t like teaming up. He didn’t even acknowledge the Yu sect master who was watching in the skies. He started chanting an incantation as he channeled a ninth rank soul technique!

Yu sect master didn’t watch idly. His Purple Lightning Heavenly Bird quickly flew above the Cyan Hidden Dragon and spiralled downwards, creating a purple path in the air and falling straight onto the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s head!

“Honghonghonghong~~~~~~~~”

Suddenly, beams of ten meters wide fell in the spiralling purple path, heavily blasting the Cyan Hidden Dragon, who fell into the huge pit!

“Ao!!!!!!!!!”

Experiencing the blasting of lightning, the Cyan Hidden Dragon immediately let out a pained and angered howl!

Purple light appeared and electrical arcs appeared on the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s body. Its body was like a rock. After forcefully bearing the powerful energy, it opened its wings up again!

“Huhu~~~~~~~~~~”

A gale started as the Cyan Hidden Dragon lifted up a veil of dirt. Jumping into the sky, it immediately jumped through the lightning infused purple path. Going straight against the destructive lightning strikes, it became a cyan dragon horn, as if a sword pointing to the heavens, piercing straight to the skies!!

The Purple Lightning Heavenly Bird’s speed was very fast, and its dodging was naturally godlike rank, but the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s horn seemed to have a strong ability to lock on. No matter how the Purple Lightning Heavenly Bird dodged, it was in vain. It ultimately got pierced straight through by the Cyan Hidden Dragon!

“Puchi~~~~~~~~~”

Blood splattered in the sky. The Purple Lightning Heavenly Bird only cast one technique before getting skewered by the might of the Cyan Hidden Dragon!!

Heavily wounded!!

Purple Lightning Heavenly Bird, a monarch rank soul pet, able to be ranked within the most powerful soul pets of Zhan Li Kingdom, actually just heavily wounded so easily!

At this moment, everyone felt a coldness emanate from the deepest parts of their souls and cover their bodies!

Chapter 284: The Great Fight of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might

The Yu sect master's face became unbelievably pale. If not for the timely casted defense, this attack could've killed both him and his soul pet!

With the chant of an incantation, the Yu sect master was sent flying into the air, and he forcefully retracted his Purple Lightning Heavenly Bird into his soul pet space.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's eyes quickly locked onto the defenseless Yu sect master and flapped its wings!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's wings flapped at a very fast pace. With every flap, a cyan, wind-like energy gathered.

Very quickly, in front of the Cyan Hidden Dragon's flapping, a chaotic cyan energy hurricane gathered. This cyan energy hurricane was still expanding, as if a thunderstorm that was about to bring destruction. It was taking over the entire sky above the city at a frightening rate!

"Longlonglonglong~~~~~~~~~~"

Rolling like thunder, turning like clouds, sometimes crashing like tidal waves, the cyan energy covered the bright sun, becoming a terrifying cyan destruction that rolled towards the general area of Yu sect master.

Yu sect master's expression grew even worse. He couldn't possibly dodge an attack like this cyan hurricane. He didn't even have time to summon a soul pet, and was only able to cast a defense incantation, wrapping himself in layer upon layer of golden radiant armor.

Yu sect master had many middle aged generation experts beside him spectating. However, this cyan hurricane's effective range was very scary. The soul pet trainers behind Yu sect master all didn't get left out, and very quickly got devoured by the cyan hurricane, causing screams to sound en masse in the skies!

In front of the cyan hurricane, Yu sect master's body was miniscule. While wavering, layers upon layers of golden armor were also shattered, leaving some deep wounds that bloodied his body……

The middle aged elemental sect members, seeing that their sect master had been thrown a few kilometers away, all hurriedly rode their wing type soul pets along the edges of the cyan hurricane towards their sect master, in case their sect master experienced any misfortunes.

"Beng~~~~~~~~~~"

When the sect master only had one layer of golden armor left, the cyan hurricane finally showed signs of stopping. Yu sect master fell heavily into a city fountain, sending the rest of the water exploding in a cascade.

The late coming elemental sect middle generation members all came one by one and pulled their haggard sect master out of the fountain and casted all sorts of healing spells on Yu sect master.

Yu sect master's face was full of blood and dirt. When he stood up again, his eyes bore anger as he watched the arrogant cyan figure in the sky.

Elemental Sect had always been slightly lower ranking than Soul Palace, Nightmare Palace, Soul Pet Palace, and Soul Alliance. Even people like Yu Shang Yu palace master could only barely fight the Cyan Hidden Dragon head on. If it were a lower ranking Kingdom Capital palace master, they definitely wouldn't be a match. As for elemental sect Yu sect master, he was even worse than the Li City soul palace palace master. Recklessly attacking the Cyan Hidden Dragon at the beginning was purely looking for trouble!

……

The Cyan Hidden Dragon had always only used one claw in battle, because in the other claw, it still tightly held Chu Mu, who was absorbing the energy of Jade Spring.

Jade Spring's energy was like flowing water, and Chu Mu's soul remembrance was like Chu Mu's hands. Everytime Chu Mu used his hand of remembrance to grab the Jade Spring, it always quietly slipped through Chu Mu's fingers. Countless tries ended with the same result, causing him to still haven't absorbed the energy.

Outside the claw was an earthshaking battle; Chu Mu could easily tell from the unceasing spatial tremors and sounds, .

Li City had many experts. Of which, Li old city master Li Sheng was a super expert that could match the Cyan Hidden Dragon. In addition, Soul Alliance, Nightmare Palace, and Soul Palace all had top tier experts from other regions that came. Chu Mu couldn't help but worry if the Cyan Hidden Dragon could escape alive.

But, Chu Mu knew that his worry was meaningless. The most important task currently was to absorb the energy into his blood vessels and cause him to transform, or else the Jade Spring will fall back into Li old City master's hands. After that, taking it back will be even tougher.

"Liquid, if I had water type soul techniques, I may be able to guide it." Chu Mu guessed silently.

In reality, Chu Mu had always used his soul remembrance to inject energy into his soul pets and strengthen them. However, when it came to himself, he didn't know where to start.

"Human bodies can't absorb energy. Can it be that my human blood is causing the energy to be unable to enter my blood vessels?" Chu Mu suddenly thought of an issue.

Chu Mu was currently in a weakened half devil state, slowly making the change from devil back to human. Or because of his wounded state, Chu Mu was already human, body, blood, bones, organs, everything……

“Young master, doing that is incredibly risky. You have just half deviled, your soul is already at an extremely high temperature. If you don’t use cold medicine to lower its heat and half devil again, the time before your soul completely disintegrates will be drastically reduced. Then, without even waiting for the noble woman to find the Worldly Immortal Ice, you might have already become a mindless half devil.” Old Li said immediately.

Chu Mu hesitated. According to what Old Li said, he was using his life in exchange for this energy. In fact, if there were any mishaps, it could cause even worse results. This was indeed a tough choice.

“If we can find ice type soul items, it could still delay it, right?” Chu Mu opened his mouth to ask.

“That’s true, but your soul is the most important pillar of life. If it suffers some accident, recovering will be very difficult.” Old Li said.

To earn power, one must pay the price.

Like the power of half devil, Chu Mu had to constantly suffer the burning of his high temperature soul, and even become a mindless devilized organism.

Finally, Chu Mu made the decision. No matter how hot his soul would become, no matter how heavy the soul pain would be in the future, Chu Mu decided he couldn’t give up this perfect chance to

greatly increase his strength!

The white devil's soul was originally slowly leaving Chu Mu's body. When Chu Mu started casting the soul devour incantation, White Nightmare let out an alarmed screech.

Chu Mu had already reached the soul master rank, so the White Nightmare couldn't truly escape from Chu Mu's remembrance. When the soul devour was cast again, the White Nightmare's soul was again merged with Chu Mu's soul. The previously darkened white demonic devil flames on him relit!

"Huhuhuhu~~~~~~~~"

White demonic devil flames burned within the Cyan Hidden Dragon's claws. The coldness attacked the powerful soul of the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon could already feel the soul hurting cold devil flames, but to the powerful soul of the Cyan Hidden Dragon, these flames wasn't too painful to deal with.

"Quick look, the Cyan Hidden Dragon's claws!"

The white demonic devil flames burned and soon everyone noticed that the Cyan Hidden Dragon's claw were covered in silent pale flames, bringing a cold soul aura that spread to nearby regions.

On the ground, Xiao Ren looked up at the Cyan Hidden Dragon in the skies. He was a very observant man. From the beginning of the battle, Xiao Ren had noticed that the Cyan Hidden Dragon had never attacked using its other dragon claw, and this claw was always tightly grasped, meaning there was something in the palm of that claw.

“White demonic devil flames, isn’t that the energy crystal of a White Nightmare?!” The Nightmare Palace sub palace master said.

This White Nightmare Palace sub palace master had just summoned his ninth phase White Nightmare. What made him confused was, the aura in the dragon’s claws made him think it was a White Nightmare, but was somewhat different still. In a moment, his face grew solemn.

White Fiend Devil Flames!!

The ninth phase White Nightmare controlled white fiend devil flames, even stronger than white demonic devil flames. These flames were even more powerful against the soul, causing even the Cyan Hidden Dragon to not fight head on against it. When the white fiend devil flames rolled towards it like a massive tidal wave, the Cyan Hidden Dragon retracted its wings and dashed towards the ground.

Not long after the White Nightmare Palace master came, Soul Palace Yu palace master arrived as well.

Yu palace master rode a ninth phase Light Rhinoceros. This light

rhinoceros was covered in gold armor from head to toe, plated and majestic. When it appeared in this street area, the entire street seemed to be brightened by the golden light of this fearsome soul pet.

“Houhouhou!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The Light Rhinoceros doesn’t have nay flying ability. Seeing the Cyan Hidden Dragon dive down from above, the golden radiance on its body suddenly bloomed, causing even the sun to lose favor!

Holy Defilement!

All the golden light suddenly retracted, all gathering on the Light Rhinoceros’s horn. With a roar from the beast, the golden glow shot straight from the ground to the skies like a brilliant dash of flames!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon was already surrounded by countless Li City experts. Seeing the Holy Defilement pierce through to it, its cyan wings suddenly lit up with a cyan glow!

“Hua~~~~~~~~~~~~~”

The cyan lit dragon wings suddenly flapped. The Holy Defilement that came from five hundred meters below was swatted, causing its direction to make a turn and go very accurately towards the overbearing White Nightmare!

Seeing the energy of the Holy Defilement redirected, even Yu Shang's face showed shock. This Cyan Hidden Dragon was truly a bit too ridiculously powerful. It may be the Cyan Hidden Dragon with strength closest to the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon!

"Weng~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~"

The Holy Defilement went straight towards the White Nightmare. The ninth phase white nightmare had dark type, so light type techniques could cause even greater harm to it.

However, the white nightmare's people had already summoned other soul pets. Through a water type defense, it deflected the Holy Defilement once again and sent it to the ground.

Chapter 285: The Great Battle of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might

Palace Lord Yu, Elemental Sect Lord Yu, Soul Alliance Xiao Ren, and Nightmare Palace's Lord had all summoned their most powerful soul pets. Immediately, due to the fight between the powerful creatures, this area continued to be demolished into ruins as a terrifying energy violently expanded.

When it came to flying, the Cyan Hidden Dragon had an enormous advantage; in order to avoid the attacks of soul pets that couldn't fly, it flew over 500 hundred meters in the air.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon didn't enjoy continuously fighting, and it knew that in this city, there still was the exceptionally powerful city lord. Thus, it wanted to fly out of the city.

Only, the most powerful experts of these factions all intended to fight. Each one of them had already summoned five soul pets, and every one of these soul pets were at the pinnacle of the soul pet realm. There were a total of twenty soul pets attacking the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

The four experts weren't necessarily coordinating with each other while fighting, but they all more or less were fighting to stop the Cyan Hidden Dragon from fleeing. After all, the moment they gave it an expansive area of blue sky, none of the soul pets present would be able to catch up to the Cyan Hidden Dragon's speed.

"Ao!!!!!!!"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon had just flown above 500 meters when black lightning clouds emerged above it, covering an area of 500 meters!

“Hong hong hong hong!!!!!”

Purple lightning interweaved above Li City as they fiercely pounded on the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s body.

Amidst the densely clustered bolts of lightning, the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s body continuously changed locations in the air as it nimbly passed through the high frequency purple lightning!

“Don’t let it flee!” yelled Xiao Ren. He then rode on his Three Headed Feathered Beast through the lightning area that Sect Lord Yu had set up.

Xiao Ren had faced the Cyan Hidden Dragon first and he had summoned a total of six soul pets, of which four had been heavily wounded. Presently, the only ones that could continue fighting were his most powerful Three Headed Feathered Beast and the rock type monarch.

Among all the soul pets, Xiao Ren’s Three Headed Feathered Beast could be regarded as the only soul pet that dared to directly face off against the Cyan Hidden Dragon. This time, under the cover of all of the experts’ elemental soul pets, the Three Headed Feathered Beast flapped its wings and appeared in front of the Cyan Hidden Dragons. Its three heads abruptly bit onto the Cyan

Hidden Dragon's body, wings and dragon arm!

"Ao!!!!!!!!"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon painfully let out a roar and its dragon arm that had been bitten to the bone suddenly slackened. Chu Mu who was lying in the palm of the Cyan Hidden Dragon accidentally slipped out and fell straight down from five hundred meters up!

"Ao!!! Ao!!!!!!!!!"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon was angry and it let out two consecutive dragon roars. Its two powerful dragon claws condensed a dragon ray and it firmly gripped onto the Three Headed Feathered Beast's wings!

"Sila~~~~~~~"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's strength was extremely powerful and this terrifying rip caused the Three Headed Feathered Beast to suddenly spit out fresh blood. Not only were its wings snapped off, but its body was also pulled down!

Two white colored feathered wings were casually thrown away by the Cyan Hidden Dragon which slightly raised its head and a frightening cyan Dragon Destruction Ray once more condensed in its throat!

"Hong long long~~~~~~~"

The terrifying Dragon Destruction Ray spat out and struck the Three Headed Feathered Beast directly in its chest. It was like sunlight striking the ground as the Three Headed Feathered Beast was knocked from 500 meters in the air to another city district a few kilometers away!

In a distant location, balls of surging smoke ascended into the air. It was unknown how many buildings and streets the Three Headed Feathered Beast had knocked down before it finally stopped in the center plaza.

Seeing his Three Headed Feathered Beast get knocked down, Xiao Ren's face turned serious. He quickly summoned the soul pet he rode on and rushed rapidly to its location to use an extremely valuable healing medicine to heal it.

After the Cyan Hidden Dragon knocked back the Three Headed Feathered Beast, it looked down and quickly locked onto the burning white demonic flames of Chu Mu that had already fallen over a hundred meters.

Upon slipping out from in between the Cyan Hidden Dragon's fingers, the white demonic devil flames on his body grew increasingly exuberant. When he fell through the air, others were able to strikingly see a white colored devil flaming tail falling like a gorgeous shooting star.

From five hundred meters in the air, someone with a defense like Chu Mu's would definitely have his body shattered upon impact

with the ground. The Cyan Hidden Dragon abruptly folded its wings as a a tornado-like energy appeared around its body before orbiting its body as it quickly swooped down.

“What is that white colored thing?”

Very soon, someone noticed the white devil flame figure falling through the air, but the majority of people's’ attentions were focused on the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s body; thus, not everyone noticed this.

Far away high up in a lighthouse, Ye Qingzi and Ye Wansheng stood there watching the incomparably vast horizon in front of them. Only, when Ye Qingzi discovered a white streak of light falling vertically, she began worrying.

Of everyone, only Ye Qingzi knew that the white figure was the white demonic devil monarch transformed Ch uMu. If he fell like this, he would definitely die!

“Put your attention on the Cyan Hidden Dragon, don’t let it flee!” loudly roared Sect Lord Yu. He ignored the falling Chu Mu and ordered his four elemental soul pets to simultaneously use different energy techniques towards the Cyan Hidden Dragon!

Four different energies flew into the air and beautifully swept across the ruined city, striking the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon had already detected Sect Lord Yu’s

attack and its two dragon calls full of force suddenly criss crossed in front of its chest. As a cyan light sharply blossomed in its pupils, the Cyan Hidden Dragon waved its two claws!!!

“Shuashua!!!!!!!!!”

Two cyan colored claw blades shockingly appeared like two intersecting, long and narrow cyan bent moons. Sparks radiated around it in the air as it fiercely slashed at Sect Lord Yu’s soul pets!!

The dragon claws were moving extremely quickly and as if they teleported, they instantly arrived.

“Chi~~~~~~~~~~”

Sect Lord Yu simply hadn’t thought that the Cyan Hidden Dragon could launch such a terrifying attack so far away. He further didn’t have his soul pets take any defensive measures and the two cyan colored Dragon Moon Claws instantly swept across his ninth phase high staged Chaotic Thunder Sprite!

The Chaotic Thunder Sprite didn’t have any blood and after it was slashed by the Dragon Moon Claw, its body was split into four pieces, instantly dying!!

His soul pet having died, Sect Lord Yu’s face paled the moment after, because he suffered a soul wound!

“Ao!!!!!!!”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s hegemonic and savageness stunned every expert present now; none of them dared to have any of their soul pets stop the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Looking down, the Cyan HIdden Dragon abruptly discovered that Chu Mu was about to hit the ground. It promptly didn’t hesitate and rapidly swooped down.

A howling gale whistled in Chu Mu’s ear and he could clearly feel his body fall; moreover, as he fell, he picked up more speed.

Chu Mu’s defense was at the eighth stage, but falling from a height of five hundred meters was exceptionally fatal. He was unfortunately, however, in an immobile state.

Chu Mu’s heart hung by a thread because he could feel that he was extremely close to the ground.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon was also fighting for seconds. When it saw that it was only ten meters from Chu Mu, suddenly, another soul pet appeared in front of it!

This soul pet’s appearance was abnormally strange . As if it had created a sonic boom to get here, it seemed to control instantaneously movement.

Its demonic pupils released an ostentatious and savage glint and a

grey radiance released from its demonic body…

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's body was completely cyan, but when this strange demon appeared, the Cyan Hidden Dragon's body quickly turned a grey color!

Mental Petrify!

A peak demon type soul pet technique!

Mental Petrify meant that the Cyan Hidden Dragon was incapable of using any technique and its body would also be heavily affected.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon had experienced this technique before when fighting the old Li City Lord. It was precisely this terrifying Mental Petrify that caused the Cyan Hidden Dragon to suffer. Now that this technique had appeared again, the Cyan Hidden Dragon's eyes changed into an abnormal rage.

Facing this mind petrifying attack, the Cyan Hidden Dragon's defenses were unable to stop it. Seeing the grey color proliferate to its neck, it swept its gaze over Chu Mu that was about to smack the ground.

The earth's aura was extremely close and Chu Mu knew that only a second later, his body would shatter. Whether he could live or not would depend on whether the Jade Spring could bring him back from the dead.

“Ao!!!!!!!!”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon realized that Chu Mu’s life was in danger and being unable to deal with the demon in front of it, it once more condensed a Dragon Destruction Ray in its mouth that it spat at Chu Mu!

Twenty meters!

With the speed Chu Mu was falling at, twenty meters was merely the blink of an eye. Just as Chu Mu was about to suffer from the heavy fall, a cyan light blew up not far from him!!

“Hong hong hong~~~~~”

The Dragon Destruction Ray blew up on the ground and suddenly, a violent storm arose which practically knocked Chu Mu flying the second he was about to hit the ground!!

Chu Mu felt that he had hit the ground, but this shock blast engulfed him, alleviating a majority of the descent force.

If he could release cold sweat while in the half devil state, Chu Mu presently would already be covered in cold sweat.

Of course, while Chu Mu had resolved the crisis of his body being shattered, his tiny body was been knocked nearly a mile away,

causing his bones to pretty much be knocked loose.

“Don’t waste time. Quickly absorb the energy into your veins and arteries!” hastily yelled Old Li.

Chu Mu couldn’t afford to be in pain from his bones right now. As the half devil state grew more and more concentrated, Chu Mu discovered that guiding the Jade Spring energy was no longer as difficult. Following his guidance, the energy slowly absorbed into the beast type lineage of Chu Mu’s half devil state!

Chapter 286: White Devil Flames In A Summit Contest

The energy didn't move very quickly, and Chu Mu could feel the cold liquid slowly circulate into his burning veins and arteries.

There was no rejection between the two, and the devil flame burning veins and arteries didn't drop in temperature from the Jade Spring, nor did the Jade Spring lose the energy within from the burning devil flames...

The Jade Spring began to circulate within Chu Mu's veins and arteries from the most important blood in his heart all the way to the pulsing veins and arteries in his limbs. This process wasn't very different from Chu Mu slowly guiding soul crystal energy into a soul pet's body. He could feel the flesh, bones, blood, and nerves clearly change.

At the beginning, this strengthening speed allowed Chu Mu to adapt, as the feeling of his body being full of strength was truly like shedding his mortal body.

However, as the Jade Spring absorbing increased, Chu Mu increasingly found that the energy had reached a level where his soul remembrance was incapable of controlling it.

The half devil state of Chu Mu had his beast type lineage strengthened because of the jade Spring, and as the beast type grew stronger, the absorbing speed of the Jade Spring grew faster and faster.

Chu Mu's soul remembrance was merely at the second remembrance spirit master level and as the half devil state strength increased, Chu Mu's spirit master remembrance could no longer control the Jade Spring pouring into his body.

Some unknown time later, the boundless energy of the Jade Spring began pouring in so fast that Chu Mu felt his veins and arteries were like a blooming vessel for the Jade Spring to surge like a flood. It surged around his veins and arteries, causing an extremely bloated feeling to transmit all over his body!

"Old Li, what's happening?!"

Chu Mu used soul remembrance to yell at Old Li. As the energy grew in amount, it was practically going to blow up his veins and arteries. An unprecedented fear, like the Jade Spring itself, filled Chu Mu's body.

"I... I don't know either... it could be that the energy is too much; even in the half devil state it's still very hard to absorb." Old Li let out an expression of panic.

The Jade Spring was meant to baptise a Hidden Dragon. While Chu Mu's body had truly become stronger after transforming into a half devil, it was still incapable of reaching the Hidden Dragon's level. Moreover, there were many times that when a Hidden Dragon received a Jade Spring baptism, it would feel body-breaking pain; this was even more so the case for the inferior body of Chu Mu.

……

The Cyan Hidden Dragon continuously changed locations in the air, and its powerful dragon strength transformed into a cyan dragon whirlpool that arose from the ground to the clouds!

As the engulfing range of the whirlpool expanded, the spectating middle-aged members all began to retreat to a further place. They all were shocked as they stared at the cyan whirlpool growing larger.

Such a powerful and boundless whirlpool was capable of destroying a street district, yet it was used to only attack Kingdom Lord Li Sheng's powerful demon.

Li Sheng had already summoned two soul pets, and the abnormally fast demon began to restrict the Cyan Hidden Dragon's mind without cease. This prevented it from using any techniques while the other enormous violent beast stepping in the air faced off directly against the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Its claws and fierce teeth left multiple bloody wounds on the Cyan Hidden Dragon's body.

Kingdom Lord Li Sheng hovered in the air in a robe. Facing the Cyan Hidden Dragon, he didn't stop using soul techniques. If it wasn't for the Red Galactic Demon Emperor's powerful mental restriction abilities, Kingdom Lord Li Sheng would definitely not be able to restrict the Cyan Hidden Dragon so quickly.

"Kingdom Lord Li's demon is probably at the pinnacle of

demons, right?" the young generation members were even further away from the battlefield and when they saw the Red Galactic Demon Emperor easily attack the Cyan Hidden Dragon, all of them let out expressions of respect!

"That red colored soul pet which shape cannot be clearly seen is called the Red Galactic Demon Emperor? What soul pet is that?" asked a few young generation members who didn't know.

At this moment, all of them shifted their gazes to Dong Qing, as they wanted to garner information about Kingdom Lord Li's powerful Red Galactic Demon Emperor.

"The Red Galactic Demon Emperor is one of Northern Forbidden Region's strongest demon species. It's said that Western Kingdom's Northern Forbidden Region also harbors a Blue Galactic Demon Emperor which is the lord of that bewildering world. In truth, the Red Galactic Demon Emperor that Old Li is using is a twin brother of that hegemon, and within that is a very long story. In short, after old Kingdom Lord Li's cultivation, the Red Galactic Demon Lord's was actually on top of that wild hegemon. Although it hasn't reached the true pinnacle of demons, it wasn't very far." said young lady Sha in place of Dong Qing.

"What about that soul pet that can walk on clouds?" asked another person.

The wild-ape like soul pet with a long snake tail was presently the only soul pet that could truly contend with the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Its valiant strength wasn't inferior to the Cyan Hidden Dragon's wild and violent aura; this caused all the soul pet trainers

to involuntarily sigh.

“Cloud Snake Ape Monarch. It’s old Kingdom Lord Li’s strongest main pet. This soul pet was basically the one old Kingdom Lord Li used to establish his position as an upper class Kingdom Lord!” said Old Li.

Cloud Snake Ape Monarch: demon world - beast type - ape species - Cloud Snake Ape Monarch - monarch rank

The firmness of its long cloud snake tail wasn’t inferior to the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s tail. From head to toe, it was covered in flesh that was brimming with explosive force. With silky smooth skin, it looked like a statue completely carved out of copper essence. Its skin only gave off a gold property lustre and with such skin-it wasn’t inferior to the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s cyan dragon scale defense!

“Sunset Roc!”

Old Li raised the corners of his mouth, and chanted another incantation, summoning his third main pet - the Sunset Roc!

After the tenth phase Sunset Roc appeared, the glorious sun transformed into an incomplete sun-like tangerine yellow color. The tangerine-yellow colored energy illuminated the tenth phase Sunset Roc’s body, reflecting off a gold-yellow. The Sunset Roc unrestrainedly emitted the tyrannical and arrogant aura of an aerial emperor!

The five great Li City experts had all summoned over four soul pets, and there were a few with outstanding strength.

The White Nightmare Palace's vice city lord had a ninth phase monarch white nightmare and tenth phase Blue Nightmare. Two powerful nightmares - one white and one blue. The demonic devil flames were like flaming clouds that covered the heaven and earth!

Soul Palace's Palace Lord Yu Shang had a tenth phase Light Rhinoceros. Palace Lord Yu didn't express much enthusiasm towards besieging the Cyan Hidden Dragon as he seemed to not have summoned his strongest main soul pet to participate in the fight.

The soul wounded Sect Lord Yu didn't stop fighting and continued to control his soul pet with the strongest fighting strength, the ninth phase Chaotic Thunder Sprite, to vent his anger at the Cyan Hidden Dragon with lightning.

As for Kingdom Lord Li Sheng's ninth phase Red Galactic Demon Emperor, ninth phase Cloud Snake Ape Monarch, and tenth phase Sunset Roc, any one of them could directly face off against the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Various experts and various main pets had been summoned. None of these soul pets was under the ninth phase and none of them had fighting strength lower than a monarch. With so many soul pets that they could only look up to appearing in front of these young people, further coupled with them besieging a Cyan Hidden Dragon, this gave them as well as the middle aged people an unprecedented shock!

At the moment, everyone in Li City pretty much had his or head tilted upwards and looked on anxiously at the universally shocking fight. The entire city had descended into a never before panic of a great battle between the strongest soul pets.

It could be said that the last indistinct night fight caused the Li City residents to tremble in fear, but this time personally witnessing it a plethora of miles away in clear sky caused a huge commotion in Li City as millions of people were shocked!

……

This fight could only only be described by world-shaking. Such a glorious fight between the strongest soul pets was something no one wanted to divert their gazes off of.

Through its wounds, the Cyan Hidden Dragon let out an angry roar. Fighting alone against over a dozen ninth phase monarch rank soul pets, even if it was any stronger, it was still forced its submission. It seemed that it was impossible for it to escape this time. The people whose hearts were trembling silently began guessing how long the Cyan Hidden Dragon could hold out and exactly which expert would deliver the fatal blow to it.

As for the area underneath this city-shaking fight, no one paid attention to the white devil figure that had slipped through the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s finger cracks. Neither did anyone investigate why the Cyan Hidden Dragon had willingly taken the Red Galactic Demon Emperor’s mental petrify in order to save the

figure that nearly shattered all its bones!

At the moment, this devil figure that no one was paying any attention to was still lying in the ruins. In between the disheveled rocks and pile of rocks flew up traces of white devil flames. These devil flames didn't burn the rocks at all and merely burned within the ruins outlandishly, mysteriously, evilly and charmingly...

.....

"I've finally found you!!!! Hahaha!!"

Beside the ruins where the devil flames were burning, an indistinct silhouette slowly emerged...

"A group of idiots. All of you are dealing with the Cyan Hidden Dragon, but none of you could have thought that the Hidden Dragon egg is in this brat's hands. Haha, the Hidden Dragon egg will now belong to me, Duan Xinhe!" mocked Duan Xinhe as he glanced at the gorgeous fight in the sky between the peak soul pets.

Relying on the Gluttonous Insect Monster's invisibility ability, Duan Xinhe, with great difficulty, broke free of the two Soul Alliance member's pursuit.

When he saw Chu Mu fall from the sky, he had originally planned on fleeing, but grit his teeth and came back.

What made him pleasantly surprised was that everyone's

attention was focused on the Cyan Hidden Dragon and no one was paying this brat any attention. This made things much easier for Duan Xinhe.

“Go dig it out for me!” Duan Xinhe was rapt with ecstasy in his heart. As long as he could obtain the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg, even if one of his Gluttonous Insect Monsters had died, what would that matter?!

“Sou sou!!!!!”

Just as the Gluttonous Insect Monster launched itself at Chu Mu buried in the ruins, a black soul pet quickly threw itself at the Gluttonous Insect Monster, knocking it flying.

Duan Xinhe was stunned and when he clearly saw the black soul pet, he released his soul remembrance. He instantly locked onto a gorgeous woman behind a half-destructed building. The worries in his heart eased and a sinister smile rose on his face.

Duan Xinhe’s eyes that were filled completely with madness quickly flickered with lust. He said: “I wondered who it was. It turns out it was a beautiful girl. Haha, this time I won’t let you get away…”

Chapter 287: Metamorphosis against a Powerful Opponent, Seventh Phase Mo Xie

“Huhuhuhu~~~~~~~~~~”

The crimson red flames and blood colored flames interlaced in the sky, creating a gorgeous nine tailed fire fan. Just as Duan Xinhe was about to cast a soul technique, this nine tailed fire fan split into nine and swept towards Duan Xinhe.

Duan Xinhe’s attention quickly turned over. Giving up his soul technique against Ye Qingzi hastily, he casted a water colored defense that wrapped around him, blocking Mo Xie’s Nine Tail Fan outside.

“With just you people, you want to stop me, Duan Xinhe? Laughable!” Duan Xinhe looked mockingly at Ye Qingzi and the Royal Flamed Nine Tail Inferno Fox beside her.

The Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox was powerful, but it was only at the sixth phase ninth stage, completely an unmatured monarch rank soul pet. Duan Xinhe’s Gluttonous Insect Monster was already enough to deal with it!

After attacking one, Ye Qingzi’s War Court Black Beast quickly retreated to Ye Qingzi’s side. The War Court Black Beast also didn’t dare to fight head on with the Gluttonous Insect Monster, so after slamming it away, it naturally had to keep its distance.

Duan Xinhe only had a ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster left, but facing Ye Qingzi's War Court Black Beast and Nine Tail Inferno Fox, Duan Xinhe only laughed belittlingly.

With a slow incantation, this time Duan Xinhe was reading out a soul pact incantation!!

"To raise the Hundred Mother, I gave up all my soul pet space and put attached pets in them……" Duan Xinhe started laughing, but his face was more twisted and malevolent.

"Of my ten children, eight were killed by Soul Palace, while of the remaining two, one was killed by this boy……" Duan Xinhe said at the same time he was casting the incantation.

"Now that I'm about to get the Hidden Dragon egg, you come out and obstruct me. I can only feed you to my wife now!" Duan Xinhe laughed sinisterly.

Finally, Duan Xinhe's incantation finished!

This time, Duan Xinhe's soul pact incantation was surrounded by many symbols and words necessary for a soul pact, meaning this time Duan Xinhe was summoning the mother of all the Gluttonous Insect Monsters - the Hundred Mother!

The Hundred Mother was the strangest soul pet of bug types. To sign a contract with it, you had to lose multiple soul pet spaces, because the Hundred Mother could create multitudes of attached

pets, who all obeyed the soul pet trainer as well!

When the Hundred Mother slowly appeared from the soul pet symbol, Ye Qingzi's expression turned even more hopeless, because she had never seen such an ugly soul pet!

The Hundred Mother's ugliness couldn't be described by words. It was completely like someone stitched countless broken Gluttonous Insect Monster body pieces together without organization. Even its yellow eyes were scattered in their location, creating this organism that didn't have a single thing it could be compared to.

Hundred Mother: Beast World - Bug type - Attached Mother species - Gluttonous Insect Monster Hundred Mother subspecies - Commander rank

A special soul pet was able to create hundreds of Gluttonous Insect Monsters as attached soul pets. Its first generation were the most powerful, and third generation the least. The combined amount from all three generations could reach nearly one thousand monsters.

Ye Qingzi remembered that, when cleaning up the Gluttonous Insect Monster corpses, other than the first seven hundred corpses discovered, there were a hundred or so floating in the old site main hall as well, adding up to eight hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters.

Eight hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters meant that Duan

Xinhe and his Hundred Mother very likely was reaching Thousand Mother rank.

Yet, at this time, seeing the real Hundred Mother appear, with the disgusting aura of what felt like a hundred Gluttonous Insect Monsters buffeting her face, she was even more apprehensive.

It could be said that it was an enemy that Ye Qingzi couldn't defeat!

"Mo Xie, leave here." Ye Qingzi said to Mo Xie.

Ye Qingzi didn't lose her mind. Facing such a powerful opponent, no matter how hard she attempted to fight, she would die. Under such inevitable circumstances, she could only bite her lips and choose to retreat.

"Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~"

Mo Xie shook her head, not meaning to escape.

From the beginning, it had always been this way: where Chu Mu was, Mo Xie was. Even against the mysterious unknown soul pet on Prison Island, against the owner of the Misleading World Blue Galactic Demon Emperor, or the ninth phase Heavenly Devil Insect monarch……

Mo Xie knew, if she just delayed for a few more minutes, Chu Mu would finish absorbing the Jade Spring, so she had to protect him,

no matter what, until then.

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~”

After telling Ye Qingzi this message, Mo Xie’s body started burning brighter with the royal flames……

Streams of wind blew down from the magnificent battle in the skies, ruffling Mo Xie’s silver fur. At this moment, her nine imposing tails lifted up into the air.

From the lowest ranking Silver Moon Fox, to the Evil Flame Six Tail Demon Fox, to the monarch like Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox, Mo Xie had never feared any powerful soul pet. Her fighting intent and willpower would always burn on. Even against emperor ranks, the demon fox that had continuously mutating blood in her bones didn’t back off in the least, let alone just a commander rank Hundred Mother and a Gluttonous Insect Monster!

The difference in stage and power was bleak, but she would never lose in demeanor and willpower. Mo Xie’s royal flames were like flames of anger and war, burning brighter and wilder. Her silver demon eyes let out the most sinister glint, painting perfectly the arrogance expected of a monarch upon demon foxes. All of this incited the potential within its body!

The royal flames that engulfed the silver body started to change. Two different coloured flames laced together to create a special energy that changed Mo Xie’s body.

Mo Xie's body had always been a combination of power and speed. With this metamorphosis, it pushed this to an even more perfect state!

"Metamorphosis..... Is Mo Xie morphing....." Seeing Mo Xie's body undergo change, Ye Qingzi's face slowly showed doubt.

"How..... How can a soul pet just metamorphosize under such situations..... This is against all common sense!" Ye Wansheng, who had just summoned his Sword Beetle, was already dumbstruck.

A soul pet's metamorphosis had to fulfill many circumstances. A soul pet's innate talent, soul pet's fighting training, as well as the soul pet's own will and belief.

Not a single one of these could be left out. Speaking of will and belief, a soul pet needed a very powerful will in fighting. Such a willpower was often cultivated by the soul pet trainer. However, once it lost a battle, the willpower would often be hurt.

Similarly, when an unbeatable organism appears, the soul pet's own faith often was severely wounded. Without the support of the powerful willpower and belief, how could a soul pet metamorphosize?

But, Mo Xie did!

Facing the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster and Hundred Mother, she went into metamorphosis!

“This fox, does it have a willpower that far transcends its rank and phase, or does it just not have an idea of what phases and ranks are, to be able to just metamorphosize like that……” Seeing the Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox become seventh phase, Ye Wansheng was speechless.

Ye Qingzi saw that Mo Xie had dug up all her potential, so she herself bit her thin lips and, seemingly making a huge decision, she decided to help Chu Mu get these few minutes of time.

“Brother, you distract the middle aged generation people, I’ll restrict the Hundred Mother!” Ye Qingzi said.

“Restrict, how are you going to restrict……” As Ye Qingzi was speaking, he suddenly realized what Ye Qingzi was going to do and his face changed drastically, immediately roaring, “No, definitely no!”

“Go quickly, or else we’ll all die!” Ye Qingzi didn’t say anything else, as she already slowly closed her eyes……

Her long eyelashes quivered slightly. Beautiful hair flowed softly in the wind, in tandem with her white clothes……

Ye Wansheng gnashed his teeth and looked evilly at Duan Xinhe, “If you dare harm a single hair of my sister, I will cut you and your

stupid bugs up and put them in jars full of poisonous bugs. I'll keep you alive for a hundred years, letting you endure the pain of poison, bites, and devours for the entire duration!"

"Heng heng, none of you dare even think of leaving!" How would Duan Xinhe be afraid of Ye Wansheng's threat.

The Hundred Mother by his side had already extended its dismembered-limb-like body. Half of its yellow eyes locked onto Ye Qingzi, who had started reading a soul pact incantation, while the rest watched Mo Xie morphing within the raging flames.

"Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~"

The process of metamorphosis was the moment where a soul pet's potential burst out. Mo Xie's Demon Fire Evil Flames were already in the advanced state, while the blood flames reached intermediate state. With the increase in both these flames, the demon aura became even more powerful.

Yet Ye Qingzi closed her eyes. With every syllable of the incantation, her pulse jumped violently, and the War Court Black Beast also pulsed.

Its black fur started slowly raising up. The War Court Black Beast that always seemed calm and collected slowly had its aura become as wild as Mo Xie as Ye Qingzi's incantation continued. This increase in aura was built up every pulse beat, and every beat felt as if it raised multiple stages!

The War Court Black Beast's fur used to be all matted down, but with the soul pulses like a heart, the War Court Black Beast's black fur started standing on their ends, showing off the wild and powerful aura it was now emanating.

More frightening was, while its fur was standing on their ends, a black, ghost like energy shrouded the unbelievably rampant War Court Black Beast!

At this moment, the War Court Black Beast no longer seemed like just that; under the cover of the strange black resentment shadow, the War Court Black Beast had become a ruler of death, full of dark aura!

"Mo Xie, you deal with that Gluttonous Insect Monster, I'll control the Hundred Mother." After finishing the strengthening of the War Court Black Beast, Ye Qingzi, who's pupils were now remotely black, spoke.

Chapter 288: Eighth Rank Battle Technique, Five Night Inferno Fox Diagram

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~” Reaching the seventh phase, Mo Xie let out a call, as if reminding Ye Qingzi of something.

“Moon, Moonlight Conjure!” Ye Qingzi quickly understood Mo Xie and spoke to Water Moon.

The reason water moon was called Water Moon was because, where there was Water Moon, there was the existence of water and shine of moon. In fact, as the Water Moon’s strength increased, the moonlight effect it made could surpass natural moonlight, giving soul pets who gained strength in moonlight even greater strength.

Water Moon could easily be killed by a Gluttonous Insect Monster in this fight, so Ye Qingzi told it to remain a good distance away.

Receiving Ye Qingzi’s command, Water Moon’s body slowly lit with a beautiful glow. This glow that could strengthen Mo Xie slowly arose, as if refracted by water, beautiful and multi-faceted……

Finishing the change from the sixth phase to seventh stage, Mo Xie’s sharp claws reached the pseudo eighth rank. In addition, when the water moonlight, which was even more powerful than natural moonlight, fell upon Mo Xie, her cold Inferno Fox claws extended even further, glinting a metallic blue as well as the

complexion of a moon!

Eighth rank initial stage!

After the Water Moon's illumination, Mo Xie's claws reached a stunning eighth rank realm. The two colored flames glowed with a noble silver, completely displaying the superior blood of this mutated fox.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's defense wasn't that high. Reaching eighth rank initial stage, with the help of techniques, Mo Xie could now break through the Gluttonous Insect Monster's defense!

Arrogant, noble, cold, demonic, at this moment, the Inferno Fox monarch's aura was unbridled. Its rampant wild aura rolled straight towards the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster!

Seventh phase sixth stage!

Feeling the water moon's glow, Mo Xie's stage raised six stages. Adding on the Water Moon's water screen battle armor, Mo Xie could now fight the Gluttonous Insect Monster!!

"Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~~~"

A battle of speed against speed, when Mo Xie stepped forward, she only left a fiery shadow in her place before disappearing completely.

The Gluttonous Insect Monster wasn't slow either. When Mo Xie flashed towards it, it wriggled its body and, changing its position five times a second, it made extreme movements that caused Mo Xie to be unable to find it.

Mo Xie's silver demon pupils constantly observed the changing space. Without Chu Mu's soul remembrance lock, Mo Xie could only rely on her own senses to determine the soul pet's location.

This street was very long, but all of it was already ruined. At this moment, one could clearly see small whirlwinds appear and quickly disappear after.

These small whirlwinds were precisely the turning points of Mo Xie and the Gluttonous Insect Monster!

Mo Xie had a period of time where her speed was explosive. With plenty of fighting experience, she knew that she must give the Gluttonous Insect Monster a heavy wound during this period, or else, once she slowed down, she wouldn't have a chance against it anymore.

Phantom!

The Gluttonous Insect Monster's claws flashed past Mo Xie's five shadows, so sharp they could directly snap a building in half. However, it only left a shallow mark on Mo Xie.

Mo Xie's five shadows didn't immediately disappear. The five phantoms all became real inferno foxes, appearing in five locations around the Gluttonous Insect Monster!

This time, Mo Xie didn't use the Royal Flame Claw that was usually combined with phantom. The five phantoms almost simultaneously whipped out their nine powerful long fox tails!

Five phantoms, each with nine tails, meaning there were a total of fourty five Inferno Fox tails!

The forty five inferno fox tails almost took up the entire space. Stuck in the gap between attacks, no matter how good at dodging the Gluttonous Insect Monster was, it couldn't avoid forty five Inferno Fox Tails!

Countless inferno fox tails completely morphed into hard, silver chains. Just as the Gluttonous Insect Monster was chained down, the five Inferno Fox phantoms spread apart, causing the forty five silver glowing tails to go taut. As the phantoms continued to run further, the tails actually started snapping one by one!

"Beng!! Beng!! Beng!!!!!!"

Every silver tail let out a crisp snap. This wasn't the sound of Mo Xie's tails snapping, however. The five images were all just phantoms of Mo Xie. The sound of bones breaking was because of the snapping bones of the Gluttonous Insect Monster!

“Eighth……eighth rank soul technique……” Seeing this dominating, cold, yet grand technique cast, Duan Xinhe’s eyes opened wide in complete disbelief.

Seventh rank soul techniques were already limited to only monarch ranks. The Gluttonous Insect Monsters Duan Xinhe gained from the commander rank Hundred Mother’s reproduction may be powerful, but none had ever learned a seventh rank technique.

Yet, Duan Xinhe had now witnessed a Royal Flame Nine Tail Inferno Fox learn an eighth rank technique. This technique was even casted on his own Gluttonous Insect Monster!

An eighth rank technique’s power was over five times that of a seventh rank technique. Mo Xie’s evil fox diagram forcefully ripped the Gluttonous Insect Monster’s bones apart. If not for the high stage and rank of the Gluttonous Insect Monster, this technique alone could’ve killed it!

“Eighth rank soul technique…… Mo Xie’s talent truly is abnormal……” With a distant pupil, Ye Qingzi muttered.

After casting the strange spell from before, Ye Qingzi’s entire body felt like it was shrouded in a strange shadow of death, just like the War Court Black Beast that leaped to eighth stage…….

Eighth phase high stage, the War Court Black Beast’s fighting strength itself wasn’t weaker than Mo Xie, completely able to fight against same rank monarchs. Against the ninth phase Hundred

Mother, this War Court Black Beast actually erupted with an unthinkable fighting intent. This wildness was even more complete than Mo Xie in moonlight. If Chu Mu could see this, he definitely wouldn't believe that Ye Qingzi held such a powerful soul technique that could raise a soul pet by more than a full phase!

The Violent Blood Pupil Chu Mu originally had was a spirit teacher soul technique. Such a technique, once trained to advance, could cause the soul pet to raise a phase.

But this increase was only for commanders under sixth phase. After all, after reaching seventh phase and monarch ranks, the strength difference was huge, so a spirit teacher soul technique couldn't bring about such effects.

Yet, Ye Qingzi's War Court Black Beast already reached monarch rank. Its stage and phase also entered seventh phase. Under such circumstances, Ye Qingzi caused it to jump to eighth phase high stages. Such a leap would require tremendous power to sustain. If this soul technique were discovered, possibly any soul pet trainer would go crazy!

Duan Xinhe originally didn't mind this girl's technique, but as the War Court Black Beast fought with his Hundred Mother, Duan Xinhe was shocked to discover that the unnoticeable War Court Black Beast could actually fight with his Hundred Mother.

"Not knowing life and death, with just you two garbages, you want to fight me, Duan Xinhe? Don't even dare, don't even dare!!" Duan Xinhe said angrily. He no longer cared about his dwindling soul power, choosing to chant an incantation firmly!

“Budding Split!!!!

The incantation quickly finished. Duan Xinhe was covered in a blood colored glow. As this glow became brighter and brighter, Duan Xinhe’s entire body looked as if it were dunked in blood.

Something even more frightening happened. Duan Xinhe, covered in blood, suddenly started growing tumors. These tumors fell along with the blood glow on Duan Xinhe, collecting on the floor.

Seeing this scene, Ye Qingzi sucked in a breath. At this moment, Duan Xinhe seemed to be pulling flesh off himself to mold into a soul pet!

Duan Xinhe’s Budding Split was using his own flesh and blood to create attached pets. This meant that Duan Xinhe himself had also become a monster that could reproduce soul pets!

Budding Split, using one’s own blood, body, and life as price to create a attached pet to one’s mother soul pet!

Very quickly, the bloody pieces that fell from Duan Xinhe was molded into a seemingly skinless Gluttonous Insect Monster. Its appearance was terrifying, possibly causing any normal person to vomit at sight!

“Die, all of you!!” Duan Xinhe directly gave the Gluttonous Insect

Monster a command.

This Gluttonous Insect Monster's speed was even faster than the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster. When it stepped forward, it became a scary blood beam that charged directly towards the eighth phase high stage War Court Black Beast!

The War Court Black Beast was fighting with the Hundred Mother when, in a moment of carelessness, it was slammed aside by the disgusting thing. It flew a dozen meters away. If not for the Water Moon's timely protection, it may have been flung even further, suffering worse wounds.

"Ting!" Seeing the War Court Black Beast hurt, Ye Qingzi's heart was burning.

Ye Qingzi had already used all her power to increase the War Court Black Beast's power, but even then, to fight Duan Xinhe, a notorious soul pet trainer within the world, was a stretch. Seeing that Duan Xinhe had now summoned an even more powerful soul pet, Ye Qingzi no longer knew what to do.

"Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~~"

Noticing that Ye Qingzi fell in danger, Mo Xie grew worried. Heavily flicking the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster away, its demon eyes glanced at the tall ruins that covered Chu Mu and let out a few emergency cries!

“Wuwuwuwu~~~~~~~~~~”

Chu Mu was connected by heart to Mo Xie. Even in an uncontrollable state, Chu Mu could hear the calls for help from Mo Xie.

Chu Mu also knew the basic situation outside, so he was similarly impatient, wanting to immediately kill his way out.

The energy injection of the Jade Spring was slowly weakening, and Chu Mu could feel every inch of himself filled with power. Once the baptism of the Jade Spring ended, this energy would erupt fully!

“It’s almost over, it’s almost over, just a little longer!” Chu Mu shouted in his heart, his white demonic devil fire covered face already showing signs of mania .

Chapter 289: Other Pupil, Devil Monarch, Chu Mu

“Wu wu wu wu~~~~~”

Mo Xie’s fox cry lingered in his ear... this voice searching for protection caused Chu Mu’s heart to ignite!

“Hu hu hu hu hu~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~”

No matter how vigorous the devil flames burned on his body, they wouldn’t reflect any ostentatious intention. The only thing that manifested were sounds of the wind.

The white devil flames began to shoot out of the cracks within the ruins. They originated from one white fire seed, and slowly transformed into a enormous bonfire that finally ignited the small hill-like ruins.

“Hahaha, people that provoke me will all have a miserable ending. Especially you. Hmph, you look so enticing even to the soul; perhaps you were born just for me to ***. Don’t worry, I won’t kill a top quality like you...” loudly laughed Duan Xinhe as his yellow eyes were full of arrogance.

Ye Qingzi’s face was pale as she retreated. The War Court Black Beast was being sandwiched in between the Hundred Mother, and the blood Gluttonous Insect Monster and its body had suffered serious wounds; it simply didn’t have the ability to continue

fighting...

Duan Xinhe's back was to the ruins, and the pale white devil flames were burning extremely quietly. Even the exceptionally cold aura had been retained in the ruins, so Duan Xinhe didn't detect that an egregiously terrifying devil flame was burning behind him!

"Wu wu wu wu~~~~~~~~"

Sensing Chu Mu's aura, the battered and bruised Mo Xie that was fighting against the Gluttonous Insect Beast let out an excited cry.

"Yell some more, yell some more. The meat of a Nine Tailed Inferno Fox should taste pretty good." maliciously laughed Duan Xinhe as he thought Mo Xie was letting out pitiful cries for help.

Chu Mu who was buried under the ruins of two collapsed rock and wood construct buildings. As his white devil flames sprang out, the collapsed wall seemed to receive some strange buoyant force and began to float upwards along with the devil flames.

Pieces of broken rock, slabs of destroyed pillars, chunks of broken roof, countless fine shattered fragments of brick and tile, and even the entire ruins began to float incomparably silently.

These objects were in the devil flames, but weren't being burned by it, as if they were being completely held up by water instead.

If one looked through the cracks of these floating broken objects, he or she would be able to see a devil person covered all over in white molten lava quietly standing there!

His two legs seemed to be on the ground, but were actually hovering on top of the devil flames. His two arrogant and emotionless eyes were fixated on the bastard maliciously laughing ahead of him.

“Wu wu wu~~~~~~”

When Chu Mu’s body appeared in the devil flames, Mo Xie’s cries became even more frequent and excited!

Ye Qingzi also saw Chu Mu. Her face let out an expression of happiness, only, within the happiness was contained a large amount of shock and astonishment.

This was because the present Chu Mu gave Ye Qingzi a completely different aura than the previous half devil state Chu Mu. This aura was a close yet thousand meters away unfamiliar feeling of estrangement....

Ye Qingzi had this feeling because the past Chu Mu she knew would always be full of zeal even if he was stern and serious. At the very least, Ye Qingzi was able to understand his emotions and thinking from his words and conduct.

Yet, from the present Chu Mu, aside from the boundless power

about to burst from his body, Ye Qingzi didn't feel anything else!

"You still unexpectedly can still laugh. Could i be you're the same type of person as me? Ha, then that would be no fun. I enjoy *** composed women instead; when I see their lewd appearance of begging for mercy, I have even more lust..." said Duan Xinhe.

Up until now, neither Duan Xinhe nor his soul pets had discovered Chu Mu's existence. However, at this moment, Chu Mu's ghostly demonic figure floated in front of Duan Xinhe and his eyes full of silver magma coldly stared at Duan Xinhe...

"Kill his soul pet first. With such a delicate woman, don't harm any part of her." Duan Xinhe ordered his soul pets.

The ugly looking Hundred Mother and blood Gluttonous Insect Monster simultaneously erupted with speed. They were a hundred meters away from the wounded War Court Black Beast, but this was merely one second of time to them. In the blink of an eye, they appeared in front of it...

"Chu Mu!" Ye Qingzi's heart went cold and she yelled at Chu Mu.

If Chu Mu didn't do anything, her War Court Black Beast would be killed!

Chu Mu raised his head and his two eyes locked onto the Hundred Mother and the Gluttonous Insect Beast...

Ye Qingzi chanted an incantation. The Hundred Mother and Gluttonous Insect Beast's speed were too fast, and even if Chu Mu used Displacement Specter, he probably still wouldn't be able to save it. Ye Qingzi could thus only rely on her own strength.

A truly strong defensive soul techniques required an incantation of a second; Ye Qingzi's chanting speed was inherently slow, and now that the Hundred Mother and Gluttonous Insect Beast were right in front of the War Court Black Beast with their claws lifted high in the air, it would be killed in the next instant!

Closing a gap of a hundred meters and attacking all within a second was speed that a normal person's eyes couldn't see clearly.

However, Chu Mu who was standing behind Duan Xinhe was still watching the Hundred Mother and blood Gluttonous Insect Monster with his eyes. His body didn't move, because in the field of view of the present Chu Mu, an extremely strange phenomenon had occured.

"Why are these two soul pets moving so slow?"

A question appeared in the head of Chu Mu that was a bit sore from the high temperature burning.

Chu Mu's pupils were circulating a silver-white lustre, and what he saw were two soul pets moving at extremely slow speeds, about to attack the War Court Black Beast. In Chu Mu's opinion, Ye Qingzi's War Court Black Beast would have no problems dodging...

“Is it a slowing ability?” Chu Mu muttered to himself.

Chu Mu’s soul and body were at an extremely high temperature state and under these circumstances, Chu Mu’s thoughts and logic weren’t as clear as they usually were…

“The War Court Black Beast’s speed is also very slow… it seems… it seems that it’s my vision ability that’s slow…” finally, Chu Mu suddenly became aware of an extremely serious problem as the two soul pets lifted their claws high in the air and brought it back down.

“This is the White Devil’s Other Pupil technique. After using it, you can limitlessly slow down any moving object past a certain amount in my range of view. You can slow it down until you can see it clearly and while slowing it down, your thinking abilities will become faster. In other words, this is an other type mind technique that can increase the speed of your eye nerves and mind nerves by many times!” Old Li’s voice rapidly transmitted into Chu Mu’s brain.

Old Li used soul remembrance and the message surged into his thinking. If it was the Chu Mu in the past, he only would have heard a string of gibberish, yet right now, he could hear everything perfectly clearly.

Displacement Specter!!

Chu Mu abruptly realized the War Court Black Beast had also slowed down its movements and couldn’t dodge the two soul pets’

attacks. Just as their claws were about to break open its body, devil flames rapidly burned Chu Mu's body into ashes.

……

Ye Qingzi had merely chanted half an incantation and the War Court Black Beast had no way of living now…

Ye Qingzi firmly shut her eyes and couldn't bear watching the miserable scene.

"Si si si~~~~~~ Si si si~~~~~~"

Suddenly, two incomparably painful shrieks rang out. These shrieks didn't come from the War Court Black Beast!

Ye Qingzi didn't have time to be sad as she hastily opened her eyes. Yet, what met her eyes was a sturdy body burning in a surging devil flame magma…

"How is that possible. Wasn't he a hundred meters away just now…" Ye Qingzi opened her small mouth and the shock on her face was even greater than the happiness because instantly moving a hundred meters in such a short period of time was impossible even for stronger soul pets!

Displacement Specter! Extreme speed that could completely rival Instant Movement. Moreover, the so-called Instant Movement would sometimes require a casting time; yet, from what Ye Qingzi

saw, Chu Mu's Displacement Specter seemed to not have required any casting time. Two balls of devil flames appeared at different locations and ignited at the same time. Subsequently, Chu Mu moved from his original location to the other location!

Ye Qingzi was incapable of believing that Chu Mu could reach such a speed. One had to know that from the moment she pondered the question of saving her War Court Black Beast until now, it had only been a brief moment; even shorter than blinking her eye!

Not only did Chu Mu's speed and sight change, when he concentrated on the Hundred Mother and the blood Gluttonous Insect Monster, he unexpectedly felt that they were weak!

A feeling that the ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monster and ninth phase Hundred Mother were weak!

Just an hour ago, these two eminently malevolent ninth phase soul pets were undefeatable soul pets to him. Yet, right now in the post Jade Spring baptism state, Chu Mu shockingly discovered he could casually kill them!!!

Finally, Chu Mu made his move. The opponent's weak and puniness actually increased the desire to kill in Chu Mu's heart!

A devil hand stretching out, Chu Mu used his most habitual Nightmare sure kill technique - Obliterating Heart!

When Chu Mu had used it back then to the other Gluttonous Insect Monster, its extreme speed allowed it to dodge the Obliterating Heart a few times, but right now, neither the blood Gluttonous Insect Monster nor the powerful ninth phase Hundred Mother made even half a reaction.

Chu Mu completely unobstructedly extended his devil claw into their inner crystals.

Two claws simultaneously grasped their inner crystals before giving a light pinch!

“Si si si~~~~~ Si si si~~~~~~~~~”

The two soul pets’ miserable cries as they died wasn’t as long as Chu Mu expected. They slowly fell to the ground and were burned inside to out by nightmare flames.

In front of the deaths of two soul pets, Chu Mu was still calm despite his thoughts having become strange. He blankly stared at his two hands; he was like a devil ghost - a devil ghost that had no idea he was killing!

The two soul pets instantly died and were burned to ashes by white devil flames right in front of his eyes. This nightmare-like scene caused Duan Xinhe to freeze up!

Just a second ago, Duan Xinhe’s lustful and wanton smile towards Ye Qingzi still hung on his face. Now a second later, his

distorted facial expression could no longer be explained by the sudden shock that occurred.

Chapter 290: From the Nine Underworlds, the Evil Devil Monarch

The extremely high temperature burned Chu Mu's soul; at the beginning, Chu Mu still maintained a bit of consciousness and thinking, but as the Jade Spring began to truly circulate to every part of Chu Mu's body, the only bit of rationale left in Chu Mu's empty eyes was gradually burnt to nothingness.

As for the eyes without any rationale in them, they gave others the most pure form of fear, because its powerful could easily crush any life to dust!

Duan Xinhe was looking at Chu Mu's eyes, and an unprecedented coldness seeped over his entire body. It made him feel as if his soul was trembling due to coldness despite having yet to touch Chu Mu's soul devil flames!

Duan Xinhe was a ninth remembrance spirit master, and he was a tiny bit away from entering the spirit emperor level. His soul remembrance was furthermore stronger than normal people, because of the Gluttonous Insect Monster and the Hundred Mother.

Nonetheless, when Duan Xinhe found that the half devil in front of him was 'walking' towards him, his powerful soul imitated that of a servant rank's soul when seeing the soul pet of its masters. Trembling with fear, not even half an idea of resistance occurred to him.

The white devil flames silently burned, but they didn't ignite any of the surrounding objects. Chu Mu's face was also full of devil flames, and his noble and ominous face carried a silver mask that was just cast from molten lava. Without even needing to make an expression, this face was already the world's most evil!

"What.... What on earth are you!! You... you can't be human!!!" Duan Xinhe's pupils were full of both blood and fear from his very depths.

Having transformed from a young generation member he could kill at any time, to a half devil person who could contend against his ninth phase Gluttonous Insect Monsters, to the shocking devil ghost now where he controlled both soul and life, Duan Xinhe was virtually going to go insane soon. The Cyan Hidden Dragon's egg was so close, but he didn't expect there to now be a powerful creature that couldn't be explained by rationality so close to him.

Duan Xinhe began to run.

His soul no longer had the ability to summon even soul pets, and his body ran completely out of an autonomous inherent ability to seek survival. The further he was away from the half devil, the further he was away from death.

The half devil Chu Mu didn't chase him. The humanity in him had essentially been extinguished a second ago, and he had completely transformed into a monarch devil that had crawled up from the depths of the Nine Underworlds into this world. His two empty eyes stared at the fleeing Duan Xinhe, as a massacring instinct caused him to raise his right hand...

Upon becoming a half devil, Chu Mu's hand had become slender, with a tinge of a woman's elegance. At the same time, his sharp white fingers carried an almighty coldness.

Chu Mu's hand was raised, his palm half open, and his long fingers pointed at the desperately fleeing Duan Xinhe.

Devil flames was the thinking of the half devil. Chu Mu only had to think of moving and locating a target, and the powerful devil flames on his body would fly out according to where he pointed to.

Perhaps it was because Chu Mu could no longer remember who he was, but he was stuck in a state of near inherent fighting instinct from the very beginning until the end. This fighting instinct wasn't the fighting abilities that Chu Mu formerly possessed; instead, it was the strength that manifested upon transforming into a half devil.

Two faint white lights weakly and slowly hovered next to the fleeing Duan Xinhe like fireflies. Duan Xin had already run very far away, and was even rejoicing that the thing without any mind seemed not be chasing him down to kill.

Suddenly, the two unremarkable firefly lights suddenly transformed and outlandishly passed through into his body!

Duan Xinhe didn't feel anything wrong at first, only that something warm in his belly was emerging before disappearing. When he gradually felt that the temperature was rising, Duan

Xinhe abruptly realized that devil flames had spread to his innards and were wildly burning his soul and innards!

An immense pain transmitted through his entire body and he attempted to use the remaining little bit of soul power to protect himself. However, the soul power was instantaneously evaporated, and once his soul power ran out, the devil flames began to burn the rest of his soul and innards...

Not too far away, Chu Mu's forefinger had a white devil flame rapidly combusting. This tiny devil flame happened to represent the soul devil flame torrentially burning in Duan Xinhe's body. This other type ability enabled Chu Mu to essentially even step across space!

Slowly, the ball of flame on Chu Mu's forefinger died down, and Chu Mu stared with a gaze filled with sempiternity at the winds and clouds charging across the vast sky. He stared at the powerful Cyan Hidden Dragon, whose body was covered with injuries, struggling and blood-soaked. He stared at the powerful soul pets attacking the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

In this very moment, a ripple occured in his eyes. It was a ripple that derived from the sudden fight. When he saw the clash of strength against strength and the explosions of abilities against abilities, the half devil state Chu Mu seemed to see his home!!

"Chu Mu..." a tender voice slowly called out, mixed with Ye Qingzi's worriedness and anxiety.

Ye Qingzi was standing very close to Chu Mu and could imprint Chu Mu's evil devilish state completely in her eyes. From this devil flame half-devil state, Ye Qingzi could see Chu Mu's silver face and whether this face happened to be Chu Mu, Ye Qingzi didn't know.

In this world, the power of a soul pet trainer always came from soul pets.

Yet, what Ye Qingzi was looking at was a frightening half devil that had transformed from a human. It controlled the world's most powerful and most evil strength! Duan Xinhe, just before death, couldn't even be sure Chu Mu was a human and right now, Ye Qingzi also found it hard to believe he was one!

Ye Qingzi felt unfamiliarity, and it wasn't until now that she finally realized how Chu Mu had survived back then in the Great Chu Family from that ninth phase monarch. Furthermore, she realized why his soul reached such a severely high temperature afterwards. The white colored devil flames burning on this body from head to toe gave Ye Qingzi both the most direct answer to this question as well as an intense shock.

"My heavens, what is that? Is that a White Nightmare?!" suddenly, a terrified voice rang out nearby.

"It's not a White Nightmare, it's definitely not a White Nightmare!" said a middle aged Nightmare Palace member with most certainty. His face was covered with astonishment and he couldn't believe his eyes somewhat.

“Why can’t I feel any aura? This human shaped soul pet doesn’t have any aura; could it be a child pet?!” said a middle aged soul pet trainer with strong detection abilities.

The group of people who had just come here were the middle aged members from various factions called over by Ye Wansheng who were attempting to kill Duan Xinhe. After all, the Cyan Hidden Dragon was fighting with the various experts and they were more concerned about the enormous rewards of the Cyan Hidden Dragon egg.

Only, by the time they arrived here, they didn’t see Duan Xinhe. Rather, what greeted them was a White Nightmare-like thing that was an even more nefarious and imposing mysterious creature. This creature was so mysterious to them that they couldn’t tell if it was due to some soul technique used by a human or some extremely rare soul pet!

Although every soul pet trainer present was in shock, they were all also full of curiosity and wonder. Nonetheless, none of them dared actually approach the half state Chu Mu because no one knew that whether they would be instantly killed upon approaching this eminently evilly demonic devil!

“Qingzi… Qingzi…. Quickly run, what are you just standing there for?!!!!”

Finally, someone ran over and Ye Qingzi abruptly discovered his sister extremely close to the devil flame burning evil monarch. His face was white from terror and he ran over to Ye Qingzi without fear of danger.

“Brother, don’t come over!” Ye Qingzi couldn't be certain Chu Mu still maintained his humanity and when she saw Ye Qingzi recklessly charge over, she yelled out to him with a face of panic.

“Hu hu~~~~~”

The devil flames strangely changed their burning directly and moved diagonally.

Ye Qingzi’s small face was pale because she found that Chu Mu’s gaze had returned from the air and had at some point turned to Ye Wansheng running over. That slender devil finger that could easily kill even a ninth remembrance spirit master moved up slowly and pointed at Ye Wansheng!

“Don’t, don’t kill him!” Ye Qingzi knew what Chu Mu’s action meant. She disregarded the devil flames on Chu Mu’s body and whether they would burn her soul, and hugged the half devil state Chu Mu...

Ye Qingzi’s body easily passed through the devil flames and she tightly held onto his body. As for the devil flames that could easily burn one’s soul, they didn’t enter her body, but instead passed through her body. They continued to stay in a reserved manner around Chu Mu’s body, silently burning.

“Chu Mu... don’t kill him, he’s my brother...” Ye Qingzi was already crying in terror. Her teary eyes were pleading as they stared at Chu Mu’s cold face.

Chu Mu didn't look at Ye Qingzi. He was like an evil devil monarch that slowly raised its hand and gave an order to the power of death he controlled.

Two white star lights waveringly floated forth. They outlandishly flew across the sky and looked like two live fireflies as they unremarkably floated across.

Seeing the technique that killed Duan Xinhe being used, Ye Qingzi lost control of her tears even more. No matter what, she never would have thought Chu mu would lose his rationality and kill the sudden moving Ye Wansheng.

Ye Wansheng wasn't aware of any danger. He only knew that the devil monarch very close to Ye Qingzi was extremely dangerous. Regardless of whether he could defeat it, he had to protect her.

"Sou sou~~~~~~~"

Suddenly, two fireflies floated in front of his forehead and his steps came to an abrupt stop!

There clearly were two unremarkable fireflies that just flitted past him, but for some reason, Ye Wansheng felt that his entire body and even his soul had been pervaded by cold water; it was so cold that even his body wouldn't move!

Death had just swept past him!

Ye Wansheng didn't know why, but he was absolutely sure that if he touched those fireflies, he would step into the great door of death!

"Ah Ah!!!!!!!!!!"

Suddenly, a fear inducing miserable shout rang out from behind Ye Wansheng!

The white devil flames had ignited inside a middle aged soul pet trainer's body and even his face was spitting out white devil flames!

This time, the burning speed was extremely fast and not long after the rest of the middle aged people sensed the propagation of danger, that soul pet trainer had already been burned to ashes.

Death. An eighth remembrance spirit master had died like that in front of everyone!

A strange atmosphere enveloped the middle aged experts from the various factions, and they all carried extreme shock on their faces.

Chapter 291: Descent, World Startling Devil (1)

“Why……why didn’t you listen to my persuading…… this thing isn’t something that could be captured……” Beside the burnt corpse was the brother of the burnt soul pet trainer.

Just before, everyone commented that, when the White Nightmare organism appeared, the burnt soul pet trainer was insistent that it may just be an immature advanced soul pet because he didn’t detect any thoughts from this organism.

Therefore, this delusional soul pet trainer started an incantation to try to probe out the strange half devil.

But, this soul pet trainer couldn’t even start his incantation before the powerful half devil detected his enmity. The next moment, the scary devil fire came burning, leaving nothing behind, not even bones.

Seeing a expert so easily killed, immediately, an unprecedented fear shrouded all the experts of the big factions.

Finally, someone realized that the organism in front of them couldn’t possibly be measured with common sense. In shock and horror, they rode their soul pets in escape.

When one person ran away, the rest of their mental defenses also instantly collapsed.

Able to easily kill an eighth remembrance soul master with one technique, this devil could also easily kill them. Continuing to stay there would only cause them to become the ashes of white demonic devil flames.

……

All the middle aged generation members left. Before the powerful, strange, yet unknown organism, they were the weakest of organisms. No one had the courage to remain and contend against it.

When all the supposed middle generation experts left, Ye Wansheng remained. When death flew by him, his very soul went stiff. Though his inner desires urged for him to fly in front of Ye Qingzi and protect her, his body and soul were no longer in his own control.

Ye Qingzi's thin arms were still around Chu Mu. Chu Mu emotionlessly turned his eyes over. The white and empty pupils gazed at Ye Qingzi, but they were still completely vast and indistinct.

Ye Qingzi saw that Ye Wansheng was fine, and finally let a breath out. Her pretty eyes were still hiding shimmering tears, but noticing Chu Mu was gazing emptily at her, she quickly let go of Chu Mu and wiped the traces of tears off her cheeks……

"Chu Mu, are you well?" Ye Qingzi decided to try to

communicate to Chu Mu's half devil state using her remembrance.

Yet, when Ye Qingzi injected her remembrance into Chu Mu's mental world, she felt her voice fall into a vast and raging sea that gave no response back……

Chu Mu slowly lifted his head, the silver, burning, yet handsome face looked into the unbelievably vast sky.

In the air, the Cyan Hidden Dragon was suffering more and more wounds. With more than ten soul pets attacking it, no matter how powerful the Cyan Hidden Dragon was, it couldn't withstand it for long. It's fighting strength clearly wasn't as dominant as it was before.

Suddenly, Chu Mu's body floated upwards.

Ye Qingzi blanked and was about to say something to Chu Mu, but Chu Mu simply flew into the air, leaving a string of white trails……

After becoming half devil, Chu Mu's flying speed was very quick. When Ye Qingzi came back to her senses, the silver molded body had already become a white shadow in Ye Qingzi's vision, slowly rising into the skies……

"Qingzi, Qingzi, are you alright……" Seeing the terrifying white devil leave, Ye Wansheng quickly ran up to Ye Qingzi, hugged the strangely expressioned Ye Qingzi, and asked.

Ye Qingzi's face was now pale, not because of the terror of the half devil Chu Mu, but because of the energy backlash from the War Court Black Beast. This backlash was very powerful to Ye Qingzi's current level. One mishap and Ye Qingzi would die.

Ye Wansheng also didn't want Ye Qingzi to use this soul technique precisely because of this.

"I'm fine, it wasn't for too long. With some medicine, I can recover soon enough." Ye Qingzi shook her head, her fragile face still showing worry for the half devil state Chu Mu.

The battle in the air was a fight between some of the most powerful soul pets. As only a second remembrance soul master, even if Chu Mu was in a strange state, he would be hard pressed to enter such a battle.

"Qingzi, what organism is that? Until today, I've never seen such an evil being. Is it even still a soul pet?" Ye Wansheng looked at the leaving Chu Mu and said with lingering fear.

Ye Qingzi shook her head but didn't elaborate. After retracting her tired War Court Black Beast, she let Ye Wansheng support her to a safe place to rest.

……

……

“Nightmare Palace old man, control your own White Nightmare!” The merchant master that arrived late yelled.

The merchant master rode a ninth phase Chaotic Thunder Feather Demon. His power was below that of Yu palace master, Xiao Ren, and even Li Sheng, so he could only control his soul pet to attack the Cyan Hidden Dragon from afar.

The Chaotic Lightning Feathered Demon controlled wind type and demon type energies. When the beam of lightning-made wings flew through the clouds, it was suddenly destroyed by a sudden burst of white devil flames.

The old merchant master’s technique was clearly sent towards the Cyan Hidden Dragon. However, because of the interference of the white devil flames, it lost its use, so the old merchant master of course felt angry, directly cursing at the Nightmare Palace’s subpar soul pet control ability.

‘Horrible, Nightmare old devil, are you playing it dirty at such a time?!” Very quickly, another soul incantation came from a soul pet palace expert that had come to complain.

Being cursed at by two people in a row, the Nightmare Palace was even more confused. He specially took a glance at his White Nightmare, who was charging up an ability.

“Heng, open your dog eyes wide and made sure to see what my White Nightmare is doing!” The White Nightmare Palace sub

palace master said in return, full of disdain.

The old merchant master was very close to the sub city master of Nightmare city. When she looked up, she could see his White Nightmare right there.

“Strange, I did feel a white nightmare flit across my face , though……” The old merchant master began to say to himself. Suddenly, the old merchant master noticed a demonic figure burning with white demon fire right in front of him!

No aura!

One couldn’t even feel the threat of it, only feeling a coldness from hell that slowly invaded one’s soul!

When the old merchant master saw the unknown creature’s real appearance, his face grew solemn. The organism in front of him wasn’t a White Nightmare, but it was much more evil and powerful than a White Nightmare. It didn’t release any aura from its body, but it made one fear from the depths of one’s heart. The white flames on its outer body didn’t reveal any energy at all, but once ignited, it could destroy all!

Cold sweat dripped down the old merchant master forehead. He had lived this long, but he had never seen such a strange organism, let alone stand less than a meter from it. The old merchant master didn’t even know how it appeared on the back of his own Chaotic Thunder Feather Bird.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh~~~~~~~~~~”

In the skies, an intense shrill scream sounded.

All the experts that surrounded Cyan Hidden Dragon noticed this scream and immediately looked over, causing all gazes to fall on the source.

White devil flames fell from the skies. Everyone was unbelievably confused, because no one would’ve thought that the old merchant master who was furthest from the battlefield would get burned by devil fire and fall straight from the skies, clearly suffering huge soul injuries!

Very quickly, everyone’s eyes fell on the Nightmare City master, because there was only the Nightmare Palace’s evil soul pet White Nightmare that could control white devil flames. Such a situation could only be this fellow playing tricks.

But, the Nightmare City master didn’t do anything. At this moment, his eyes were watching a white arrogant specter slowly float into the sky. Usually cold and steady, he could no longer hide the fear and shock on his face!!

“What is that!!!!!”

“Who’s soul pet, who’s soul pet!!”

“White Nightmare, no wait, even stronger than White

Nightmare……What organism is this? An organism never seen before……”

Finally, the experts noticed the devil man that quietly floated into the battlefield. This devil man was absolutely quiet. Even its techniques had no sound. If not for the merchant master’s scream, no one would’ve noticed such a scary devilish figure had come among them!

Cold, arrogant, the devil monarch’s mask needed no other expression. It was looking down upon any other organism!

Apathetic, pale, empty pupils contained not a sliver of emotion, only gazing at the world with those eyes that could bring death to any living being!

Strange, untraceable, it had an evil energy completely different from all others, as if it was from another dimension.

Mysterious, indistinguishable from human and soul pet, possibly even an organism never known to mankind.

Powerful, a power that couldn’t be detected at all. But, its arrogant poise meant that when it revealed its power, it could be world shaking, bringing infinite destruction!

At this moment, everyone was shocked by this cold, arrogant, apathetic, strange, mysterious, and powerful organism. No one could give a single explanation for this human shaped devil

organism!

……

As the leader of all the experts, Li old city master's face became grave. As the highest rank, even he couldn't detect any aura from this strange organism.

The cyan hidden dragon gave off an aura of complete, brutal force and destruction. Its power could be felt directly through its immense body and powerful aura.

Yet, this evil monarch burning with white devil flames in front of him had its power completely hidden, not revealing a single bit. It was completely opposite when compared to the undefeatable Cyan Hidden Dragon's wildness.

"Everyone, be very careful, it is very powerful. Though no energy is leaking from it, I can feel an incomparably massive store of energy within this devil!" Li old city master realized the power of this devil and immediately told everyone using soul remembrance.

What the Li old city master didn't know was, the massive energy he talked about was exactly the Jade Spring energy that the Cyan Hidden Dragon stole from him.

And the rest of them would never have thought that the devil that shocked all the old generation experts was the final form of a deviled teen who had absorbed the energy of the Jade Spring!

Chapter 292: Descent, World Startling Devil (2)

“Ao!!!!! Ao!!!!!!!!!!!!”

With barely a whole piece of skin on its body, the Cyan Hidden Dragon let out a trembling roar.

The Jade Spring that Li old city master stole from this Cyan Hidden Dragon was originally the sacred blood it was going to use for its maturing. Now that the Cyan Hidden Dragon self-strengthened and had reached a level similar to the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon, the Jade Spring was of no use to it.

Originally, the Cyan Hidden Dragon wanted to use this Jade Spring to inundate its offspring to truly gain the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s blood, but Chu Mu’s appearance made it change its mind, because, if it was going to be stolen by that human expert anyways, the Cyan Hidden Dragon would rather give this utmost treasure to a human that the Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon had approved of and give him infinite power instead!

The Jade Spring was a sacred item within the Cyan Hidden Dragon species. Only a Cyan Hidden Dragon could truly activate the powerful energy within it. Li Sheng and his father had held onto this Jade Spring for countless years but still haven’t gained even a tenth of its power.

……

“This is a half devil?” Nightmare Palace subcity master watched dumbstruck at the half devil Chu Mu.

Yet, only Nightmare Palace ‘s real authorities knew just what this statement meant.

But, same as when Xia Guanghan had first seen Chu Mu become a half devil, this tenth level title Nightmare Palace expert’s heart was unbelievably shaken, because the half devil in front of them was decidedly different from the Nightmare Palace half devils. This difference was something even the White Nightmare Palace sub palace master couldn’t explain.

A Nightmare’s scariness was that, when it became stronger than its owner, the owner wouldn’t restrict its growth, but instead it would directly devour its owner’s soul.

Half devil incidents definitely weren’t unique within Nightmare Palace. Once, the Nightmare Palace’s spiritual leader Bai Majesty had a very talented White Nightmare. This Nightmare, when Bai Majesty reached a bottleneck, forcefully ate Bai Majesty’s spirit emperor soul!

As a spirit emperor, its soul was very powerful already, so he was hard to kill. When Bai Majesty was devoured by the White Nightmare, his soul wasn’t immediately destroyed. Instead, they went into the most intense spiritual battle against the white nightmare’s soul……

Yet, in this most painful soul fighting, one went into a state of utmost evil.

A nightmare's soul and a human soul, when the two combined, it became the most powerful organism in Nightmare Palace history - half devil!

At the time, when the Nightmare Palace leader Bai Majesty became a half devil, it shocked the entire Nightmare Palace, and the mindless devil caused an unprecedented bloodbath.

At the end, Nightmare Palace elders combined to awaken the Nightmare Ancestor before finally settling this event.

The White Nightmare's shocking descent was an apocalypse to the entire Nightmare Palace. Old members of Nightmare Palace still had lingering fears when the event was mentioned.

This White Nightmare subpalace master was still young then. He had only caught a glimpse of the half devil and was shuddering in fear, feeling his blood run cold. It was the most terrifying organism he had seen his entire life. The memory was unerasable.

Yet, he never would've thought that at this moment, Li City would give birth to another rare half devil!

This half devil may not have reached Bai majesty's half devil level, but the mysterious and evil aura hidden within its body was still hair-raising.

“Why, why would there be such a powerful half devil? Can it be that another hidden expert as powerful as Bai majesty had fallen, getting devoured by their own White Nightmare……” Nightmare Palace subpalace master muttered.

The half devil had always been considered, within the true upper levels of Nightmare Palace, as a god. Facing the god that they almost praised, how would this Nightmare Palace sub palace master still want to fight.

He could only stay in the air as he watched this half devil appear…..

This devil monarch, even when standing within the vast skies, even against countless powerful soul pets, it still stood alone and proud in its territory. The hollow darkness was its background. The quiet white flames were its main color. From top to bottom, it released an evilness that didn’t fit in with this world.

If it didn’t belong to this world, how could one use this world’s power to defeat it?

……

“Hengheng, this is but a wild White Nightmare, let my Forest Dusk Sea Beast test it out!” Elemental Sect Yu sect master even now hadn’t given up attacking the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Seeing the half devil Chu Mu appear, using the water type soul pet’s advantage, he was the first to launch an attack against the half

devil Chu Mu!

Forest Dusk Sea Beast, a deep sea creature that could traverse any space as if swimming through deep sea!

The Forest Dusk Sea Beast always had a calm water realm around it. This realm won't expand, but won't leave five meters of the Forest Dusk Sea Beast either. Once it moved, the water would flow as well, so even in the clouds, the Forest Dusk Sea Beast could still fly freely.

The blue water realm started flowing, quickly flowing to within ten meters of the half devil Chu Mu. Suddenly, from deep within the water realm, the Forest Dusk Sea Beast started beating its tail with high frequency, causing it to spin rapidly around the half devil Chu Mu!

"Yu sect master's Forest Dusk Sea Beast's signature technique - Thousand Swirls!"

Those who knew Yu Sect Master well instantly recognized this technique. Yu Sect Master had used his Forest Dusk Sea Beast's signature move right at the beginning!

Thousand Swirls!

High speed spinning water split into thousands of streams. These streams all seemed to have intelligence, wrapping around the Half Devil and slowly creating a near thousand meter tall whirlpool

from bottom up!!

The whirlpool that neared the heavens completely trapped Chu Mu in the center. The thousands of water whips within the high speed Thousand Swirls frenzily battereing Chu Mu's body. At such frequency and power, even if it were a mountain, it would be shattered!

Thousand swirls' greatest effect wasn't the thousand whips, however; it was the massive centripetal force that comes with the water's flow. This force could lock brawny soul pets in and scatter their very bones by force!

"Yu sect master, well done, you've restricted the thing. Let's quickly get rid of the Cyan Hidden Dragon. I'll guarantee a share for you." Li old city master saw that Yu sect master had succeeded in his preemptive strike and satisfyingly nodded.

None of the experts before dared to truly attack this half devil. Now that Yu sect master's attack worked, they slightly got over their fear of this unknown organism and let loose their taut nerves, starting to reorganize their many soul pets.

……

When everyone restarted their attacking, only the Nightmare Palace subpalace master remained still. He started laughing coldly……

“If a half devil were so easily restricted, then how could so many of our Nightmare Palace experts not even be able to defeat Bai Majesty’s half devil before……”

The Nightmare Palace subpalace master quietly distanced himself from the battlefield, because he knew, very soon, something scary would happen!

……

Yu sect master’s water type riding powers were definitely one of the most powerful of all soul pet trainers present, and water type abilities were mostly to weaken and support. When the techniques were used well, it could also trap opponents, even if they were a rank or two higher……

The thousand swirl was a thousand meters long. While it spun majestically, it was like a propped up water dragon. The water it flung off could create a rainstorm in a region.

Seeing the half devil still stuck, getting weakened by the Thousand Swirl, Yu sect master smiled slightly. From what he saw, as long as he used his techniques well, even against more powerful organisms, he could still defeat them. This was the experience he gained from dozens of years of battle!

……

Suddenly, the white flame body moved. Chu Mu’s movement no

longer needed him to take steps. With a thought, his body floated up.

At this point, the half devil slowly started floating out. Having a tremendous water power, the spinning streams felt like harmless gusts, only tilting the devil flames on its body slightly.

This devil was piercing from the inside out, yet most importantly, its body didn't show any signs of tilting from the water!

When Yu sect master saw this scene, his smile instantly turned into a gaping jaw. Thousand swirls' most powerful effect was the swaying effect that came with the spinning. The Thousand Swirl could be shattered from the inside out and could be escaped from the bottom or the top, but no soul pet could just walk straight through the most powerful swirl and reach the outside.

Not only was the Yu sect master dumbstruck, the experts who all knew the effects of water type well opened their eyes wide.

"How could you pierce straight through? Even if the Cyan Hidden Dragon could go straight through, it would be spun until it was confused and completely disoriented..... Just what monster is this?" When Yu sect master saw the half devil finally escape completely, he finally shouted.

"Is it a ghost type soul pet? Only formless ghost type soul pets could completely ignore such power, right?" Soul pet palace owner furrowed his brows and said.

Ghost type?

The half devil of course wasn't some ghost type. No one would know what mysterious force this Other type half devil had!

After floating out of the Thousand Swirl, the half devil finally started its offense!

When it was still, it was like a statue that was suspended in the dark skies. When it moved, it suddenly became a irritable and ruthless devil. When Chu Mu displayed his speed, its movement akin to teleportation caused everyone to stare in awe.

It was a movement full of force. It definitely wasn't a void-like float of a ghost. Every time it changed position, it caused the nearby space to twist strangely!

"Half devil wind cave!!"

The body full of explosive power appeared in front of the Forest Dusk Sea Beast. Half devil Chu Mu extended a hand and opened its five fingers. On its palm was a black hole cave made of black energy!

This small palm wind cave gave rise a turbulence in the entire space. An Other type energy storm slowly formed as the aura of death enveloped the space where the Forest Dusk Sea Beast was!

Chapter 293: Arrival, The Devil That Shocked The World (3)

“Other type technique!” seeing the other type wind cave appear, Sect Lord Yu’s expression underwent remarkable change.

The other type was the most rare attribute among all attributes, and the most common other type soul pet in the soul pet world happened to be the large group of species of Nightmares that the Nightmare Palace raised.

Furthermore, the uniqueness of the other type was limited to the monarch White Nightmare which possessed this attribute of force in their white devil flames; the Cyan Nightmare and Blue Nightmare didn’t even possess it!

The other type attribute not only was uncounterable by other attributes, but its techniques were also multi-variable and strange, and were untraceable. It was often the case when a low rank other technique could injure a very high defense soul pet!

……

A terrifying wind cave space opened in the air, and the water region surrounding the the Forest Dusk Sea Beasts began to be quickly sucked into it.

The water region which the Forest Dusk Sea Beasts relied on for survival instantly disappeared and they suddenly became stranded

fish, struggling and squirming their bodies.

The wind cave's power didn't end here. After the water region was completely sucked away, the Forest Dusk Sea Beasts came under the danger of being sucked in as well.

"Sect Lord Yu, quickly recall your soul pets!" hastily warned an Elemental Sect grand elder.

Sect Leader Yu didn't chant an incantation. If doing so would allow him to drag them back out from this swamp of death, he would have already done so.

The other type wind cave's devouring wasn't merely limited to the body and energy of a soul pet; it further devoured the soul remembrance of humans. The moment Sect Lord Yu's soul remembrance came into contact with the half devil wind cave, it meant that his soul pet also be sucked in!

"Whose soul pet can neutralize the wind cave and save my soul pet!" loudly yelled the deathly white Sect Lord Yu. He hoped that the other experts would lend a helping hand.

Everyone else looked at each other because besides the Nightmare Palace Lord's White Nightmare which also had the other type ability that could save the Forest Dusk Sea Beast from the wind cave, the other factions' experts didn't have soul pets with this kind of ability. On one hand they could feel the powerful power from the wind cave, while on the other, they really didn't know what soul pet they could use to deal with the other type

technique.

As for the White Nightmare Palace's city lord, this old man was already far away from the battle, watching as a spectator. He, who didn't get along well with the Elemental Sect would definitely not lend a helping hand to Sect Lord Yu.

Everyone watched with wide eyes as the Forest Dusk Sea Beast was devoured by the half devil wind cave, bit by bit. It didn't stop screaming mournfully, but eventually its voice was also devoured by the wind cave.

Finally, the Forest Dusk Sea Beast was completely swallowed up!

The half devil Chu Mu slowly drew back his five fingers and half-held onto a burning white devil flame in his hands. This ball of dark light slowly dissipated in his palm and the half devil wind cave grew smaller and smaller the tighter Chu Mu clenched his hand. Finally, it transformed into a tiny electron hole...

"Hu hu hu~~~~"

Suddenly, a flourishing white devil flame outlandishly began burning on Chu Mu's palm as a white devil flame simultaneously ignited in that small button-like black hole.

Although nothing could be seen, everyone present could be certain that the Forest Dusk Sea Beast had been burnt to nothingness by the devil flames inside the hole!!

The best form of confirmation of the Forest Dusk Sea Beast's death was the state of Sect Lord Yu and when the white devil flames ignited, his face went deathly pale. His entire being seemed to have suffered from a soul wound as he kneeled in the air in incomparable pain.

Another soul wound. This time, he had further suffered the soul devil flame feedback damage from the Forest Dusk Sea Beast which wildly began to poison and burn his soul, burning up the rest of his little soul power...

If Sect Lord Yu hadn't suffered a wound earlier, this soul devil flames perhaps could still be prevented, but he was currently in an eminently weak state. In front of this powerful yet evil strength, he simply had no more strength to resist!

"Old Kingdom Lord Li.... save.... Save me...." Sect Lord Yu stretched out his hand in extreme pain and yelled towards the old Kingdom Lord with a twisted face.

Old Kingdom Lord Li's face became exceptionally unsightly; how could he have expected this half devil's strength to be so shocking? Sect Lord Yu didn't even last half a while, and he hastily ordered his Sunset Roc to fly towards Sect Lord Yu.

A yellow light blossomed from the Sunset Roc. Wherever it passed by seemed to have been anointed by the afterglow of a sunset. It flew adeptly, gracefully and elegantly, exemplifying the air control abilities of a wing type soul pet to the limits.

“Yi!!!!!”

A golden light shimmered and the Sunset Roc arrived promptly in front of Sect Lord Yu whose body was being burned from the inside to out by devil flames. Its golden wings stunningly spread apart on top of his head!

A large golden roc figure shrouded everything below it and it made an imprint on Sect Lord Yu’s body. Subsequently his body seemed to be protected in a golden roc pattern!

Following the golden roc pattern’s blessing, the pain on Sect Lord Yu’s face eased considerably.

“Light type peak protection technique?” Chu Mu’s empty devil pupils stared at the holy golden large roc pattern protecting Sect Lord Yu and he blankly began talking to himself.

The Nightmare’s devil flames were not a pure fire force and contained more dark aura instead. The light pattern’s protection essentially countered the devil devil flames breeding inside Sect Lord Yu’s body, saving his life.

“Soul Pet Palace’s Senior Xue. Don’t preserve your strength anymore. Summoned your main pet and deal with they Cyan Hidden Dragon. The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s recovery ability is extremely strong, and if we slack off, its fighting strength will quickly recover and we’ll all be in trouble!” old Kingdom Lord Li Sheng finally realized that his uninvited guest could very well

control the outcome of this fight. The Cyan Hidden Dragon could run, but the Jade Spring had to stay. Li Sheng could never allow the Cyan Hidden Dragon to wreak such a large havoc on his territory and then flee with the Jade Spring as well!

The old man called Senior Xue let out an unsightly expression.

This Li City Soul Pet Palace expert hidden from the world didn't want to participate. He didn't really care much towards the Cyan Hidden Dragon's attacks and merely didn't want it to be able to do as it pleased in Li City. Yet, he never expected the situation change into a state where it implicated the lives of them; thus he promptly let out a sigh and chanted an incantation.

"Yu Shang, help Senior Xue restrict that Cyan Hidden Dragon. I will naturally give your a fair outcome towards the grudges you have with Elemental Sect afterwards." immediately said Li Sheng.

Soul Palace Li Shang's strength was definitely not inferior to Xiao Ren. If he actually contended directly against the Cyan Hidden dragon, he would be able to last for a while, but until now he had remained very passive and had only summoned a tenth phase Light Rhinoceros to participate in the fight.

Yu Shang raised his eyelids and casually responded with a word. He clearly didn't have much interest in subduing the Cyan Hidden Dragon, and instead creased his eyebrows and stared at the half devil state Chu Mu.

Chu Mu's present state caused Yu Shang to associate with a

technique which happened to be Displacement Specter!

Yu Shang remembered that when Chu Mu had been chased by Duan Xinhe at that time, he had used the white devil flame Displacement Specter to dodge Duan Xinhe's fatal strike. What indistinctly made him even more baffled was the devil flame casted silver face which within the incomparable nefarious nature of it, slightly resembled young master Chu's appearance.

"That's impossible, right. Young master Chu is still so young and cannot have reached this level." Yu Shang shook his head and didn't think too much about it.

……

"Soul Alliance Luo Ling, coordinate with my Red Galactic Demon Emperor. No matter what, we must restrict this devil monarch." old Kingdom Lord Li was presently displaying the aura of a leader and had all of the experts fight with organization.

Soul Alliance Luo Ling's strength was only slightly inferior to Xiao Ren and he had come together with him to Li City; however, Soul Alliance had clearly underestimated the Cyan Hidden Dragon's strength this time as the proud and arrogant Xiao Ren had to withdraw from the fight because of his soul pets…

Soul Alliance expert Luo Ling didn't enjoy being ordered. Nonetheless, the Cyan Hidden Dragon and half devil creature in front of him were abnormally hard to deal with, so he could only help the Red Galactic Demon Emperor as old Kingdom Lord Li had

said.

“Elemental Sect people take your Sect Lord Yu away from the battlefield…” Li Sheng didn’t even glance at Sect Lord Yu as he used an authoritative voice to speak.

There fundamentally were not very many experts in Elemental Sect and they didn’t have the qualifications to fight right now. That same grand elder had his soul pet go protect Sect Lord Yu in panic as he left this battlefield where he could lose his life at any moment.

A double soul wound and the soul almost fatally being burned, without a medical miracle, Sect Lord Yu’s soul would not be able to fully heal for at least three years; further coupled with the death of two ninth phase soul pets, it became an even worse loss that Sect Lord Yu would find hard to make up for.

……

“Red, defeat it!” old Kingdom Lord Li gave his Red Galactic Demon Emperor an order.

A red figure that seemed to be a spatial domain pet could arbitrarily move in its respective domain.

Extreme demonic speed was the highest realm of flash movement and it was already extremely close to that stage. The winged demon emperor was originally in the Cyan HIdden Dragon’s

battlefield, yet only took a mere instant to arrive in front of Chu Mu!

The Red Galactic Demon Emperor's build wasn't too different from a human's. When it strangely changed locations around Chu Mu with extreme speed, the half devil state Chu Mu identically began to use his own extreme speed.

Every time the half devil Chu Mu changed locations, a half-illusory devil flame would follow behind in a burning trail. When the half devil Chu Mu's speed reached the limit, people were able to discover that a dozen or so illusory devil flames had appeared, as if the evil monarch devil figure was everywhere at once!

The Red Galactic Demon Emperor's movement was also shocking. Its red body would be visible then invisible. Its speed was unexpectedly even a bit faster than the half devil state Chu Mu. Even at the terrifying speed of Chu Mu, it was still able to dodge the fierce attacks and was truly worthy of being the absolute peak demon for speed!

Immediately, one white and one black figures began to change irregularly at high frequencies. Spirit emper and below soul pet trainers simply couldn't see their movements clearly nor were they able to see their movement tracks.

"Thankfully the Red Galactic Demon Emperor's speed is better by a margin. Old Kingdom Lord is still old Kingdom Lord after all..." praised Soul Alliance's Luo Ling.

“That’s right, that’s right.” everyone hastily nodded their heads in agreement.

……

Far away, the Nightmare Palace’s vice city lord let out a mocking expression because he knew that once a White Nightmare’s strength reached a certain level, its eyes would become other pupils, and these other pupils precisely were the nemesis of fast soul pets!!

Chapter 294: Arrival, The Devil that Shocked the World (4)

Other Pupil changed his mental reaction, causing his vision and thinking speed to become abnormally fast.

When Chu Mu was staring at the Gluttonous Insect Monster and Hundred Mother, their speed was so slow that they seemed they were immobile. This happened because Chu Mu had inadvertently used the half devil Other Pupil ability.

The Red Galactic Demon Emperor's speed really was fast - so fast to the point where the half devil state Chu Mu had problems keeping up. However, when Chu Mu's two pupils released the special lustre, the Red Galactic Demon Emperor's speed became much slowly in Chu Mu's eyes!

The Red Galactic Demon emperor was still moving at an extremely high speed and although Chu Mu was a bit slower than it, Chu Mu could determine its movement trajectories through its slowed movements. As long as he could predict which direction the enemy was moving towards, even if he was slower, he would still be able to effectively attack the opponent!

Chu Mu's eyes let out an evil glint and finally found the trajectory it was moving in from its strange ever-changing movements!

Displacement Specter!!

A vigorous white devil flame sprang up from under Chu Mu's feet, instantaneously burning his mercury-like body into ashes.

At the same time, a devil flame appeared in mid-air a hundred meters away. It formed a beautiful white bonfire which quickly burned in the shape of a human and then finally transforming into a half devil Chu Mu burning from head to toe in white flames!

His extremely cold face mask was wearing a demonic smile. Chu Mu slowly raised his claws burning with two violently burning devil flames waiting for the Red Galactic Demon Emperor's arrival!

Chu Mu's judgement wasn't wrong, and the Red Galactic Demon Emperor did appear! The next spot it was going to move to was the spot Chu Mu had Displacement Spectered to!!

A red figure appeared face to face with Chu Mu. At this distance, the half devil state Chu Mu could clearly see the Red Galactic Demon Emperor's red face.

It was red faced with only eyes and a nose, without any other organs. Its head was a glossy red skull wearing a special red helmet that protected its skull...

After its appearance, its red eyes were instantly occupied by the white devil flames burning in front as the thing standing arrogantly in front of it astonishingly was the extremely imposing and powerful white flame half devil. The Red Galactic Demon Emperor's eyes revealed a fearful expression!

“Evil Behead!”

The half devil Chu Mu’s claws became two devil swords burning with white flames. They chopped downwards, splitting open the space and the white devil flame sword marks left a clear imprint in the sky as if really had split open space!

When the Red Galactic Demon Emperor saw that Chu Mu had reacted, its two arms criss-crossed in front of its stomach and it tucked its head under its arms. Its special helmet formed a red light screen that was erected in front of it.

The Red Galactic Demon Emperor’s defense was very hurried, and the red defensive screen was incapable of fully stopping the half devil Chu Mu’s prepared strike. The red defensive screen was shattered by the Evil Behead and two white devil flaming sword marks slashed through, leaving two deep white fire wounds on the Red Galactic Demon Emperor’s arm and stomach! The red blood that oozed out of its body was rapidly ignited by the white devil flames!

The white wound was clear and distinct on its body!

It had been so long since old Kingdom Lord Li’s Red Galactic Demon Emperor had been wounded that he didn’t even remember the last time. After all, its extreme demon speed was something even the powerful existence of the Cyan Hidden Dragon found hard to catch.

“Incredible, truly incredible. What on earth is that. Why did such a powerful creature appear!” every Li City expert was dumbstruck.

It was even able to see through the Red Galactic Demon Emperor’s extreme speed and perfect dodging. How much strength did this abnormally evil and imposing half devil really possess?!

Having struck successfully, the half devil Chu Mu couldn’t let the Red Galactic Demon Emperor escape, so it used Devil Phantom which was full of a cold force. Chu Mu’s figure streaked across the air, leaving a white flame in his wake. He closed in on the Red Galactic Demon Emperor and his evil claws brandished a soul burning devil flame!

The white devil flames torrentially whirled, ostentatious and wanton. It illuminated the sky in a pale white color and amidst the surging devil flames, the half devil Chu Mu’s attacks became incomparably berserk, its speed reached the limit, the destruction force was terrifying and the devil flames outlandishly burned the soul. Even if the wounded Red Galactic Demon Emperor used its perfect dodging, the Other Pupils’ limitations forced it to passively accept the violently devilish imposing attacks. The wounds on its red body continuously increased!

“Luo Ling, what are you just standing there for?!!” old Kingdom Lord Li finally realized his Red Galactic Demon Emperor was being completely restricted by the half devil and he angrily yelled at Soul Alliance’s Luo Ling.

Luo Ling abruptly reacted, and hastily had his two ninth phase soul pets throw themselves into the fight between the half devil

and the Red Galactic Demon Emperor.

Luo Ling's two flying soul pets, although having reached the ninth phase, couldn't keep up in speed with Chu Mu and the Red Galactic Demon Emperor. In front of the fight between these two extreme speed creatures, they could only use techniques that did no damage.

"Absolute Ice!"

The Glazed Ice with extreme strong ice effectiveness, floated around Chu Mu. The ice crystals on its sparkling and transparent treasure-like glass were like fine particles and when it appeared beside Chu Mu, it was like a white fog.

When Luo Ling's ice type soul pet finished its incantation, the glazed ice particles suddenly condensed on the half devil Chu Mu...

The surrounding glazed ice particles continued to grow in number and the body of Chu Mu which had been imprinted by ice seemed to be a magnet as the continuously appearing ice particles seemed to be sucked to his skin.

As the attachment speed increased, Chu Mu's white flame body was lowly covered by a thick layer of glazed ice particles and his movements grew slower and slower.

The ice particles eventually covered Chu Mu's entire body and his body seemed to have stopped moving. He was completely

frozen by the ice covering his body and he transformed into an immobile ice statue.

“Well…. Well done!” seeing Luo Ling’s ice type soul pet freeze the terrifying half devil, the old Kingdom Lord Li let out a sigh of relief.

Old Kingdom Lord Li never expected the half devil’s strength to be so abnormal that even his strongest, the Red Galactic Demon Emperor, wasn’t its opponent.“Beng!!!!!!!”

However, old Kingdom Lord Li didn’t have time to be happy as the thick glazed ice layer abruptly blew up!

A cold half devil face faintly exposed an angry expression. This anger caused others to tremble and made them ostensibly feel as if something terrifying was about to occur!“Hu hu hu hu hu~~~~~~~”

The white devil flames began to burn even more vigorously after being frozen by ice. The half devil Chu Mu’s Other Pupils were fully fixated on Luo Ling’s Glazed Ice soul pet. His right arm was lifted high in the air and his palm opened up completely…

The half devil Chu Mu adopted a mad stance as if it was imploring the heavens for strength!

A white devil light flickered on its palm.

Suddenly, a white devil light flickered in the expansive sky, and

this location in the sky happened to be on top of the Glazed Ice soul pet's head!

It descended straight down from the highest spot in the sky. The white devil light was like a evil bolt of lightning that struck down without any warning. It fiercely bombarded the Glazed Ice soul pet's body!

Luo Ling's Glazed Ice soul pet was hovering in the air, but after being struck by the devil light, its body was carried straight down by the shocking devil light. It was like the magnificent descent of a meteor that ran straight through from the heaven to the earth!

"Weng~~~~~~~~~~""Weng~~~~~~~~~~'

As if it had been struck by the long roar of a flying dragon, after the devil light's descent, the entire district seemed to sink downwards!

A large white devil flaming entwined body of a dragon surged up into the horizon. A split-second later, the horizon was covered by a huge white devil flame dragon. The cold yet hot devil flame aura hit the fear stricken faces of every expert causing their souls to tremble under the cold as the horizon itself shook!

Heavenly Flame Rite!!

It was a white colored Heavenly Flame Rite that was ten times more terrifying than the normal seventh rank fire type technique

Heavenly Flame Rite!

The Glazed Ice soul pet had merely used the Absolute Ice technique, but it wasn't even able to stop the half devil Chu Mu for even two seconds.

Then, a moment later, the ice type soul pet suffered from the world-shocking half devil's anger. No one knew whether Luo Ling's ice type soul pet would be able to survive from this astonishing Heavenly Flame Rite technique!

"A devil that shocked the world! Why did such a devil appear in my Li City?!!" old Kingdom Lord Li's slightly aged face was a bit rigid. If this Heavenly Flame Rite technique had been used on his Red Galactic Demon Emperor, its lack of defensive ability meant that it may not have been able to take the strike!

The most terrifying thing was that the shocking devil's body seemed to contain a boundless strength; it didn't need to chant, it didn't need to store its strength and, with one hand wave, it could cause a shocking technique with such destructive force. This strength was definitely not inferior to the full-strength Cyan Hidden Dragon

Yet, what made this world-shocking devil more terrifying than the Cyan Hidden Dragon was that no one knew what soul pet to use in order to deal with its other type techniques!

....."God. This is the strength of a god!" the White Nightmare Palace's vice city lord, Xi Hong, was like a religious apostle that

piously watched the devil flames engulf the heavens.

The strongest Nightmare and the only one that was created through the fusion of the strongest soul pet trainer and strongest Nightmare-the half devil!

To Nightmare Palace people, the eminently rare half devil was a god-like existence. It was gripping and stunning like a shooting star streaking across the sky and within all of this was also a resplendent and dazzling radiance!

If it wasn’t because every person of the former generation that had transformed into a half devil had been cleanly devoured, the half devil would be the strongest existence within Nightmare Palace!

However, this was also why behind the extreme pain and cost this rare existence suffered, the half devil was a godly existence in the eyes of every Nightmare Palace expert!

Chapter 295: Supreme Diagram, Hidden Dragon and Half Devil

Cyan Hidden Dragon's speed couldn't compare to the Red Galactic Demon Emperor so if it wanted to attack unless it used wide area of effect techniques it was hard to inflict true damage.

Yet Li old city master was also very precise in his control of the Red Galactic Demon Emperor so since the start of the fight the Cyan Hidden Dragon had always been restricted by the Red Galactic Demon Emperor. Adding on the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch's power that could break through the Cyan Hidden Dragon's attack the combination of the two as well as the other experts' soul pets' techniques the Cyan Hidden Dragon naturally became more and more wounded.

After the half devil Chu Mu appeared the Red Galactic Demon Emperor was redirected so the Cyan Hidden Dragon's mental strength was no longer restricted. It could now cast any technique directly. At this moment the Cyan Hidden Dragon felt as if it was released from a mental jail cell!

"Aoooooo!!!!!!!!!!!! Ao!!!!!!!!!!!!!"

A reverberating roar released the anger within the Cyan Hidden Dragon's heart!

On the Cyan Hidden Dragon's body were the burning of fire freezing of ice cauterizing of light rotting of dark numbing of lightning festering of water slashes of wind and the claw marks of

beasts...

All the pain that came from the body full of wounds morphed into the Cyan Hidden Dragon's anger and its proud head lifted up to the skies!

Mister Xue had already summoned two main soul pets. These soul pets' strengths were just slightly weaker than Li old City master's soul pets but these soul pets of his were ice type and beast type none of which could truly restrict the Cyan Hidden Dragon!

Angry dragon aura was gathering. As the Cyan Hidden Dragon let out a roar to the skies the entire skies started shaking along.

The dragon roar wasn't just vocal intimidation. The sound became a strange command that lifted tufts of sky covering cyan dragon clouds!

Clouds covered the skies and wind appeared from nowhere. The clouds of cyan dragon clouds became cyan tides roiling uneasily within the upper skies like rapids. Immediately the entire Li City was covered in the shadows of these clouds!

The dragon's roar echoed between the unending cyan clouds and the vast land. Facing Mister Xue's powerful soul pets the Cyan Hidden Dragon completely ignored them. It used its proud cyan pupils to look at the group of soul pets that had it surrounded yet remained a respectful distance away.

”Ao!!!!!!!!!!”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s roar lengthened. Immediately the cyan clouds underwent shocking changes!

One after another large Cyan Hidden Dragon head extended out of the cyan clouds!

Or more like the cyan clouds were slowly morphing into many Cyan Hidden Dragon heads. When everyone lifted their heads to look it seemed as if a dozen Cyan Hidden Dragons were hidden above the cyan clouds watching the Li City experts with belittlement.

Another roar sounded as the Dragon Emperor gave its command!!

The cyan cloud made Cyan Hidden Dragon skulls all frighteningly opened their maws wide gathering beam after beam of cyan glow deep within their cloud like throats!!

The dragon beams fell each like the first beam of sun that passes through the clouds shooting straight for the ground!

A dozen beams fell from the Cyan Hidden Dragons’ mouths in the sky. This instantly created a large totemic diagram made between the cyan skies and the massive light beams. Also each beam accurately fell on soul pets that surrounded the Cyan Hidden Dragon!!

To the Cyan Hidden Dragon the only soul pets that posed a true threat were Li old city masters'. However the soul pets nearby cast many techniques that caused serious issues for Cyan Hidden Dragon's defense stamina mental strength and resistances. Especially after it was wounded these soul pets were becoming more and more threatening.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's anger didn't truly stem from the soul pets that could actually fight it it was angry at the clowns that hid despicably far away and cast techniques!

So this time all of the Cyan Hidden Dragon's techniques were cast towards them. Of the thirty or so soul pets that attacked the Cyan Hidden Dragon none were left out all hit by a dragon beam!

The thirty or so cyan light beams were dazzling. All hundred thousand citizens of Li City could see them. Even a couple kilometers away people could still feel the terrible aura of this dragon power...

The powerful Hidden Dragon technique didn't last long but when it was cast of all the shocked expert some faces went pale.

Clearly their souls were wounded. This meant that their soul pets directly died under this technique!

The other experts after their initial shock all showed fluster as they quickly flew onto the ground to retract their heavily wounded soul pets back into their soul pet space.

Cyan Hidden Dragon's technique could instantly kill many lower rank soul pets but these soul pets were unbelievably precious for their owners!

Demons who has stronger demons immediately summon them to restrict the Cyan Hidden Dragon!" Li old city master's face changed. Without the Red Galactic Demon Emperor's mental restriction on the Cyan Hidden Dragon it could freely cast destructive techniques. Li City experts were not on its level so once they suffered an attack from the Cyan Hidden Dragon they would definitely die in patches.

"Our demons can't restrict it." Almost every soul pet trainer had a demon type soul pet but the Cyan Hidden Dragon wasn't something any demon type could restrict.

"Ao"

After clearing out the less meaningful soul pets the Cyan Hidden Soul Pet gained greater battle freedom. Immediately flapping its wings it flew towards the half devil Chu Mu.

Seeing the Cyan Hidden Dragon the half devil Chu Mu apathetically floated up. When the massive body of the Cyan Hidden Dragon flew in front of him he slowly floated on top of the Cyan Hidden Dragon's head. Arrogantly standing between the dragon horns he looked down upon the world...

A super Hidden Dragon with almost undefeatable power and defense coupled with a strange demonic and terrifying half devil

the massive cyan body and the white devil flamed shadow created a stifling aura creating a scene of absolute superiority!

At this moment all the Li City experts floated in the air sparsely spread around the Cyan Hidden Dragon and half devil. All the soul pet trainers either stood alone or rode their soul pets but no one dared to let out a command.

The soul pets in Li City's skies could be counted as the most powerful of Li City or even the entirety of Zhanli Kingdom. With a normal person's thinking with a combination of all these soul pets they could destroy all Misleading World overlords. Even stepping into forbidden realms was not impossible.

Yet an event that caused a commotion throughout Li City happened these soul pets that were basically idolized summoned by famous soul pet trainers were so fragile in this fight even becoming dispensable characters within the battlefield.

This was no longer a battle between powerful soul pet and powerful soul pet. This was a toppling of traditional views of powerful soul pets. In their vision going from ninth phase tenth phase commander monarch to Cyan Hidden Dragon and Half Devil these two soul pets were already the shocking peak of organisms!

"Aoao"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's goal was to retake the Jade Spring. Now that it achieved this its anger was released and was about to leave unscathed.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon knew this was human territory. If it kept fighting it would ultimately get swallowed by the unending soul pets. The Cyan Hidden Dragon also knew that the Jade Spring won't last long so the half devil of Chu Mu should be weakening soon.

Just as the Cyan Hidden Dragon had expected the half devil Chu Mu could feel that its energy was no longer limitless as it was slowly depleting little by little.

Of course this speed of decrease wasn't fast. If he needed to fight for another period of time it was completely fine.

Li old city master with the half devil's appearance we can't possibly take down the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Let's give up. Afterwards we can discuss the origin of the half devil. It could be a huge threat." Mister Xue slowly said.

A Cyan Hidden Dragon was already incredibly difficult to deal with. Now with an even more troublesome half devil unless a few more Li old city master level experts appeared they couldn't possibly deal with these two forces!

Yeah let's give up we don't want any more deaths." The Soul Pet Palace owner was also heavily wounded. The cost of continuing to fight is way too big."

Other than Soul Alliance all of the experts also didn't want to fight anymore...

The Li old city master's face became very ugly. These factions all came for the benefits of the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Yet without gaining these benefits they personally didn't lose much.

Yet Cyan Hidden Dragon had stolen Li old city master's treasure Jade Spring. If the Cyan Hidden Dragon escaped he Li Sheng would suffer huge losses. No matter what he couldn't let the Cyan Hidden Dragon escape!

"Li old city master? Li old city master why don't you say something."

"Li city master quickly make a decision" The experts all started urging him on.

Li old city master's face muscles were quivering. Watching as the Cyan Hidden Dragon and half devil were ready to escape Li old city master knew that if he didn't do anything his Jade Spring would truly be lost.

"Jade Spring this Cyan Hidden Dragon has the Jade Spring don't let it escape!!" Finally Li old city master threw out this massive benefit!

Jade Spring Sacred Blood!

A super soul item almost equivalent to making a soul pet mutate once!!

Even a monarch soul pet could gain the Jade Spring Sacred Blood. Once it activated the energy within it could strengthen it at a level akin to mutation. Such strengthening was nearly equivalent to a rank!!

After monarch is emperor. Even someone like Li old city master never received a emperor rank soul pet so a Jade Spring definitely wasn’t something a Cyan Hidden Dragon egg could compare to!!

Chapter 296: Approach the Battle Tenth Phase Pseudo-Emperor

Everyone present were at a certain level. What the Jade Spring meant was something everyone understood!

”Li old city master Are you speaking the truth?” Mister Xue was the first to react. He stared at Li old city master and said somewhat over excitedly.

Everyone here knew that once they strengthened their soul pets to monarch rank finding a soul item able to raise their soul pets further was abnormally hard. In other words of all the soul pets present other than Li old city master’s Red Galactic Demon Emperor and Cloud Snake Ape Monarch which reached a rank near emperor the other soul pets’ strengthening were all around monarch rank.

As a soul pet’s power increased resources became less and less. For a monarch rank soul pet stage improvements needed battles. Their types could rarely be strengthened through a soul item anymore. Even soul items that could make soul pets with the power of low class monarch ranks reach powers of the middle class monarch ranks could cause factions to break into huge fights over it.

Yet with a soul item that could raise an entire stage what it entailed was something anyone could understand. If one gave it to a monarch rank power soul pet then one would have an emperor rank soul pet in return!

Emperor rank!!

Countless top tier soul pet trainers would go crazy for it. The appearance of any emperor rank soul pet could create a storm of competition that was far reaching in consequence.

Spirit apprentice spirit soldier spirit teacher spirit master spirit emperor-these were the main five ranks of the majority. Most soul pet trainers remained around the spirit soldier level. Those who could enter spirit teacher were already somewhat superior. Those who could reach spirit master were true experts!

As for spirit emperor that was the true peak of soul pet trainers. It is a realm only very few people could enter!

Yet of spirit emperors how many could actually own emperor ranked soul pets?

Even Li old city master's two strongest soul pets were just at the monarch rank but their fighting strength only reached pseudo emperor rank. They hadn't truly marched into the realm of emperors. Yet he with these two soul pets could already suppress everyone and become a very reputable capital master!

"Where do you think the Beast Spring in the auction house every month comes from its just limited edition replicas of the Jade Spring!" Li old city master knew that the matter could no longer be hidden so he explained in a cold tone.

After Li old city master said this the experts from all the factions understood.

Li city had a big specialty. Almost every month there would be a bottle or two of Beast Spring. This Beast Spring was a very valuable soul item. It could be used to strengthen non-mature beast type soul pets. Even monarch rank soul pets could still see significant effects from the Beast Spring's baptism.

Many people didn't understand where this Beast Spring came from and who obtained it. No one would've thought that the final benefiter of the Beast Spring was actually Li old city master and they were just fake Jade Spring Sacred Blood made by a top tier soul teacher! 1. TL Just a reminder soul teacher" is a person whose profession has to do with medicine and soul item creation the same as what Ye Qingzi does. A spirit teacher" is a soul pet trainer rank used to determine remembrance. It is confusing but the words were similar in the raws too.

With these words from Li old city master all the experts present were shocked. At this time which factions wouldn't be greedy for this Jade Spring?

The Jade Spring's energy is massive. From beginning to end I've never truly released the energy of the Jade Spring. Everyone work together to take this Cyan Hidden Dragon down and steal the Jade Spring back. I Li old city master promise that I will share half of the Jade Spring with everyone. The Cyan Hidden Dragon's benefits will also be given to everyone!" Li Sheng Li city master was risking it all.

This was an immense allure!

The faction experts that were planning on leaving originally started hesitating. Benefits able to create an emperor soul pet was something they really couldn't possibly give up!

"I know everyone still has hidden strength but everyone can see the situation at hand. The world shaking devil's strength is above even the Cyan Hidden Dragons and it must be hiding a huge secret too. The Cyan Hidden Dragon has the Jade Spring as well as the dragon egg. This is the opportunity of the millenium. Everyone bring out your true strength or else we will suffer massive losses!" Li old city master continued.

"Li old city master speaks the truth!" Merchant's Alliance's old expert immediately agreed.

"Then this old man can only summon my main soul pet!" The old master of Soul Pet Palace that rarely joined fights also looked to have made a decision.

"Everyone bring out your true abilities don't let this Cyan Hidden Dragon just have its way in our territory"

"Half of the Jade Spring we split it by contribution after the events!"

With the Li old city master's motivation the experts were again

ablaze with fighting intent. All casting incantations they summoned their most powerful soul pets into the skies.

With fighting intent ablaze all the aura of all the powerful soul pets created a high air storm that wrecked the airs of Li City!

”Old Mister Xue?” Li Sheng’s gaze immediately fell on Mister Xue hoping this expert could go all out as well.

Mister Xue also realized the importance of the Jade Spring so he nodded.

”Yu Palace Master?” Li Sheng then looked over at soul palace’s Yu Shang.

Yu Shang hadn’t even made a decision until then. Facing Li old city master’s questioning he didn’t answer.

If it were before when a treasure like Jade Spring Yu Shang would join no matter what. However Yu Shang always felt that the half devil gave him a very strange feeling. This feeling compelled him to not truly want to fight it.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon truly was an unkillable Hidden Dragon. Not long after staying unattacked the wounds on its body had already shown clear healing and its fighting strength was recovering.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon quickly found that the surrounding

that had been loosening again gave him pressure. His cyan eyes also turned sharp as he quickly started communicating with the half devil Chu Mu using his mind.

Chu Mu's thinking abilities were slowly recovering too. He knew that the Jade Spring in Li old city master was in his body. The Cyan Hidden Dragon had also just told him that the Jade Spring was a very special soul item.

This effect was unlocking the dragon mark within the Jade Spring to temporarily increase a beast type soul pet's power greatly.

After the Hidden Dragon gave the Jade Spring to Chu Mu Chu Mu needed a rather long time before he could truly complete the baptism of the Jade Spring. Chu Mu's current state was a result only the release of the inner energy within the Jade Spring Sacred Blood. If during this process he were under the control of others they could still extract the Jade Spring that was in Chu Mu's blood away.

"My body hasn't completely absorbed the Jade Spring and only has the releasing energy?" Chu Mu understood the Cyan Hidden Dragon's meaning.

"Shashashasha"

Cyan Hidden Dragon explained that he would rather release all the energy inside and give it to Chu Mu to strengthen him than give it to these greedy humans.

”Then let us continue to fight.” Chu Mu could feel more and more powerful soul pets surrounding him and the Cyan Hidden Dragon in the skies.

Before the Jade Spring’s released energy ended Chu Mu and the Cyan Hidden Dragon had to kill their way out of these greedy peoples’ surroundings or else the cyan hidden dragon and his blood would get stolen…

”Aooo!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Fight! Dragon species lives for battle as the most powerful species. Even if it was covered in wounds the Cyan Hidden Dragon would never fear battle!

No matter if it was the half devil Chu Mu or the human Chu Mu their bones flowed with blood of battle. This time it was no longer his soul pets fighting he himself as a half devil needs to face countless experts to start the most magnificent war!

The mercury-like devil flame body silently stood in between the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s horns as he stared arrogantly at the soul pets around him all ninth phase and above.

Tenth phase was the maximum of a soul pet’s maturing. At the place of the multiple soul pets at least a third were already tenth phase. Put to before it completely wasn’t something Chu Mu could defeat.

But now the half devil Chu Mu had to face this many ninth phase and tenth phase soul pets. This truly massive battle was the top tier battle that Chu Mu had fantasized about before. Even if it was only for a brief moment being able to experience this battle of Chu Mu's dreams was enough to get his blood running!!!

The ninth phase commander ranks were like ants to Chu Mu and the Cyan Hidden Dragon their techniques could be completely ignored.

Tenth phase commander's attacks already had a certain threat. If the techniques were special or if they had a type advantage the attacks could still cause damage to the Cyan Hidden Dragon and Chu Mu.

The ninth phase monarch and tenth phase commander were the same except the ninth phase commander's techniques were more powerful posing a bigger threat to Chu Mu and the Cyan Hidden Dragon.

Tenth phase monarch was a soul pet that could truly threaten Cyan Hidden Dragon and Chu Mu like Mister Xue's two soul pets.

Yet Li old city master's tenth phase soul pets were even near the emperor rank. The Red Galactic Demon Emperor and the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch were the soul pets on the battlefield that could truly match Chu Mu and the Cyan Hidden Dragon!

Using his abnormal pupils Chu Mu's eyes flashed with a strange

light. As he glanced over the skies all of the soul pets he saw seemed to stop.

Chu Mu's soul remembrance had been raised to a very powerful state. He could using his remembrance determine which soul pets could pose a threat to him in a miniscule amount of time.

"It appeared Mister Xue's final soul pet mister Xue is finally bringing out his most powerful soul pet!"

High calls sounded. Many experts' gazes fell upon the soul summoning symbol that appeared as Mister Xue started his soul pact incantation.

Mister Xue was a hidden expert but also he was a retired expert from Soul Pet Palace and Soul Alliance. His position within the soul pet realm was only slightly lower than Li old City Master so how would he not have a truly powerful main soul pet!

Chu Mu's pupil quickly locked onto Mister Xue's summoning symbol. Very quickly Chu Mu's brows creased because Mister Xue was summoning a soul pet with an aura not weaker than Li old city master's Red Galactic Demon Emperor and Cloud Snake Ape Monarch reaching tenth phase pseudo-emperor rank!

Chapter 297: The Strongest Soul Pet Formation in Li City's History

Senior Xue's quasi emperor wasn't a true emperor rank soul pet, nor was it a monarch rank soul pet. Instead, it was a commander rank Sun Flame Demon Bird!

Sun Flame Demon Bird: demon kingdom - wing type - Demon Bird species - Sun Flame Demon Bird subspecies - commander rank

The Sun Flame Demon Bird's wingspan reached over five meters, and it had a sharp golden beak and two resplendent gold color flames as eyes. Its two wings and stomach had the burning traces of flames and its feathers were incomparably tough. They carried a golden gloss, while a golden glowing sun mark was attached to its back.

Senior Xue had clearly spent an enormous sum of strengthening money on it, as it was emitting a powerful aura and flame that surpassed a monarch. When it flew, fiery clouds would blossom, and the imposing nature of these clouds was not inferior to old Kingdom Lord Li's Cloud Snake Ape Monarch that could step on the cloud layer!

While also being of the fire attribute, the Sun Flame Demon Emperor's fire attribute was even more complete than Chu Mu's devil flames. When it spread its wings in the air, its heavenly flames marked in red caused the environment's temperature to rise!

The devil flames Chu Mu possessed didn't have heat, and only had a coldness that could penetrate the depths of a person's soul. Yet, this coldness was now faintly being suppressed by the Sun Flame Demon Bird's fire aura."Ao~~~~~"

The Cyan Hidden Dragon's perception abilities weren't weak and it quickly sensed that the Sun Flame Demon Bird Senior Xue had summoned was of a certain threat to it; its eye thus locked onto this intense fire aura soul pet.

"Since Senior Xue has already brought out his skill, I, Luo Ling, can no longer remain cowering!" said Soul Alliance's Luo Ling.

Senior Xue could also be considered a Soul Alliance member. With him taking the lead, Luo Ling naturally was much more relieved, and he promptly chanted an incantation, summoning his main pet - a Demon Fairy.

The tenth phase demon fairy's fighting strength had reached the monarch level, and its special dark attribute could corrode the Cyan Hidden Dragon's dragon scale armor to a certain extent.

In front of a powerful defensive soul pet, since it was able to weaken defenses and had the especially important dark attribute that could create various abnormal states, Luo Ling's summon instantly earned the praise of old Kingdom Lord Li and Senior Xue.

A smile rose on Luo Ling's face. The Demon Fairy's aura was rather similar to that world-shocking devil, and he was confident that the Demon Fairy could potentially hold its own in front of this

unique soul pet!

Immediately after Luo Ling, the various experts from the factions chanted soul pact incantations and summoned their true main pets!

Quickly, the nine tenth phase soul pets with monarch rank fighting strength appeared on the battlefield!!

The nine great tenth phase monarch rank fighting strength soul pets came from different soul pet trainers, and respectively were Soul Pet Palace Lord's monarch Ice Winged Dragon, Merchant Alliance senior's Four Patterned Thunder Devouring Beast, Soul Alliance Luo Ling's Demon Fairy and White Eyed Ghost, Soul Alliance Xiao Ren's Demon Phantom Sable, old Kingdom Lord Li's Sunset Roc and Hurricane Fairy, Senior Xue's Wood Tray Spirit and Yu Shang's Light Rhinoceros.

These soul pets all had the ability to fly, and if it wasn't because the fight had risen up into the air, these experts probably had even stronger tenth phase monarchs that they could summon!

Including the three tenth phase quasi emperors, the Red Galactic Demon Emperor, the Wind Snake Ape Monarch and the Sun Flame Demon Bird, these twelve soul pets had absolutely formed the most glorious soul pet formation in Li City's history!!

The most shocking battle in Zhanli Kingdom's history was about to erupt in the sky about Li City!

……

“Ao!!!!!! Ao!!!!!!!!”

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s temper was eminently irascible, and it instantly let out an angry roar. Its cyan eyes locked onto the tenth phase monarch rank fighting strength Ice Winged Dragon summoned by the Soul Pet Palace Lord and took the initiative to launch an attack!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s flesh wings spread apart and when they flapped, an innumerable number of cyan wind blades flew across the sky towards the Ice Winged Dragon!

The Cyan Hidden Dragon’s intelligence was very high, and it knew that if it wanted to get rid of the Red Galactic Demon Emperor, the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch and the Sun Flame Demon Bird there would be a problem, especially when there were supporting and healing soul pets. Thus, in order to survive, it had to first get rid of these soul pets that could not contend with it but were a threat to it!

Chu Mu and the Cyan Hidden Dragon’s thoughts were the same. The nine tenth phase monarchs were relatively threatening to them and they had to wipe them out first in order to escape this besiegement.

“Hou hou!!!!!!!”

The tenth phase monarch Ice Winged Tiger discovered that the Cyan Hidden Dragon had already launched an attack at it. Its two completely evolved wings flapped, and it flew in another direction, dodging the Cyan Hidden Dragon's attack.

Once the Cyan Hidden Dragon chose a soul pet, it would do everything to kill that soul pet. Its enormous flesh wings lightly turned before abruptly flapping. It then flew a hundred meters as its enormous body caught up to the Ice Winged Tiger!

How could the Ice Winged Tiger's flying ability compare with the Cyan Hidden Dragon? Its immense dragon claws lifted high in the air, and a cyan dragon force congealed on its dragon claws as it fiercely smashed it down towards the Ice Winged Tiger!

"Hu hu hu hu~~~~~~~"

A strange hurricane appeared in a timely matter and it happened to be support from Old Li's Hurricane Fairy. This stream of air that had silently floated over caused the Ice Winged Tiger's speed to suddenly increase. The Cyan Hidden Dragon's dragon claw was obviously a bit short, and it only left a light wound on the Ice Winged Tiger's back.

"Nightmare Black Hole!"

Standing in between the Cyan Hidden Dragon's dragon horns, Chu Mu also used a technique which also targeted Soul Pet Palace Lord's Ice Winged Tiger!

The moment the Ice Winged Tiger had dodged the terrifying dragon claws, it faced another technique which happened to be a shockingly devilish powerful combination of other and dark type!

The white devil flames drew out a pattern on the edge of the black hole and from within the pattern abruptly sprang out white devil flames. These white devil flames caused the interior of the circle to combust into a vacuous and empty black hole!

The over four meter large Ice Winged Tiger happened to be in the center of this Nightmare Black Hole. Suddenly, a sucking forge began to violently suck at the Ice Winged Tiger's body, dragging its body into another world!

Soul Pet Palace Lord's face was deathly white. He never expected his soul pet would become the main target of these two super ranked existences. Although his tenth phase Ice Winged Tiger was strong and its fighting strength had reached the middle class monarch level, if it didn't adopt sufficient defensive measures, it was definitely possible for it to be instakilled by these two super creatures!

The power of the other type technique could not be dissolved by support techniques. Even though there were numerous support type soul pets hovering in the air, none of them had a technique that could resolve the Nightmare Black Hole's might. Each one of them could only watch on with wide open eyes as a tenth phase Ice Winged Tiger was slowly swallowed!

Having been simultaneously targeted by two ultra creatures, the tenth phase monarch would definitely die! The shocking devil and

Cyan Hidden Dragon were absolutely not benevolent creatures. In order to obtain the enormous benefit, one would have to pay the most painful price; yet, no one knew whose tenth phase monarch raised through sweat, blood and tears would become the target of these two ultra powerful existences.

“Everyone don’t panic. Let me and Senior Xuan’s soul pets restrict it. When your soul pets attack, you must be cautious and have a soul technique ready at all times to save your soul pet. Soul pets under the tenth phase monarch rank, maintain a distance of a thousand meters!” loudly shouted old Kingdom Lord Li.

If a tenth phase monarch could be instakilled when simultaneously targeted, then even if there were more soul pets under the tenth phase monarch level, none of them would dare enter within a thousand meters of the Cyan Hidden Dragon and the shocking devil. This was because the moment these soul pets entered this range, they would be instantly killed on the spot!

……

“Nuo~~~~~nuo~~~~~~”

An angry ape-like cry pierced everyone’s ears. Old Kingdom Lord Li definitely wouldn’t let Chu Mu and the Cyan Hidden dragon so wantonly massacre around, and immediately had the Could Snake Ape Monarch step on the cloud layer and fly towards the Cyan Hidden Dragon!

The Cloud Snake Ape Monarch was a ninth phase soul pet and

after being empowered by old City Lord Li, its strength increased to the tenth phase.

The Cloud Snake Ape Monarch didn't have wings and its enormous ape legs could step on the white clouds allowing it to fly. Moreover, it could create clouds itself and walk as if it was doing so on solid ground.

Five hundred meters above, the clouds were continuous and persistent. The Cloud Snake Ape Monarch's robust body unceasingly leaped on these clouds...

Chu Mu had already noticed the creature that could step on clouds. His mercury fingers pointed in that direction and a torrential devil flame sprung up in that space, preventing it from approaching.

The Cloud Snake Ape Monarch's soul wasn't weak and if Chu Mu didn't use a truly powerful soul devil flame technique, it would be very hard to harm the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch.

"Nuo~~~~Nuo~~~~~"

The Cloud Snake Ape Monarch finally neared, and it opened its two powerful arms. With boundless majesty, it charged at the Cyan Hidden Dragon's dragon horn!!

The dragon horn was the Cyan Hidden Dragon's most solid weapon, and it wasn't afraid of the Cloud Snake Ape Monarchs

attack on its dragon horn. However, the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch's arm attack was clearly directed towards Chu Mu!

Chu Mu didn't dodge. Instead, a deep starry resplendent light circulated in his two Other Pupils. This light shot out and formed an arc surface made of abnormal light in front of him...

"Hu hu hu hu~~~~~~"

A devil flame began burning on the arc, forming a white devil flame shield, completely stopping the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch's attack...

The Cloud Snake Ape Monarch wasn't the only soul pet that launched an attack on Chu Mu as the Demon Fairy, the Sun Flame Demon Bird and the Golden Rock all targeted him. Different colored techniques swept over from the same direction...

The abnormal flame shield arc began to expand before finally wrapping Chu Mu's body inside. All of the attacks bombarded the abnormal flame shield, but didn't actually strike the shocking devil at all!

"His defense is extremely powerful!" completely stopping the simultaneous attacks of several soul pets, everyone once again recognized the half devil's powerful strength.

While, everyone was still shocked by Chu Mu's special abnormal shield defense, he had already begun using a technique within the

abnormal shield. These people weren't aware that this shocking half devil possessed the Displacement Specter which could change space.

Thus, this mysterious and aloof devil monarch was quietly approaching their soul pets right now!

Chapter 298 Mass Killing of Soul Pets Dimensional Devil Flame Sea

The only thing left of the arc flame shield was an empty shield. The half devil Chu Mu that was inside had already been burnt to ashes by white devil flames. Then not even five meters behind Soul Alliance Luo Ling's Demon Fairy white colored devil flames sprung up and an ice cold devil flame aura gradually proliferated!

The half devil Chu Mu had a dark attribute and the Demon Fairy's threat to Chu Mu was slightly lessened however the Demon Fairy's dark type power could severely corrode the Cyan Hidden Dragon's defense and was a huge threat to it. Chu Mu thus had to get rid of this Demon Fairy first.

"Luo Ling watch out for you Demon Fairy!" Senior Xue wasn't too far away from Luo Ling and as a spirit emperor he immediately discovered that the half devil Chu Mu had appeared!

Senior Xue was an extremely cautious person and if it wasn't because he was always covering the surrounding environment with his perception abilities he definitely wouldn't have discovered Chu Mu's strange displacement space!

Luo Ling was stunned and immediately turned his head where he found that a proud devil figure had appeared behind of the back of the shadow encompassed the Demon Fairy!

"Phantomize!!!"

Luo Ling panickedly ordered his Demon Fairy to use a dodging technique.

The tenth phase Demon Fairy's reaction was very fast and the moment his master gave an order the black figure suddenly coiled into a snake-like figure. In the next instant the tenth phase Demon Fairy completely blended into the shadows under the cloud layer disappearing!

"Stop it!" Luo Ling's expression was one of panic. He knew that the devil monarch also had dark abilities and Phantomize fundamentally wouldn't allow the Demon Fairy to escape its eyes.

Indeed in front of a pure evil devil monarch the dark attribute was no longer proprietary to solely the Demon fairy. Chu Mu's Other Pupils rotated and the Phantomized Demon Fairy that disappeared in the shadows under the cloud layer was completely exposed in Chu Mu's eyes.

Chu Mu examined his surroundings and apathetically swept his eyes over the Phantom Sable and Wood Tray Spirit. His cold face revealed a demonic smile.

The Phantom Sable was protecting the Demon Fairy while the Wood Tray Spirit's innumerable branches quickly created a large branch net around Chu Mu. Every surrounding direction seemed to have been enclosed fully sealing Chu Mu in this wood branch weaving space!

”Space Seal!”

Senior Xue realized that the devil monarch could use a space displacement ability and in order to prevent it using Displacement Specter and fleeing he added something special on the vast wooden net!

Chu Mu’s Displacement Specter technique could swap spaces with a location but once the space was sealed the technique completely lost effect!

However Chu Mu was still extremely calm. His high temperature burning mind was full of various powerful techniques and battle skills. He didn’t need to specially think of the technique and the technique would naturally come out.

”Dimensional Devil Flame!”

Chu Mu’s mercury cast body slowly disappeared amidst devil flames or perhaps it was better to say that when the technique was used Chu Mu transformed into white devil flames!

The devil flame was originally the height of a person before slowly expanding. Finally it transformed into a devil flame that had a twenty meter diameter!

As the white devil flame expanded the half devil Chu Mu stored up energy. By the time the torrential devil flames reached a diameter of twenty meters people could feel a clear majestic energy

inside the devil flames!

”Maintain distance maintain distance! Prepare soul defenses and fire defenses!” Senior Xue immediately realized a crisis was imminent and yelled towards everyone!

”Senior Xue you must restrict it!” everyone had pale faces and original besieging half devil formation instantly dissipated.

This world shocking devil could create a technique with extremely high destruction abilities without preparation thus if it stored up energy first wouldn’t the technique it used have an even more terrifying destructive force?

No one wanted to know what the horrible after effects would be but none of them dared to use their soul pet’s lives frivolously.

”Sun Defense!” Senior Xue’s face was grave as he gave his Sun Flame Demon Bird an order.

The Sun Flame Demon Bird was flying on top of the Dimensional Devil Flame and when Senior Xue gave it an order its body outlandishly overlapped with the round sun in the sky.

The sun crowned Sun Flame Demon Bird’s wings flickered on edge and a glorious curtain of light slipped through shining on its spread winged body. Promptly a scorching sun light completely shined on this stored energy Dimensional Devil Flame!

The devil flames were nefarious and an abnormally pale white color. The scorching sunlight was a holy golden color causing this Sun Defense technique to seem like a purifying sunlight. The evil Dimensional Devil Flames were covered by the gorgeous holy wings causing the last of the flames to slowly disappear amidst the gloriousness!

Seeing Senior Xue's soul pet use such a powerful defense technique everyone let out a large sigh of relief. Especially Luo Ling who was targeted by the world shocking devil. If Senior Xue hadn't timely intervened his Demon Fairy would probably have been devoured by the devil monarch.

"Yi!!!!!!!!!!"

The Sun Flame Demon Bird unfurled its wings and soared through the heavens like an arrogant golden statue full of symbolism.

The golden sunlight defense it had discharged had fully contained the white soul devil flames that was expanding outwards with its ice cold aura...

The white devil flames had already wantonly expanded to a diameter of thirty meters but after the golden light's envelopment the Dimensional Devil flames seemed to have been suppressed and were slowly shrinking and shrinking...

"Prepare to attack." Senior Xue knew that once the Dimensional Devil Flames had been suppressed to its weakest point the

nefarious devil monarch would definitely appear then.

The Phantom Sable Demon Fairy Wood Tray Spirit Hurricane Fairy and the other dozen tenth phase monarch and under soul pets were all surrounding the half devil Chu Mu. They wanted to use this opportunity to take down the nefarious devil monarch in one strike.

”Too native a group of idiots hahahaha.” suddenly a laugh was heard from afar.

The laugh happened to come from Nightmare Palace vice city lord Xi Hong. This fellow was presently mocking and looking at them with contempt. In his eyes were also a bit of adoration and fervor towards the half devil.

”Hmph old nightmare geezer it’s fine if you won’t participate but don’t make cynical remarks. Just scram far as far away as you need!” sneered Soul Alliance Luo Ling.

”Scram. I’m definitely going to scram” Nightmare Palace Xi Hong remained calm and moved further away as he clearly had a premonition about something.

The Dimensional Devil Flames continued to be suppressed. From ten meters they were suppressed to one meter before finally transforming into a fist-sized Dimensional Devil Flame.

Senior Xue creased his brows and he looked blankly at this

Dimensional Devil Flame that had been suppressed to something like a fire heart. He felt as though something was wrong with this Dimensional Devil Flame. Although the Dimensional Devil Flame had become smaller the energy gathered within was still there...

Suddenly Senior Xue realized something an his aged face was suddenly full of various emotions shock panic and fear!

”Quick!! Quickly get away!!!!” Senior Xue frantically roared!

”Hong”

”Hong hong”

Senior Xuan’s voice was fully engulfed by the loud dimension sound as the Dimensional Devil Flame blew up!

Although it was only a fist size when the Dimensional Devil Flame exploded it let out a world-shocking destruction force. A torrential devil flame tsunami surged through the boundless sky!

The color of white was omnipresent!

The first one that suffered the attack happened to be the Sun Flame Demon Bird using the sunlight defense. The magnificent golden light curtain was swallowed up by the pale white nefarious devil light. The scorching sun bestowing the Sun Flame Demon Bird also darkened at this moment transforming into a sun with only its corona left!

”Yi”

The Sun Flame Demon Bird was incapable of bearing the dimensional energy’s explosion. When the surging devil flames swept out in all directions its body was caught by the scorching hot soul devil flames. It was knocked flying by the terrifying dimensional impact and even its miserable cry was swallowed up…

The Sun Flame Demon Bird’s sunlight defense was shattered meaning that there was no longer anything stopping the Dimensional Devil Flame’s destruction from spreading!!

The devil flame transformed into a devil sea that wildly raged through the sky. It surged through the entirety of the sky above Li City. The extreme speed of the Phantom Sable the shadow melding of the Demon Fairy the nature protection of the Wood Tray Spirit and the Hurricane Fairy were futile in allowing these tenth phase monarch soul pets to escape. They were all burned by this torrential Dimensional Devil Flames burning their souls!

Due to the close distance of these dozen or so tenth phase monarch and under soul pets only the ones with rather fast soul pets were able to escape from this energy wave. The others were completely swallowed up by the Dimensional Devil Flame sea!

Instakill!! The moment they were swallowed up by the Dimensional Devil Flames these soul pets without any resistance abilities towards the soul devil flames did not survive. They transformed into nothingness inside this Dimensional Devil Flame

Sea and were instantly killed on the spot!

These dozen or so soul pets were all the second pet or the main pet that hadn't completely matured of these experts of various factions. Each one of their deaths dealt an injury to their soul and even more terrifying was that the soul devil flames could even soul devil flame poison the soul pet trainer's souls through a death of his or her soul pet.

After the Dimensional Devil Flame's explosion there was a mass death of soul pets and the surrounding experts' souls were all injured!!!

"The Dimensional Devil Flame was shrinking but the smaller it shrank the more terrifying its might would be. Senior Xue this time you really caused the death of so many people hahaha." Nightmare palace Xi Hong used soul remembrance to loudly mock Senior Xue.

Dimensional Devil Flames could be regarded as a peak technique of White Nightmares. This technique was not possessed by any of this White Nightmare Palace vice palace lord's soul pets. Moreover he had only seen it once before when it was used by Nightmare Palace's Elder Yuan who was revered by numerous people. Back then it was hard to count exactly how many soul pets had been instantaneously killed further all of the soul pets that had been killed were over tenth phase commander rank!

The devil flame sea didn't last for very long in the sky above Li city but that instantaneous destruction could even be felt in places far away from the battlefield.

It could be said that when the millions of people in Li City saw these Dimensional Devil Flames cause such a magnificent scene in the air the coldness caused all of their souls to tremble...

Chapter 299: Memory Steal Anger of Sealing

Chu Mu's Dimensional Devil Flames reached far and wide. Soul Alliance Xiao Ren's Phantom Sable was rather fast quickly hiding far away right as the Dimensional flames blew up. It should only have suffered skin layer burns.

Soul Alliance Luo Ling's Demon Fairy had a certain amount of dark type resistance. Yet dark type was afraid of fire type. When the Dimensional Devil Flames spread it was heavily burnt. If no water type technique healed it quickly then it would quickly lose all its fighting strength.

Mister Xue's Wood Tray Spirit was the worst off. Mister Xie even risked wasting his soul power to use a water type soul technique to extinguish the devil flames that were burning the Wood Tray Spirit's body and soul.

"Water type soul pet flower type soul pet everyone quickly heal!" Mister Xue's face alternated between white and steely. This misjudgement of his had indeed caused huge losses!

Pure support type soul pet trainers weren't very plentiful but many soul pet trainers still left a space for water type or flower type soul pets in case of emergencies.

Of all the soul pet trainers there were four water type soul pets of which three were aggressive attacking types. The only one with real healing was from Merchant Alliance.

This water type soul pet's healing couldn't possibly be very effective. It only caused the lightest damaged Phantom Sable to recover its fighting strength. The other soul pets could only back off far away. When the Devil Flames weren't removed there was no chance of nearing this World Shocking Devil.

"Li old city master let your Cloud Snake Ape Monarch assist!" Mister Xue's Sun Flame Demon Bird was also wounded quite badly. Before his water type healing technique healed it Mister Xue didn't dare let the bird near Chu Mu either.

Li Sheng also bit down on his teeth hard. The Cyan Hidden Dragon needed the Red Galactic Demon Emperor to restrict its powerful dragon species techniques yet the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch was the soul pet that could truly harm the Cyan Hidden Dragon. Moving the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch away meant that the remaining soul pets wouldn't be much of a threat anymore.

The Cyan Hidden Dragon was scary because of this. If one couldn't threaten it for a certain time period all the wounds caused could very likely be fully healed by the time one got back to attacking it. The previous attacks would be rendered useless.

Mister Xue's battle wasn't looking good. Li Sheng could only send his Cloud Snake Ape Monarch towards the evil devil making it stop the devil for a moment while the rest of the soul pet trainers took a breather and healed.

After this Dimensional Devil Flame was cast Chu Mu himself needed some rest. This technique had wasted lots of his power.

Chu Mu lifted up his head to see the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch stepping on white clouds as it quickly jumped from the Cyan Hidden Dragon to him.

Chu Mu knew that the Cloud Snake Ape Monarch definitely came to delay him. If he couldn't attack quickly and kill a few tenth phase monarchs then the power wasted in the Dimensional Devil Flames wouldn't have been used well. After all the opponent had a tenth phase water type and tenth phase flower type soul pet.

Chu Mu's real goal was to kill the Demon Fairy. His pupils started turning as he looked through the darkness for the Demon Fairy's silhouette!

Finally Chu Mu found the Demon Fairy hiding under a black cloud receiving healing from its master!

Now with no soul pet daring to near Chu Mu Chu Mu was even more free in movement. He ignored his still recovering power and cast Devil Phantom again moving his mercurial body menacingly at the Demon Fairy!

Chu Mu's movement speed was much slower than before. The previously eye-dazzling spatial shifts could now be detected by the soul pet trainers.

The first to notice the devil's movement naturally was Luo Ling. His water type incantation was still on his mouth. One or two healing techniques couldn't possibly completely recover his

Demon Fairy's fighting strength. This was already the third time he cast this incantation meaning he used a full 30 of his soul power.

Yet when he noticed that the evil devil monarch had appeared once again his face went pale!

Not a single soul pet could block this world shaking demon's steps now!

"Shashasha"

Demon Fairy had already hidden under the clouds' shadows but was still found by Chu Mu. Noticing the half devil Chu Mu slowly near

"Come back...Come back quickly" Luo Ling frantically started his soul pact incantation to retract the Demon Fairy into his soul pet space or else the wounded Demon Fairy was surely dead!

"Huhuhu"

Even though his speed was lowered Chu Mu was still much faster than Luo Ling. With a casual sweep of his hand he lifted a wall of white devil flames that quickly blocked off Luo Ling's sight.

The devil flames had strong stimulus effects of the soul. Luo Ling's soul pact incantation had already started yet the Devil Flames' blockage made his recall incantation null. Luo Ling could

only watch dully at the white devil flames that was erected a hundred meters away.

The pale and deadly devil flames filled Luo Ling's eyes causing his eyes to start to become bloodshot.

Suddenly his eyes bulged out as if they were going to pop out and his face became incredibly pale.

The devil flames blocked everyone's vision. No one knew what happened within the white devil flames but from Soul Alliance Luo Ling's lost appearance he knew a fact --- the Demon Fairy had been killed!

In such a situation no one could stop this devil monarch's killing. If this evil soul pet found them it was their greatest misfortune!

The flames slowly extinguished and along with their disappearance also went the Demon Fairy...

Soul Alliance Luo Ling took in big breaths. Just not long ago he had been wounded by the Dimensional Devil Flames. Now the onslaught of devil flames and his soul pet's death exacerbated this putting him into an abnormally weakened state.

"Soul Alliance?"

Suddenly a cold and empty voice sounded aside Soul Alliance Luo Ling's ears. This voice appeared very strangely and was without

warning. He felt as if it came from a faraway world also as if it was right beside him. It clearly didn't have emotions yet it caused his soul to shiver uncontrollably.

Soul Palace Luo Ling turned his head and watched terrified at his surroundings but he saw nothing.

"Above...above your head Luo Ling your head!!" Mister Xue warned with alarm.

The Cloud Snake Ape Monarch still needed a distance before it could reach. At this point everyone discovered that the World Shaking Devil Monarch seemed to have appeared cryptically above Luo Ling!

Luo Ling's entire head was become stiffer from the coldness. He raised his head with difficulty and the evil and crazed devil entered his vision!

With the devil full of destruction nearby at this distance Luo Ling could even see his own terrified self reflected in those pupils.

It was a cold face. Luo Ling even felt like he saw this face somewhere before...

Finally Luo Ling remembered he remembered why this face was so familiar. It was the teen that Li old city master had mentioned at the city hall meeting!

Luo Ling remembered this teen deeply because he always felt this teen had some similarities with an unruly man from a dozen years ago. His mind instantly started floating with memories of that man...

Chu Mu watched Luo Ling's eyes coldly. From these terrified pupils Chu Mu actually caught a blurry image.

Chu Mu had never seen these images but Chu Mu for some reason felt they were incredibly familiar.

Memory!

It was Soul Alliance Luo Ling's memories captured by Chu Mu after his mental barriers broke down. This memory originally should've had nothing to do with Chu Mu but the scene Chu Mu saw ignited a flame in his almost deathly still heart!

Chu Mu saw Luo Ling's memory. Just as Luo Ling's mental defenses were nearly gone his eyes looked straight into the memories of Luo Ling!!

Chu Mu saw a heart-shaking scene

Above a golden dazzling holy land was a lonely ancient diamond shaped structure that stood in the boundless skies. It looked like an organism that had been their since the beginning of time and would remain their until the end!

Its faded outer shells were bind by dragon like chains interlacing and binding. Every massive chain was imprinted with countless totemic beasts each lively and seeming to be ready to burst out of their chains and into the heavens!

”What is this...what is this” Luo Ling’s memories flashed into Chu Mu’s mind. Chu Mu’s pale pupils became dazed and empty as if a white hole...

”Your father’s four main soul pets. One died fighting while the other three were sealed by Soul Alliance” A heavy voice sounded in Chu Mu’s mind. These were words from the deepest part of Chu Mu’s heart. Because of these words no matter how much pain and suffering he had to endure he had never given up the belief of becoming powerful.

”Three main soul pets to release their master’s soul and awaken him all self destructed in their seals.”

Using their own lives as price to release the three souls of their master!

Chu Mu saw. Chu Mu didn’t even think that through the half devil’s pupils he could at the moment a person’s mental barrier’s collapsed see their memories. And this memory was exactly what he had been looking for...

Strange sadness was like an inverse river frenzily pouring into Chu Mu’s heart creating an echo of inconsolable grief in Chu Mu’s mental world. This echo nearly shattered his devil fire covered

heart.

Seal?

High temperatures burned at Chu Mu's thinking. His thinking was no longer his own. Barely he could see an ancient soul pet running wantonly in a plain. This was the best display of battle movement and dodging Chu Mu had ever seen!

Yet all of this had been destroyed in the collapsed Heaven Boundary Monument...

This memory had already been forgotten by Chu Mu yet for some reason the sorrow again rolled through Chu Mu's body causing the half devil Chu Mu to become even crazier!!

Chapter 300: Not a Single One Will Leave Alive

The Soul Alliance Luo Ling looked as if his soul had been siphoned away. He stiffened up in place, becoming an empty husk.

Suddenly, his body started shivering slightly. At the same time, his empty pupils started burning with devil flames……

Soul devil flames had entered his body!

Soul Alliance Luo Ling's thoughts had completely been imprisoned by Chu Mu's terrifying gaze, completely losing himself.

"Huhuhu"

White devil flames poured out of Soul Alliance Luo Ling's orifices in a grisly scene. This frightening scene caused the nearby soul pet trainers to all suck in a breath.

"Don't go over!" Xiao Ren saw that some other Soul Alliance members wanted to go and save Luo Ling, so he quickly shouted.

The three soul alliance members all paused and stared blankly in place as they watched Luo Ling slowly devoured by devil flames.

Devil flames burned from within outwards. Luo Ling's organs

were long gone. Now, he was truly an empty husk, and the outer skin layer was also quickly disintegrating with the devil flames!

Chu Mu's eyes were distant. In front of him, Luo Ling had already become ashes, but his heart had been stirred with the largest of tides. A massive resentment started growing like frenzy within his heart!

Resentment Gathering!!

Once resentment reached a certain level, the White Nightmare's Resentment Gathering no longer just slowly increased his strength. Under this resentment, his power would spike greatly. At the time Chu Mu's White Nightmare faced Xia Guanghan was an example of his resentment reaching such a state.

At this time, Chu Mu's resentment deep down had reached this barrier. This resentment came entirely from the scenes in the memories of Luo Ling.

In the scenes, the person who Chu Mu respected and worshipped the most, as well as being emotionally the most important person, had his heart torn into shreds by grief. He stood alone in this emotionless world. The feeling of final separation between his soul pets and him was transferred completely to Chu Mu……

Chu Mu's half devil emanated the most menacing evilness originally. After being stimulated by Luo Ling's memories, the darkness within Chu Mu's heart was completely revealed!!

The devil flames outside of its body still burned silently, sometimes tilting with the large winds in the skies……

But, for some reason, everyone felt that this evil devil monarch's aura was becoming stranger and stranger. They couldn't detect him, but strangely felt the surrounding become colder!

"What……what is happening…… it's like this evil devil's power is growing!" Frantic voices sounded as experts from all factions looked anxiously at the gloomy devil……

"Not 'just like', it is actually growing!" Soul Alliance Xiao Ren said with his brows knit tightly.

The more powerful the devil flames, the colder the surroundings become.

The pale white flames floated silently in front of them. Everyone's remembrances were already showing signs of freezing over, causing their perception to become very narrow.

"Li old city master, stop caring about the Cyan Hidden Dragon!!" Mister Xue's perception was the most powerful. At this point, he realized that a true apocalypse was slowly starting to appear with the loss of this half devil's reason, and the growth of its powers!

Li old city master's attention was still on the Cyan Hidden Dragon. After all, the Cyan Hidden Dragon had his lifeline - the Jade Spring Sacred Blood. Li old city master had to steal it back no

matter what.

“Mister Xue, you deal with it first……” Li Sheng was already impatient and angry.

“Li Sheng!!” Mister Xue yelled.

Only then did Li Sheng realize that things weren’t as simple as he thought. He quickly locked his soul remembrance on Chu Mu.

At first, Li Sheng didn’t notice anything off, only feeling the devil gathering energy for a technique. Yet, when he noticed that this devil monarch was full of a massive energy, his entire body fell into shock.

“Jade Spring…… The Jade Spring is on him!!” Li Sheng shouted loudly!!

The Jade Spring’s energy was something Li Sheng was very familiar with, but Li Sheng had no clue why the Jade Spring on the dragon’s hands had now been merged into the devil monarch’s body. What was even stranger was, he actually unlocked the dragon mark, releasing the powerful dragon’s power within the Jade Spring.

At this moment, Li Sheng finally understood why such a powerful devil had appeared within Li City. It was this powerful soul pet who had released the effects of the Jade Spring and created a powerful character like this.

“You still have time to care about the spring? Quickly think of a way to stop its gathering resentment, or else we’ll all fall prey to it!” Mister Xue said angrily!

With torrential resentment constantly becoming half devil Chu Mu’s power, the Jade Spring’s effects were previously sliding downwards, but had been offset by the resentment gathering, causing Chu Mu to raise another rank.

Chu Mu’s previous status was already unbeatable. Any technique could cause earth shaking effects. Now that his strength was released, he would have terrifying power!!

The resentment poured forth. Mister Xue could first fear the thick shadow of death that covered all organisms. This was no longer the aura of battle. It had become the terrifying aura of killing and destruction.

“No one will leave this territory alive! You’ll all die, hahahahah!!!” Nghtmare Palace Xi Hong said crazily as he laughed.

This White Nightmare Palace city master had long become the devil’s servant, cheering it on from afar. Every time he saw this devil explode with more power, he would laugh loudly!!

Not a single one would leave alive!

Chu Mu’s thinking had been overtaken by the angriest of

resentful flames. His pupils saw everyone as the enemy that was in the scene. It could be said that, with the continuous high temperatures, Chu Mu was already delusional. He couldn't differ the factions of the experts that wanted to take the Jade Spring within his body. All he knew was that everyone here was the reason of his father's tragedy!!

"This fellow is about to completely devilize!!"

"Such massive resentment!"

"Run as far as you can!! If you don't want to die, run!" Mister Xue said with a shaky voice towards everyone there.

Run? All the most powerful experts of Li City were here, all with their main soul pets out, along with experts sent from Tianxia City in Soul Alliance and other great factions. With such a formation, they've fallen to the point where they had to run?!

"Calm down, everyone calm down. He's only absorbing the resentment. If everyone gathers their soul pets, we could still control it. Don't panic, or else everyone's work will be for nothing. Don't you want your soul pets to raise another level? Don't you want to salvage the Jade Spring, which can't be seen in a thousand years, from this half devil?" Li old city master had the complete opposite attitude from Mister Xue.

Li old city master had his thoughts clouded completely by the Jade Spring. He didn't even realize just how terrifying Chu Mu was now.

With soul pets constantly dying, plus the death of an expert like Luo Ling, everyone' raging fighting intent was already gone with the half devil's flames. Seeing the half devil's strength grow frenzily and realizing an apocalypse was about to fall, how would they still have the intent to fight.

Run? Most experts listened to Mister Xue's advice and ran as far as they could!

But, how many of these experts knew that the decision they made was already too late. If they had left before Chu Mu had completed his resentment gathering, they may have been on time.

Now, Chu Mu's pupils scanned the faces of the soul pets and trainers and locked onto them as enemies. To the half devil, as long as they're an enemy, he would wipe them from existence no matter where they ran!!

"Cloud Snake Ape Monarch, delay him, don't let everyone lose their fighting confidence!!" Li old city master's eyes were red already.

The unlocked Jade Spring meant it could truly raise an entire rank. If he used this Jade Spring to upgrade his Red Galactic Demon Emperor, he would own a high class emperor rank tenth phase soul pet!

High class emperor rank, this was a rank that Li old city master dreams for, but never reached. This time, no matter how high the

price, Li Sheng would steal this Jade Spring back!!

……

Cloud Snake Ape Monarch dashed through the wind and, like a massive mountain of meat, stepped heavily in front of Chu Mu, who was surrounded in an aura of death.

Cloud Snake tail started turning, causing white clouds to become massive pythons in the air, twisting their bodies around and completely binding Chu Mu's tiny body within!

Chu Mu's face was like a fake silver mask. Before, its emotions had a bit of distance in them.

Now, Chu Mu had become a devil within this silver face. His eyes shot anger out. With an angular silver nose, he smiled with the cruelest grin……

Chu Mu finally moved. This meant that a nightmare was about to befall the entire Li City, leaving an evil imprint that will never be erased!!

Table of Contents

- The Charm of Soul Pets
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 201: Monarch Guard, Sturdy Rock General!
  - Chapter 202: Midair Flesh Fight, Zhan Ye vs Ice Winged Tiger (1)
  - Chapter 203: Midair Flesh Fight, Zhan Ye vs Ice Winged Tiger (2)
  - Chapter 204: Mental Combat against Ghost King
  - Chapter 205: Heavenly Crystal Peak's Master, Hegemonic Monarch
  - Chapter 206: Take A Risk, Gliding on Heavenly Crystal Peak
  - Chapter 207: Monarch's Soul Scaring Chase
  - Chapter 208: Capture War, the Battle with Ghost King (1)
  - Chapter 209: Capture War, the Battle with Ghost King (2)
  - Chapter 210: The Ghost King's Acknowledgement
  - Chapter 211: Absolutely Better, Monarch Rank Talent
  - Chapter 212: Conspirer, Yu He
  - Chapter 213: Unbridled Inside Soul Palace's Great Hall
  - Chapter 214: Act First Talk Later
  - Chapter 215: The Tenth Young Master
  - Chapter 216: Poisoned Ye Wansheng
  - Chapter 217: Yu He's Release
  - Chapter 218: Transcend, Yu City's Appointed Fight
  - Chapter 219: Thousand Wood City, Bloodsucking Wood
  - Chapter 220: The Trap of Bloodsucking Wood Demon
  - Chapter 221: Evoked Brave Jungle
  - Chapter 222: Abnormal Lineage, Coronary Bloodwood Demon
  - Chapter 223: Devil Tree, Wood Finger Prison
  - Chapter 224: Mutated Bloodsuck
  - Chapter 225: The Strongest Absorbing, Life Force Absorbing (1)
  - Chapter 226: The Strongest Absorbing, Life Force Absorbing (2)
  - Chapter 227: Multikill, Bloody Devil Tree Battle Soldier
  - Chapter 228: End of the Dark Forest
  - Chapter 229: Marsh Corpse Hand
  - Chapter 230: Bell Noise Concubine
  - Chapter 231: Ancient Azure Devil Tree
  - Chapter 232: Eighth Rank Wood Type Soul Crystal
  - Chapter 233: Whereabout of the Split Off Dragon Egg

Chapter 234: The Empyrean Cyan Hidden Dragon’s Level
Chapter 235: Kingdom Capital, Li City
Chapter 236: Speed and Dodging, Li City Chase
Chapter 237: Li City’s Savage Creature
Chapter 238: Li City’s Savage Creature (2)
Chapter 239: Night City Scare
Chapter 240: Strange Demon Claw
Chapter 241: Terrifying Plot
Chapter 242: A Case With Boundless Danger
Chapter 243: Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s Transformation
Chapter 244: Searching For The Savages In A Rainy Night
Chapter 245: Nightmare Tree, Fighting One Versus Ten
Chapter 246: Devil Tree, Fighting One Versus Ten
Chapter 247: Devil Tree Battle Soldier’s Poison Effect
Chapter 248: Attached Pet, Hundred Mother
Chapter 249: Cyan Hidden Dragon
Chapter 250: Exterminating Savage Creatures (1)
Chapter 251: Exterminating Savage Creatures (2)
Chapter 252: Hidden Dragon’s White Cocoon Silk
Chapter 253: The Hundred Mother’s Master
Chapter 254: Pursued by Death Through the City
Chapter 255: Gluttonous Insect Monster Group
Chapter 256: Underground Palace, Fake Masked Man
Chapter 257: The Meeting Of Many Factions
Chapter 258: Comparing Calmness? Comparing Attitude?
Chapter 259: I am Yu He, Dong Qing’s Old Wound
Chapter 260: Whoever kills Duan Xinhe gets the Dragon Egg
Chapter 261: An Arena That Belongs To Only The Big Factions
Chapter 262: Kill Yu He, Palace Lord Yu’s Favor
Chapter 263: Finding the Cyan Hidden Dragon
Chapter 264: Beauty’s Night Words
Chapter 265: Confrontation of Schemes
Chapter 266: Fighting Yu He in the Old Hall
Chapter 267: Shockwave Kill, Nine Tail Hammer
Chapter 268: Corpse Diagram, Corpse-Like Decay
Chapter 269: Corpse Type Is Still The Same, Absorb
Chapter 271: Doubled Plot
Chapter 272: Underground World, Innards of a God (1)
Chapter 273: Underground World, Innards of a God (2)

Chapter 274: Split Off Reproduction, Cyan Hidden Dragon
Chapter 275: A Race Against Time
Chapter 276: White Pupil Burning
Chapter 277: Half Devil vs Gluttonous Insect Monster
Chapter 278: The Cyan Hidden Dragon Awakens
Chapter 279: One of Five Summits, Xiao Ren
Chapter 280: Obliterating Heart, Killing the Gluttonous Insect Monster
Chapter 281: Collision of Power, Dragon VS Beast
Chapter 282: The Great Fight of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might
Chapter 283: The Great Fight of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might
Chapter 284: The Great Fight of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might
Chapter 285: The Great Battle of Li City, Hidden Dragon's Might
Chapter 286: White Devil Flames In A Summit Contest
Chapter 287: Metamorphosis against a Powerful Opponent, Seventh Phase Mo Xie
Chapter 288: Eighth Rank Battle Technique, Five Night Inferno Fox Diagram
Chapter 289: Other Pupil, Devil Monarch, Chu Mu
Chapter 290: From the Nine Underworlds, the Evil Devil Monarch
Chapter 291: Descent, World Startling Devil (1)
Chapter 292: Descent, World Startling Devil (2)
Chapter 293: Arrival, The Devil That Shocked The World (3)
Chapter 294: Arrival, The Devil that Shocked the World (4)
Chapter 295: Supreme Diagram, Hidden Dragon and Half Devil
Chapter 296: Approach the Battle Tenth Phase Pseudo-Emperor
Chapter 297: The Strongest Soul Pet Formation in Li City's History
Chapter 298 Mass Killing of Soul Pets Dimensional Devil Flame Sea
Chapter 299: Memory Steal Anger of Sealing
Chapter 300: Not a Single One Will Leave Alive